



# MARTIAL GOD SPACE

BOOK 03

*Fu Xiao Chen*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Martial God Space

(Wu Shen Kong Jian)

(武神空间)

by

Fu Xiao Chen

(傅啸尘)

# Synopsis

---

Ye Xiwen was previously only an ordinary university student on Earth, but unexpectedly crossed through into the world known as the Zhen Wu Jie world!

In this world, formidable warriors are able of turning over mountains and collapsing the ocean, destroying the sky and extinguishing the earth!

He originally had ordinary aptitude, because of that he received the mysterious special space!

Any martial art can be deduced within the mysterious space, other people practice for decades, he only needs a year!

So long as he has enough spirit stones, any talents he faces are all floating clouds!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edit by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201: Fifth Pro-Disciple

---

"If you do not punish him, then from here on, no one will obey the regulations of Yi Yuan School, especially when it comes to such fundamental rules." Penal elder said.

"I think Jin Xuan elders did not do it intentionally, he must have wanted to test the strength of Ye Xiwen." At this time, Tian Wushuang didn't know what to say in order to protect Jin Xuan except to prove Jin Xuan as a stupid person who was unaware of Ye Xiwen's strength and dared to get involved in such a matter; the most stupid kind of guy who just wanted to show off his strength in front of a junior.

"So you think that he is just a stupid guy who tried to test Ye Xiwen's strength? Who would believe such an excuse!?" Penal elder said coldly, "Who doesn't know about the events that took place on Qianji Island. It was Ye Xiwen who provided accurate information and helped us avoid, what could have been a very serious loss to our sect. And thanks to that vital information, we managed to wipe out the enemy forces of Bai Mojiao, and not just that, it also created a very good opportunity for Yi Yuan School to set up its reputation as an invincible force in front of the other major forces. In the future, no one would dare to look down on our younger generation."

"Now, everyone has seen the true talent of Ye Xiwen but there's a chance that he may have some hidden strengths that we still haven't seen. Various forces have already recognized his strength, and in the future, he is likely to have a duel with the eighth prince and the other top players of the younger generation. Our job should be to safeguard Ye Xiwen, the only hope of leading our

younger generation in this race so that Yi Yuan School doesn't lose face in front of other sects." Penal elder said.

Although the other elders did not speak, they clearly agreed with whatever penal elder said just now. Some of the elders wanted to object but they couldn't do it openly. But, objection was clearly visible in their eyes!

"Such a genius, there's no limit to the amount of care and support we must provide him with. We must not forget that after we old people are not there to protect the sect, we will have to rely on the younger generation to ensure the safety, security of Yi Yuan School. Only they will be able to maintain our sect's elaborate reputation and keep it going in the future." Penal elder said and glanced at those elders who were showing signs of objection through their eyes.

Everyone suddenly turned their faces sideways and looked at each other; after all, none of the elders participating in this meeting were at low rank. All of them held high positions and were extremely old, to the extent that most of them would not live another hundred years to look after the well-being of their sect.

And how old was Ye Xiwen? He was merely about twenty years old and his cultivation would grant him a lifespan of about four hundred years, which was an entire generation of life.

Today, if they really offended such a peerless genius, then in the future, looking at Ye Xiwen's promising talent and unimaginable growth rate, perhaps, they might have to face serious consequences. By then, in their absence, Ye Xiwen would have



surpassed them all and even their successors might also have to face Ye Xiwen's wrath.

Ye Xiwen had so much potential and talent that in the future, he would most likely become a peak-leader, and later, he might even become the head of Yi Yuan School. Was it really worth it to offend Ye Xiwen?

After witnessing the recent events, now, no one would dare to underestimate Ye Xiwen, because they had come to realize that Ye Xiwen's talent was actually transcendent.

They felt somewhat strange in their hearts, trying to figure out why Penal elder was helping Ye Xiwen. They didn't know that Penal elder was doing this to give a serious blow to Luo clan's influence, which would ultimately also affect Chu Jingcai's influence. Also, he wanted to tie a friendly knot between Huang Luochen and Ye Xiwen, because this would ultimately increase the influence of Huang Luochen. So long as one had enough common sense, one would not want to offend Ye Xiwen and certainly wouldn't try to make an enemy out of him.

Penal elder wanted to win over Ye Xiwen's trust and support for Huang Luochen. If Ye Xiwen agreed to join Huang Luochen's faction then that would be a great addition and would certainly give a boost to his influence over other pro-disciples. And even if Ye Xiwen doesn't agree to join, after growing strong in the future, he would certainly support Huang Luochen, and would be just like 'Icing on the cake'!

Ye Xiwen demonstrated endless potential and no one could

predict how strong he would become in the future. So it was for the best to not offend such a person and an experienced old guy like him certainly understood such a basic point!

Everyone looked at Wu Potian and waited for him to state the final judgment!

Wu Potian, at this time, no longer looked indifferent instead he glanced at the crowd and said: "Jin Xuan will be stripped of his elder's identity and sent to guard the mines. That's my final decision!"

Suddenly, everyone was shocked in their hearts. Getting stripped of the identity of an elder, for Jin Xuan, it was worse than dying. There were no small benefits for elders which were especially necessary for later practice because as the cultivation grew, more and more practice resources were required for further advancing to the next realm, after all, not everyone was daring like Ye Xiwen, who roamed about everywhere and plundered many resources whenever required.

For most people, the resources granted by sect were the main source of strength and also the safest way.

Without the resources granted by the sect, Jin Xuan's further practice would be extremely difficult, and considering his almost finished lifespan, it was a very serious punishment.

But since the head had already made a decision, including Tian Wushuang, no one dared to refute.



"One more thing, Ye Xiwen is to be immediately promoted to the rank of other four pro-disciples!" Wu Potian's next sentence suddenly startled all of the elders, because everybody expected him to be promoted to the rank of true disciples, whether it was strength or credit, Ye Xiwen had more than enough.

Ye Xiwen indeed deserved to be promoted to a true disciple!

But to be placed among the four strongest true disciples was simply unexpected for everyone. It could be said that although there were hundreds of true disciples in Yi Yuan School, but only the most distinguished and peerless geniuses were allowed to be called as the pro-disciples, and only they were allowed to compete for the position of 'Head'. These pro-disciples held strength, prestige and personal connections, making them much superior to other true disciples.

Pro-disciples were considered elites even among the elites like true disciples, in the past hundred years, there were only four who managed to achieve this rank. But today, Wu Potian unexpectedly added Ye Xiwen to the same rank, which suggested that Ye Xiwen would have such an elaborate and promising future that his success might be comparable with that of the four pro-disciples.

The last time when Wu Potian made such a judgment, Qi Feifan had an extraordinary rise in both fame and strength. At that time, no one expected that Qi Feifan would become such a legendary expert in the future but Wu Potian was able to make a correct judgment about him.

This was the second time Wu Potian made such a judgment, so did it mean that Ye Xiwen would become a possible future rival for Qi Feifan?

But while they were extremely dismayed, no one dared to question Wu Potian's decision. Yi Yuan School's inheritance was an accumulation of so many years and they certainly focused on cultivating geniuses. As long as they could nurture a true genius, the sect was willing to devote a lot of resources for it, this was also one of the main reasons how Yi Yuan School was able to stand tall for so many years.

"I hope everyone is aware of the declaration of duel to Ye Xiwen from the eighth prince?" Wu Potian looked at the crowd and asked.

"En!" everyone nodded.

"This duel will be canceled, no matter what happens it must be canceled!" Wu Potian said, "Ye Xiwen's practice time is still short, this duel will be scheduled to some other time, when he is sufficiently strong to be able to deal with eighth prince and the others. Ye Xiwen is the new backbone of the younger generation of Yi Yuan School, we cannot afford to lose him."

All of the elders nodded because they too agreed with Wu Potian's idea, after all, except Ye Xiwen, none of the other disciples lived up to the expectations. One must know that Luo Yifan was considered the leader of younger generation in Yi Yuan School and he was nothing compared to the eighth prince. The gap between them was extremely big, but Ye Xiwen rose up as a new ray of hope for Yi Yuan School.

While dealing with an evildoer, let evildoer do the job!

Thinking about it, when Qi Feifan rose to fame, none of the other major forces was able to put forth a strong rival for him, making them utterly depressed. In fact, a lot of people said that perhaps, Qi Feifan took birth in the wrong era, he should have taken birth in the era of eighth prince then Yi Yuan School wouldn't have to face such embarrassment.

In the recent years, Yi Yuan School couldn't produce a competent rival for the eighth prince, but now, finally, Ye Xiwen came into picture, showing the ability to compete with eighth prince and the other top players in same generation. It would generally take a lot of time and resources to nurture a peerless genius, but now, with the unexpected rise of Ye Xiwen, they would certainly not let him die early. Yi Yuan School had sufficient grounds to protect Ye Xiwen.

Quite simple, Ye Xiwen was significantly younger than eighth prince, so he must be allowed to train for ten more years, and then he would have the ability to compete with the eighth prince.

Unconsciously, they were all very confident of Ye Xiwen, after all, despite being so young, if he was able to kill Feng Kong, the commander in chief of Imperial guards, then in the next ten years, people believed that he would at least catch up with eighth prince and the others.

Everyone wanted him to defeat the eighth prince!

"If the eighth prince doesn't stop then I will personally go into action and protect Ye Xiwen." Wu Potian said in a cold voice.

## Chapter 202: Blank

---

The news spread like wild forest fire that Elder Jin Xuan was deprived of his elder's identity and sent to guard a mine, whereas Ye Xiwen was promoted to the rank of a true disciple, which was an obvious result. But gaining the rank of a pro-disciple shocked everyone.

Of course, this time, the value of a merit elder faded away in front of Ye Xiwen, the long-awaited priceless star of the sect. But everyone was surprised to find out the head himself promoted Ye Xiwen to the rank of pro-disciple.

The same thing happened once before with Qi Feifan, he took the place of fifth pro-disciple and he later became a legend in Yi Yuan School.

And now, after Qi Feifan, Ye Xiwen took the fifth place. Last time, just when Qi Feifan had become a pro-disciple, there was a sudden growth in his popularity, there was also a sudden rise of his faction, in terms of both strength and size, and thanks to that, his followers had also received great advantages.

So now it seemed like Ye Xiwen would also have a similar rise like Qi Feifan had, and many people wanted to take advantage of this opportunity. After all, anyone would want to wash hands in a flowing river.

"This Ye Xiwen is really too incredible, the Elder Jin Xuan was not only beaten by him but was also deprived of his elder's

identity."

"Well, of course, Ye Xiwen has become the fifth pro-disciple, whereas, Jin Xuan is merely an ordinary elder, there's no comparison between the two."

"I tell you, this Ye Xiwen is simply a legend, a myth, and now with the rise in his status, the disciples of Qianyu faction will have a meteoric rise in strength and status. It's no longer the faction of newbies, because now, it belongs to a pro-disciple. Unfortunately, I did not join early and even if I go now and join Qianyu faction, I am afraid I won't be able to get the higher ranks."

"Yes, even the head said that he is personally going to protect Ye Xiwen. I was worried that Ye Xiwen might be killed by the eighth prince, but now I am assured that within the protection of our head, even if the eighth prince dares to come, he will meet his tragic end."

Everyone was discussing about Ye Xiwen.

But for Ye Xiwen, the most important thing was to receive control of his peak from the sect. It was a tall mountain and it seemed as if the peak of this mountain was floating in the sky.

Without taking much time, Ye Xiwen named it Qianyu peak; anyway he had decided the name long ago so he didn't spend much time while naming it.

And afterwards, Qianyu peak would become the permanent residence of Qianyu faction and all of the disciples of Qianyu faction would go there to live. Not to mention, the size of Qianyu peak was more than enough to accommodate thousands of people.

But as of now, there were few hundred disciples in Qianyu faction and accommodating them should not be a big deal. Not to mention, most of the disciples still lived in their respective ten peaks, so basically, not even hundred disciples were going to live on Qianyu peak.

It was great news for Qianyu disciples because their leader, Ye Xiwen, not only became a true disciple; he also became a pro-disciple with only four other at the same rank.

There was a heaven and earth's difference between an ordinary true disciple and a pro-disciple.

Ye Xiwen took control of Qianyu peak from an elder, and the first thing he did was to give full access to Qianyu faction. This peak was already like a war-fortress with several Zhen methods for attack and defense, but they only activated in the most critical situations, and under normal circumstances, there was no way to activate these mechanisms.

Ye Xiwen was not satisfied with the defense mechanisms and directly deployed the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag array. Several deepwater black serpents congealed out of nowhere and completely surrounded the Qianyu peak from all directions. It seemed as if the peak was being invaded by these serpents and the defense mechanisms immediately activated. But as suspected,



these defense mechanisms were not satisfactory!

However, Ye Xiwen's Poisonous Water Dragon Control Flag array was enough to serve as a formidable defense for the Qianyu peak.

And most importantly, there was a spiritual artery buried on Qianyu peak, although the Lingqi present was not generally sufficient, but since the flag array would be perennially buried in the spiritual artery, so over time, it would continue to enhance the quality of the flag, in fact, even Ye Xiwen couldn't make a guess about the rise in energy with the passage of time.

Of course, if necessary, Ye Xiwen could come back at any time to protect Qianyu peak.

After Ye Xiwen acquired control of Qianyu peak, it didn't take long for the news to spread throughout the sect, and soon many people, who were already interested in Ye Xiwen's strength and glory, discovered that right after he entered the Qianyu peak, several deepwater black serpents came out of nowhere and surrounded the peak, they were roaring non-stop and their killing intention was crazily soaring in all directions. And since now the flag array was rooted into the spiritual artery of Qianyu peak, it was able to display far more power when compared to how it used to perform in the hands of Ye Xiwen.

"What a terrifying killer Zhen method! What kind of killer Zhen method has Ye Xiwen buried in his peak?"

"His killing method has taken over the sky itself, waiting to

attack the prey!"

"What is this killer Zhen method, how come I've never seen it before?" An elder said and looked at Ye Xiwen, who, at this time, was planting the Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array into the spiritual artery.

The gazes of many true disciples, elders and other powerhouses were glued to Ye Xiwen, and the reason was quite simple, they just wanted to learn more about the fifth pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School and would he be able to create legend like Qi Feifan.

Immediately after Ye Xiwen was done burying the flag array, Lingqi gushed out suddenly from Qianyu peak and completely enveloped it in large stocks of surging Lingqi. Everyone looked at this scene with look of terror and shock in their eyes.

"What's going on, from where did all this Lingqi suddenly emerged onto the mountain peak. It seems like a Zhen method which forcefully extracts Lingqi out of the spiritual artery and then seals it off."

"Yes, extravagant, and if this continues, soon, the huge concentration of Lingqi on the peak will eventually liquefy, but this way the spiritual artery will be consumed very fast and may get depleted within a century or so."

"What are you talking about? He has managed to extract Lingqi faster from the spiritual artery; the sect would definitely praise him for it."

"Yes, we should not forget that now he is a pro-disciple and owns superior treatment even when compared to true disciples."

Most of the disciples were envious but were rather more shocked, they did not know how Ye Xiwen managed to get his hands on so many top level Zhen methods.

Including many of the true disciples, even the elders were in a state of shock, because in such a short time, Ye Xiwen managed to implement such a potent Zhen method that it was basically sucking Lingqi out of millenniums old spiritual artery. From where did he grasp such a powerful Zhen method?

Such concentration of Lingqi was almost comparable to the holy lands of Yi Yuan School, which were formed only after many years of conservation.

Although there would be a shocking consumption rate because of this, but in general, it would do more good than harm.

Especially, a lot of forces were still holding hostility for Ye Xiwen, but now that they saw his performance with their own eyes, they came to realize that his capabilities were already far beyond their imagination and it was literally impossible to deal with him.

"Ladies and Gentlemen, I am Ye Xiwen, the fifth pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School. Just now, I acquired a mountain peak of my own and named it Qianyu peak. From hereby on-wards, it is going to be the

residence and Headquarters of Qianyu faction. Later, if I find out that someone tried to aim their evil intentions towards Qianyu peak or my people in my absence, I will make sure to obliterate your existence from this world!"

Ye Xiwen's voice burst out from Qianyu peak and spread throughout Yi Yuan School like a storm. Everyone was secretly speechless after they discovered the depth of Ye Xiwen's skill. To be able to send his voice surging and trembling throughout the expanse of humongous Yi Yuan School was not something an ordinary true disciple could achieve. Just how unimaginably deep his skill actually was and was he really a third stage true disciple?

After listening to his overwhelming battle-cry like announcement, although many people still could not pin-point his strength level, but at least now they understood why he was made a pro-disciple by the head

"Qianyu faction is really lucky; having a pro-disciple in the faction means their future prospects are simply unimaginable!"

"Not to forget, disciples of Qianyu faction are going to live in a practice environment of Qianyu peak which is rich in Lingqi, which is concentrated enough to be on the verge of liquefying. Only top level elders, peak leaders and head of the sect are able to access such a kind of practice environment but now it accessible to Qianyu faction. It's like they are going to get the same treatment as top elders and leaders of the sect."

"In such a short time, Ye Xiwen not only became a true disciple but also managed to obtain the title of a pro-disciple."

"But looking at his qualifications, it will still take a lot of time for him to achieve the level of other four pro-disciples."

"Yes, but you must consider the fact that other four pro-disciples have been around for decades and almost a century, but in comparison, Ye Xiwen is just 20 years old and still became a pro-disciple."

"But just think, he is just 20 years old and has a lifespan of 400 years. There are so many decades left for him to break through the heavens."

"With his talent and the kind of importance he holds for the sect, unless and until he doesn't end up dead in some conspiracy, I'm afraid his future prospects are extraordinary!"

## Chapter 203: One Xiantian Dan For Each

---

Ye Xiwen was busy day and night, implementing many Zhen methods taught by his in-house magic professor, Ye Mo. With all of the strategically implemented Zhen methods, the entire Qianyu peak looked like paradise on earth, especially because of the planted heavenly treasures, all of which had matured overnight. There was a burst of herbal fragrance when the liquefied Lingqi helped in quick production of herbs, which generally took hundred years or more than a millennium to fully mature. But right now, all of them were present in Ye Xiwen's medicinal garden.

However one had to admit that the treatment of pro-disciples in Yi Yuan School was simply unimaginably good. Even Ye Xiwen had not thought that he would actually be able to own a medicinal garden where he could grow heavenly treasures, not to mention, he also obtained spiritual arteries buried under his peak.

In fact, there were several herbal gardens in Yi Yuan School and pro-disciples used to get an open-supply of herbs from there, perennially. Of course, although pro-disciples could take any herb from the garden but there was a monthly limit, and if exceeded, they might have to purchase those herbs with spirit stones, but still, pro-disciples always enjoyed preference over other disciples.

"My God, so many herbs have ripened overnight, you know, there are many of them that need several years to fully mature and some actually need several hundred years, but all of these matured overnight!" Many disciples were stunned to witness such a scene.

This outcome was possible because of endless supply of Lingqi to

the garden which helped with the early ripening, after all, these herbs needed to absorb huge amounts of Lingqi to fully mature and, under normal conditions it would take several years to slowly accumulate so much Lingqi from the atmosphere. However, now that Ye Xiwen could provide them with endless support of Lingqi, it accelerated the ripening speed.

For a time, the entire Qianyu peak was filled with herbal fragrance and was attracting the attention of everyone.

Originally, Qianyu peak was already a sacred ground with its own spiritual artery and medicinal garden, but now, with Ye Xiwen's interference, it had simply become the holy land for practicing martial arts.

By this time, everyone had come to realize that Ye Xiwen was no ordinary existence, and knew extraordinary means that were simply unheard of, things that were never seen before.

They did not know that more than half of these secret methods were taught to Ye Xiwen by Ye Mo, otherwise how could he possibly know about so many magical techniques?

Although Ye Mo was just a spiritual being, he was very wise and clearly knew about many magical techniques.

After this night, Ye Xiwen's prestige soared to a whole new level, though still not comparable to the four pro-disciples, it was clearly above ordinary true disciples.



Many people had already seen through the potential of Ye Xiwen's plan. He had basically turned Qianyu peak into a holy ground for practicing martial arts and if a Houtian or Xiantian expert was to practice there then it won't be a problem for them to cross the threshold and step into the next realm.

To be able to break from Xiantian realm to truth realm, this was a huge attraction for almost all Xiantian experts.

To think about it, there were tens of thousands of core disciples but there were only few hundred true disciples and that too was the result of accumulation for several decades or centuries.

On an average, only one out of several hundred core disciples managed to step into truth realm, but by practicing on Qianyu peak, one could experience an increase in success rate to a considerable extent, after all, the disciples of Qianyu faction would enjoy top-notch practice conditions which were accessible only to the top-level elders of Yi Yuan School.

Ye Xiwen suddenly became an unsurpassable legendary figure in the hearts of all.

After completion of arrangements on Qianyu peak, Ye Xiwen summoned some of the top level officials of Qianyu faction; in fact, he called Ye Feng and the others.

"Brother, you're too much!" Ye Ruxue patted on the shoulder of Ye Xiwen and said with a pleased look on her face, "If we practice in such an environment then it will be more effective, and in the

future, we can hope to step into the truth realm."

"Of course, the truth realm is something that must be achieved by all." Ye Xiwen said, "And at this point, I'll help you."

For Ye Xiwen, his family and friends were a very important part of his life and, by achieving truth realm an expert's lifespan could reach up to four-five hundred years. Within the coming two centuries, his family members and friends would be dead if they didn't manage to step into truth realm, so he must take measures now itself.

Moreover, both Ye Ruxue and Ye Feng were extremely talented and even without Ye Xiwen's help, in the next of couple of decades, they would naturally become the rare stars of Yi Yuan School and as long as they wouldn't face any accident, reaching the truth realm shouldn't be a problem. Not to mention, if they were to receive help from Ye Xiwen then they would be able to achieve it faster and much more efficiently. And after becoming true disciples, they would certainly add up to Ye Xiwen's force as excellent allies and strong faction officials.

Some people were really excited, although they had been called a genius by peers and elders, the current situation was still very exciting for them all, after all they were still too far from the truth realm. Excluding a legendary evildoer [monster] like Ye Xiwen, who was simply an anomaly, according to their estimates, it would probably take at least take two or three decades for them to step into the truth realm or maybe longer.

But now with Ye Xiwen's help in the form of endless practice

resources and excellent practice environment of Qianyu peak, there was no doubt that their cultivation would increase by leaps and bounds, and in a short time, they would definitely break through to the truth realm.

They were extremely excited because even if they were considered as genius newbies of Yi Yuan School, there was still a huge gap between them and true disciples.

"Since now I have been promoted to the rank of a pro-disciple, there will certainly be a lot of people who want to join Qianyu faction." Ye Xiwen said in a calm manner and everyone nodded. What he said was true because earlier, he just held the enormous potential to step into the truth realm, but now, he finally became a true disciple, and not just that, now he also held the title of fifth pro-disciple, so those who were still waiting to join would certainly not miss this opportunity.

"But what I mean to say is that, we cannot recruit too many people. Our focus should be to recruit only elites." Ye Xiwen said and basically meant that rather than turning Qianyu into a bulky faction like many other factions of true disciples, they must aim to become an elite faction by recruiting only elites, "Those who are already a part of Qianyu faction will be called as original disciples and the new ones, who want to join now, must fulfill the minimum requirement of being at Xiantian seventh stage. I repeat, we only recruit people with great potential."

Everyone nodded because if before, a Xiantian seventh stage expert was willing to join Qianyu faction, they would be overjoyed, but now the situation was different.

"I know that we have a lot of Houtian level disciples in our factions compared to other factions." Ye Xiwen said with a smile, because the establishment of Qianyu faction was based on the new disciples. Only one-third of these new disciples were in Xiantian realm, the remaining two-thirds were still in Houtian realm. Later in the last one year's time, one-third of them managed to step into Xiantian realm while remaining one-third were still at the peak of Houtian ninth stage. It would take more than a year for the rest of them to naturally step into the Xiantian realm.

But Ye Xiwen wanted to increase the overall strength of Qianyu faction in a short time, and since these new disciples represented the original strength of the faction when compared to new additions, so Ye Xiwen wanted all of them to get stronger as fast as possible. His main motive was to help them step into the truth realm, and only by achieving this motive, Qianyu faction would become self-sufficient.

"So I intend to set up an alchemy furnace." Ye Xiwen said, "I am going to refine hundreds of Xiantian Dans for the members of Qianyu faction who are still in Houtian realm. I think that all of the members of our faction must be in Xiantian realm."

Everyone was surprised for a moment. Ye Xiwen was so generous, after all, even a hundred Xiantian Dan was not a small sum. Thinking about it, although these people were considered as geniuses in their previous respective sub-sects, they still didn't possess Xiantian Dans, which was such an important item for having a successful breakthrough from Houtian to Xiantian realm, but now, Ye Xiwen was going to openly refine and distribute Xiantian Dans among them.

Now, it was like Xiantian Dan was no different from vegetables and was being openly distributed in public interest so everyone could have one!

Also, many people were curious to know how Ye Xiwen managed to get his hands on the alchemical formula of Xiantian Dan and what kind of method he would apply to refine hundreds of Xiantian Dans.

They certainly did not know that for Ye Xiwen, alchemy was not a difficult thing. He had already learnt many superior alchemy approaches and methods under the mentorship of Ye Mo. Ye Xiwen was going to follow these much more efficient methods to refine Xiantian Dans in bulk, and by following Ye Mo's refining method, even the efficacy of these Dans would be much better than usual.

"In addition, I will be refining some of the Hehe Dans as well, so the experts at Xiantian fifth stage can have the breakthrough and practice further into the subsequent stages of Xiantian realm." Ye Xiwen said, "Then I will refine a lot of Ling Dans for everyone to use. Basically, from here on, the senior executives of Qianyu faction will be able to raise their cultivation at an extremely fast rate."

Of course, Ye Xiwen was refining immortality pills at the perfection level by relying on superior alchemy techniques taught by Ye Mo, and when consumed, they would leave no after-effects, hence allowing them to enhance the strength in shortest possible time.

There were a lot of things that Ye Xiwen personally could not do, after all, he was a pro-disciple and might have to deal with a lot of things, so he would have to greatly enhance the strength of the executives of Qianyu faction.

## Chapter 204: Blank

---

By constantly practicing the art of alchemy in the mysterious space, he had already reached the pinnacle of this art, and now, he was way better at it than those other old alchemists. In fact, when considering the teachings of Ye Mo, his skills would be earth-shattering.

There were many rumors spreading everywhere that Ye Xiwen was able to refine many treasures whose formulae had been lost for several years. Although he knew alchemy and he also had a top class alchemy furnace, the most important thing was the amount of raw materials in his possession. Even if he had the entire required infrastructure to produce something, he would still need enough raw materials.

No matter what kind of immortality pill was to be produced, a lot of herbs were required along with a huge supply of Lingqi to carry out alchemical reactions.

Now, there was no shortage of Lingqi since there was an endless supply of it on Qianyu peak, and to such an extent that Lingqi was getting liquefied on Qianyu peak. This phenomenon was actually comparable to the spiritual shrine of Yi Yuan School.

And now, thanks to endless supply of concentrated Lingqi, Ye Xiwen created a lush garden of medicinal herbs overnight. All of the fruits ripened and flowers bloomed overnight and the overall production was lavish. Basically, there would be no lack of herbs and medicine for Ye Xiwen.



The disciples of Qianyu faction were collecting the herbs from garden and taking them over to the place where alchemy furnace was placed. He was just sitting before the furnace and continuously casting alchemy techniques day and night to produce Dans.

For the first few days, he was planning to refine only Xiantian Dans. It could be considered as the simplest prescription and he knew the secret process to refine it. Some medicinal herbs were required for refining Xiantian Dan but Ye Xiwen wasn't bothered since now he owned a medicinal garden where all kinds of herbs could be found and even new herbs could be grown within a matter of minutes. This was something only Ye Xiwen could do; in fact, only he could afford to do so.

Ye Xiwen was able to refine a few hundred Xiantian Dans in just one day's refining and one must know that it's insane. Even the most veteran alchemists were able to refine a batch of twenty to thirty Xiantian Dans in one day, which was the reason why Dans were generally so expensive.

With the help of so many Xiantian Dans, refined by Ye Xiwen, many breakthroughs into Xiantian realm cropped up one after another on Qianyu peak and spread huge torrents of auras on the peak .....

A month's time passed in a blink of an eye and in this month, many of the disciples of Qianyu faction leveled up considerably. No one expected that these big movements would continue to occur for the whole month; first the original members of Qianyu faction broke through from Houtian to Xiantian realm, and those who were already in Xiantian realm also stepped into further stages

after multiple breakthroughs.

The senior members of Qianyu faction, who were at Xiantian fourth or fifth stage, also had breakthroughs during this month and successfully stepped into Xiantian Xiao realm, while some members also stepped into Xiantian sixth stage.

In this short period of time, there was a qualitative mutation in Qianyu faction and its strength increased by leaps and bounds, as the core members suddenly leveled up.

Thanks to this sudden increase in strength by leaps and bounds, now, Qianyu faction could be considered a middle-level faction. Although it was still not comparable with the factions of other four pro-disciples in terms of strength but since only one month had passed after Ye Xiwen became a pro-disciple, one could imagine the growth potential of this faction.

Soon, a big news spread throughout the sect that the fifth pro-disciple, Ye Xiwen, had set up an alchemy furnace on Qianyu peak and was refining a large number of immortality pills, but instead of keeping them for himself, he was distributing it among the disciples of Qianyu faction, and as a result, their cultivation was increasing by leaps and bounds.

At this rate, perhaps, Qianyu faction would be able to catch up with ordinary true disciple factions in a very short period of time, although there would still be a big gap between his faction and the four other pro-factions, the speed was already amazingly quick.

When everyone got to know that Ye Xiwen was bleeding money to train members of Qianyu faction, suddenly numerous disciples were envious and wanted to join, but it was too late now. Earlier, when the standards to join Qianyu faction were very low, they were just waiting and watching and now when Ye Xiwen actually became a pro-disciple, the standard requirements suddenly became much higher and they had no chance but to give up. Qianyu faction suddenly became the faction of elites and if someone wanted to join it, the minimum requisite was to have one's cultivation at Xiantian seventh stage.

But seeing the recruitment criteria of Qianyu faction, suddenly a lot of factions were at ease because it seemed like Qianyu faction was choosing the route of the elites and not expanding rapidly. And since Ye Xiwen did not intend to expand rapidly, they could also cooperate.

After all, if Ye Xiwen started open recruitment, without any pre-requisites, then perhaps all of the idle disciples of Yi Yuan School would come running to join Qianyu faction.

Just because Ye Xiwen had kept high standards which included that the experts must be at Xiantian seventh stage at least and not older than 100 years old, and they must hold some kind of potential. During this month, Qianyu faction was recruiting members but less than seventy to eighty people actually passed the requirement criteria, so the overall impact was not great.

Then another mind-boggling news spread out that Ye Xiwen was not just refining immortality pills but also refining Ling Dans.

This suddenly alarmed many disciples, because they could ignore Xiantian Dan for once as they basically had no use of it, but the emergence of Ling Dan suddenly alarmed many true disciples.

Because the so-called Ling Dan was actually produced by condensing the Lingqi present in the air, a Ling Dan was made up of pure Lingqi without any impurities, and when absorbed, its efficiency was much more when compared to directly absorbing Lingqi from atmosphere or spirit stones.

Lingqi could be absorbed from spirit stones but there were still many impurities in them, but in case of Ling Dan, there were fewer impurities and contained higher quantity of Lingqi; hence it had better quality and efficacy.

Just like there was a huge difference between low-grade spirit stones and high-grade spirit stones, there was a considerable difference between top-grade spirit stones and Ling Dan.

One Ling Dan was comparable to several top-grade spirit stones, and, even the absorption efficiency of spirit stones was nowhere close to a Ling Dan.

But ordinary experts could not refine Ling Dan, only masters of truth sixth stage and above were capable of refining Ling Dan. In fact, even masters of small truth could not refine Ling Dan.

Only after reaching truth sixth stage, one was able to enter an entirely new level of understanding of world laws and that's the reason why experts of truth sixth stage and above could condense

Ling Dan.

There was no need of alchemy furnace to condense Ling Dan, a true disciple could basically use his hand to condense Ling Dan. But most people, not even the master of truth sixth stage, could condense Ling Dan with high-efficiency and it would take more than one day in the completion of condensation process. If it was a half-step legendary master like Qi Feifan then he might actually condense 1000 Ling Dan in a day.

So Ling Dan was considered a hard currency in Zhen Wu Jie.

But for truth sixth stage experts, the condensed out Ling Dans were not enough even for their own use then how could they possibly sell it to others?

Of course, if they spent enough time then they would be able to condense many Ling Dans but one must know that time was precious for truth level masters and it was necessary to save every minute to be able to have the next breakthrough, so they couldn't spend much time on condensing Ling Dan.

Although Ling Dans could be mass-produced using alchemy furnace but truth level masters would rarely use it to condense Ling Dans because it was extremely difficult to get one's hands on one.

So Ling Dan was always in a state of 'out of stock' in Zhen Wu Jie and basically began with the best exchange rate that could reach more than a hundred or so, because of short supply.

And now when the news spread out from Qianyu peak about availability of large number of Ling Dan for exchange with spirit stones, it suddenly shocked countless disciples and most of them were the true disciples who were suffering from lack of practice resources.

While the conversion efficiency of absorption of Lingqi from spirit stones was pretty good, it was nowhere close to that of a Ling Dan.

But usually, it was very difficult to obtain a Ling Dan so even truth sixth stage disciples were very excited after hearing this news. Although they could refine their own Ling Dan, the question was that should they spend their precious time on it? Anyway, their refining speed wouldn't be as good as an alchemy furnace and as long as they managed to breakthrough to the legendary realm, it would be worth it since their lifespans would once again increase considerably, not to mention self-refined Ling Dans wouldn't necessarily support their practice.

Ling Dan had become a hard currency because it had always remained a scare resource, and due to its purity, most people still preferred it over spirit stones.

After the news spread throughout Yi Yuan School, many eyes turned towards Qianyu peak. Also, several disciples could be seen rushing towards Qianyu peak.

"Ye Xiwen, are you really refining lots of Ling Dan?" Early in the

morning, Hua Menghan arrived in front of Ye Xiwen and asked curiously.

Last time he saw her, it was one month ago and he was quite surprised to notice the increase in her strength in just one month's time.

He clearly saw that Hua Menghan actually stepped into truth realm in this month, although she still had an unstable aura but there was no doubt that she has firmly entered into the truth realm.

The birth of a true disciple was very rare and always caused huge a sensation throughout the sect. The promotion ceremony was accompanied with grand celebration in the entire sect, but this time, Ye Xiwen's direct promotion to a pro-disciple actually overshadowed everyone else.



## Chapter 205: Accumulation Of Contacts

---

Since the shock of Ye Xiwen being promoted to the rank of a true disciple was too strong, so many people didn't pay attention to the promotion of Hua Menghan that happened around the same time. Although both had become the true disciples of Yi Yuan School, Hua Menghan was considerably low-key in comparison to Ye Xiwen.

Therefore, the news of Ye Xiwen stepping into the truth realm was much more bizarre since he was merely a new disciple few months ago whereas Hua Menghan had stayed at the half-step truth realm for a long time, so her breakthrough didn't come as a surprise to others.

"Ye Xiwen, are you really refining a lot of Ling Dans?"

Noticing the expectant look in her eyes, Ye Xiwen smiled and nodded: "Indeed, if you want then I can send 1000 Ling Dans for free."

Now, both Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan were true disciples. Considering the fact that Ye Xiwen joined late, it should be said that Hua Menghan was his senior but as the two of them belonged to the same generation of disciples, they called each other without honorifics.

All of a sudden, Hua Menghan was extremely surprised as she never expected that Ye Xiwen would just casually talk about gifting 1000 Ling Dans to her. One must know that it was not a small

number when converted into spirit stones; this would be 100,000 top-grade spirit stones. So, how could Ye Xiwen so causally talk about gifting 1000 Ling Dans to her?

The most important thing was that even if experts of truth sixth stage were to refine for ten days and nights without eating and drinking, they would still not be able to refine so many Ling Dans.

And this figure was equivalent to one month's worth of non-stop refining and that too by an expert of truth sixth stage. In fact, the sum of 1000 Ling Dans was an astronomical figure even for an expert of truth sixth stage.

Especially for experts like Hua Menghan who had recently stepped into the truth realm, even more so, one thousand Ling Dans were enough for them to practice all the way to the truth fifth stage without worrying about lack of spirit stones.

After successfully crossing the Small truth realm and reaching the truth sixth stage, there would be a tremendous change in one's skill and battle strength. One must know that there wasn't just one level difference between fifth and sixth stage of truth realm, so there would certainly be a huge difference in consumption rate as well.

Although 1000 Ling Dans were enough to practice all the way to truth fifth stage, the experts of truth sixth stage would actually be able to fully consume this amount in about two months.

And for the experts of truth seventh stage or eighth stage, the

consumption rate would rise exponentially; then the need for refining Ling Dan would certainly be much more.

But this time, Hua Menghan was not at all interested in these 1000 Ling Dans, after all, her backing was not small. In all her life, she had never lacked practice resources whenever she needed them. She came to meet Ye Xiwen because she was worried about another thing.

"If you can refine so many Ling Dans then you must be using some other means of refining right?" Hua Menghan said.

Ye Xiwen nodded and did not hide because there was nothing to hide. In fact, there were lots of other ways in which one could refine Ling Dans.

For example, one could catch a truth sixth stage slave and make him spend all his time in refining Ling Dans though this was simply a great waste of talent. Or, if there were special instruments used then it was possible to refine them.

Everyone knew that since Ye Xiwen was not at truth sixth stage, it was impossible for him to refine Ling Dans himself. The only possible way of refining so many Ling Dans was that he must be using some instrument to do so.

"But you must have a limited supply of Ling Dans right?" Hua Menghan asked.

"En! ," Ye Xiwen nodded, of course, the production amount was limited since he was actually relying on Tianyuan mirror to refine Ling Dans from the Lingqi present in the atmosphere, but there were other harmful and harmless qi in the air, so the refining process was slow.

In the most primitive means of practice, martial artists absorbed qi directly from the air into the body, absorb Lingqi and discharge other useless qi from the body.

And Ye Xiwen didn't need to get involved, he was just using Tianyuan mirror to remove impurities and condense only Lingqi in the Ling Dans. Tianyuan mirror could independently take care of the refining job but since only a portion of its strength had recovered, it was capable of refining a limited amount of 500 Ling Dans in a day.

However, although it could refine only 500 Ling Dans, this figure was faster than a truth seventh stage expert's refining speed.

Considering Ye Xiwen's current Lingqi consumption rate, five hundred Ling Dans were still sufficient to meet his needs but with the constant progress in his cultivation, the consumption rate would also grow exponentially, but with time, the restoration of Tianyuan mirror would also be much more than now. This would make sure that the refining speed would be faster than consumption rate, so at least for a long period of time, Ye Xiwen would not need to worry about lack of Lingqi.

And Ye Xiwen was not going to consume so much, hence he began to think about converting Ling Dans to spirit stones. In fact,

he was definitely not doing a wonderful thing but this was still a profitable move.

One Ling Dan could be exchanged for 100 spirit stones; in fact, almost 50 spirit stones could be condensed into a Ling Dan when refined. So there was a difference of up to 100% profit but the most important source of getting Ling Dans was Tianyuan mirror, which was not accessible to other experts.

But if one needed much more pure and efficient Lingqi, one could get it directly and easily from a Ling Dan, which was the reason why they were willing to spend on them.

Many people were aware of this fact but very few people would actually opt to do it because refining Ling Dans was really uneconomical when the waste of practice time was taken into consideration, not to mention, only experts of truth sixth stage and above could refine them.

So, the better option was to earn spirit stones by completing tasks and missions from the sect, then use these spirit stones to buy Ling Dans. In fact, most of the sources of Ling Dans were actually the legendary realm experts or half-step legendary realm masters, since their refining speed was much faster than truth realm masters.

"I guess you are aware of the restrictions, otherwise, you will end up snatching a core job from the legendary masters." Hua Menghan said. "But are you are not afraid that so many disciples have come to buy Ling Dans from you, and at the end of the day, you will not have enough Ling Dans left for yourself?"

"Rest assured, that's totally not a problem. Although it seems like a lot of disciples have gathered for exchanging Ling Dans, most of them are not from the upper ranks. The core disciples only want to buy enough Ling Dans to be of help to them in critical life-threatening situations, and in the case of true disciples, they actually have their own reliable means to obtain Ling Dans. It indeed caused a great sensation but I am fully capable of coping up with the situation." Ye Xiwen said.

After all, it was not difficult to condense Ling Dan, rather the time required for its refining was the main issue, thereby making its cost very high.

Ling Dan was a very valuable practice resource for true disciples; perhaps Ye Xiwen was the only one in the entire Yi Yuan School who could dare be so extravagant to openly sell them. After all, Ling Dans could be used in a critical moment to momentarily restore Zhen Yuan which would obviously be a contributing factor in saving a life.

After reaching the true sixth stage, it was a basic norm for experts to find a balance point between refining Ling Dans and practice time. This balance was very necessary and even Qi Feifan was not an exception to following this standard.

Generally, experts preferred saving Ling Dans but Ye Xiwen did not take this seriously.

According to Ye Xiwen, as long as he was getting enough spirit

stones in exchange, he could continue to have a rapid increase in cultivation.

Ye Xiwen dared to maintain such transcendent practice speed due to the underlying causes, but in the eyes of others, it seemed as if he was spending such an enormous wealth in a short time. And the reason for that was that Ye Xiwen understood that strength was the ultimate truth in this world. As long as he possessed enormous strength, astronomical wealth would be waiting for him.

Strength was the most fundamental thing in this world; it could question anything and was an answer to all.

But then Hua Menghan reminded Ye Xiwen of his original decision of selling Ling Dan. Profit was indeed one of the very important reasons but the fundamental reason was that he wanted Qianyu faction to accumulate enough contacts. As disciples from all over Yi Yuan School would continue to buy Ling Dans from Qianyu faction, they would inevitably owe a favor to him and also to the entire faction, and favors like this would be repaid by them in the form of helping Qianyu faction in its expansion and development.

Although Ye Xiwen had been relentlessly taking lives, there was a truth he knew very well that no one could be an enemy of everyone.

People must have friends to watch their backs in critical times.

And this exchange of Ling Dan was such a good opportunity to

accumulate contacts, not to forget the word of mouth would also benefit Qianyu faction's reputation and status.

After all, Qianyu faction might seem massive at first sight but Ye Xiwen knew that it was just because he was promoted to the rank of a pro-disciple.

However, in reality, Qianyu faction couldn't possibly compete with the factions of true disciples. In fact, at present, Qianyu faction's strength was equivalent to that of mid-level factions because really powerful factions at least had more than two true disciples.



## Chapter 206: True Disciple Joins

---

Precisely because of this, Ye Xiwen had a sense of crisis and urgency because time waits for no one. Not to mention, there was a large gap between the strength of Qianyu faction and the factions of other pro-disciples or even true disciples of truth seventh, eighth and ninth stage.

Now, Ye Xiwen felt that he had become a bit high-profile. If he was alone then others would naturally not care anyway, but now, since he was representing Qianyu faction, most likely several forces would try to suppress its development.

Ye Xiwen's intention was to accumulate as many connections for Qianyu faction as he could. In case of infinite redemption, it would certainly attract the attention of some super experts, but at that time, they wouldn't face an unfavorable situation pertaining to the development of Qianyu faction thanks to the sheer amount of accumulated contacts.

"Thank you for reminding me." Ye Xiwen said, "From tomorrow onwards, Qianyu faction will start selling only 30 Ling Dans per day."

This amount was less than one-tenth of Tianyuan mirror's per day refining capacity, so it was simply not a problem.

Hua Menghan smiled at Ye Xiwen. He was really smart, and soon realized the meaning of her words; after all, the small amount of 30 Ling Dans won't attract too much attention.

Of course, he would continue to produce a large number of Ling Dans, but Qianyu faction would use them to redeem faction credits. This system was just like the system of redeeming sect credits.

These rules were decided after Ye Xiwen had a consultation with Ye Feng and other high-level officials of Qianyu faction.

But news about Ye Xiwen's decision set off a firestorm in Yi Yuan School.

30 Ling Dans were not much, especially with the huge demand in the sect, but in general, they were selling 30 per day, which amounted to 900 per month. Going on like this, they would be selling thousands in a year.

Suddenly, countless disciples raged up and rushed straight towards Qianyu peak.

But the requirements were very simple; each person must take a number plate and stand in the queue. Each and every one must show their number plate at the time of buying Ling Dans otherwise, they wouldn't be allowed to buy, irrespective of the money they might offer.

For a time, let alone Ling Dan, even those number plates had their price pushed up because of increased demand and lessened supply.

But since Ye Xiwen had said that this was going to be a long-term exchange, he would gradually increase the amount of Ling Dans as well. Although right now, he was providing only a small number, he already managed to appease the hearts of many people, otherwise, perhaps riots would have been unavoidable in such a situation.

It was not a difficult task for Ye Xiwen, just this month Ye Xiwen refined more than 15,000 immortality pills which were sufficient to meet the requirements for more than one year. And with time, his refining efficiency would continue to increase, and with Tianyuan mirror's further restoration, the refining speed would increase as well.

Although only a month's time had passed, Ye Xiwen exhibited powerful and magical means that people had never seen before. That's why, there were more and more people who wanted to come under his wings. Even if his strength was not as good as the strength of other pro-disciples, it was not too inferior to them either. And if they joined his faction now, he would certainly not ill-treat them in the future.

Ye Xiwen finally made his move and it even attracted the attention of many true disciples. Apart from creating their own faction, true disciples also tend to join other factions, in fact, there were more than half who had not yet joined any faction and preferred being aloof.

But whether it was a true disciple or core disciple, both faced a very important issue of lack of Lingqi for practice.

Certainly, Ye Xiwen had no shortage of Lingqi at this point but most true disciples did, and because of lack of Lingqi, their practice speed was always slow. Even though some of them were considered true geniuses, there was a huge gap between them and a prodisciple like Qi Feifan, and this gap could be narrowed if they had sufficient Lingqi for faster practice speed.

Not being able to progress quickly brought upon another problem and that was shortage of life. Although after breaking through to the truth realm, one could attain a lifespan of 500 years, difficulty in breakthrough also increased exponentially with each stage. It was simply hard to imagine how tough it was to have a breakthrough in truth realm; in fact, it was actually much easier to reach from Houtian realm to Truth realm.

And only with rapid progress, they could reach the truth sixth stage and that would add extra 200 years to their lifespan. Then they would have enough time to think of ways of breaking into the legendary realm and attain the lifespan of a millennium.

For them, the desire for a breakthrough was far more than most people could ever imagine.

Many true disciples took aim at Ye Xiwen, after all, although he was giving out dozens of Ling Dans daily, no one was willing to believe that Ye Xiwen was capable of producing only this much.

Ye Xiwen's refining capacity should certainly be far more than this number because they couldn't possibly fail to notice how

members of Qianyu faction were allowed to redeem faction credits as Ling Dans.

If they had joined Qianyu faction in the past then with their truth level strength, they would certainly have enjoyed much more benefits compared to the average disciples. They could easily perform several tasks for the faction and exchange faction credits for Ling Dans. This was just having a stable income.

And even if Ye Xiwen was not at truth sixth stage, he was able to refine so many Ling Dans, so when he would step into truth sixth stage, one could simply not imagine the number of Ling Dans he would refine in a day!

"Senior Ye, I sincerely want to join Qianyu faction. I hope you will give me shelter over here." At this time, the first true disciple finally appeared to join Qianyu faction. It was a middle-aged man dressed in old fashioned robe and his name was Guiyi Zhenren.

Among all of the true disciples of Yi Yuan School, he was one of the oldest. He became a true disciple almost two hundred years ago, and it could be said that status wise, he was senior even to Chu Jingcai and other peerless experts of his generation. But right now, he called Ye Xiwen as 'Senior Ye'.

Of course, it was true that Ye Xiwen was now a pro-disciple, and theoretically, he was supposed to be senior in rank to all other true disciples. Now, he was on equal footing with only the other four pro-disciples.

Ye Xiwen thought for a moment and instantly saw through his purpose for coming to him. Those weren't empty words because he really spoke his mind, he actually wanted to join Qianyu faction and his main motivation for making this decision was to obtain Ling Dans. He was already more than three hundred years old and was only at the fourth stage of truth realm, so basically, he could be counted among the old experts, and in the coming few decades, he would turn into an elder of the sect. Although true disciples and elders shared some of the parts but there was a big inherent difference between them.

But Guiyi Zhenren didn't want to just stay on the fourth stage of truth realm and then turn into an elder. He wanted to break through to the sixth stage of truth realm and continue to stay as a true disciple.

He could not achieve it on his own, but Ye Xiwen could. Ye Xiwen was an outstanding existence who was appointed as the fifth pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School at such a young age. In the future, he might actually be much more successful than the legendary expert, Qi Feifan. So, if he chose to follow Ye Xiwen, in the future, he might be able to have a breakthrough, reaching sixth stage of truth realm or even above that.

Basically, only a small breakthrough to the Small truth realm and then to the truth sixth stage could raise his status among the true disciples and bring him respect and prosperity that several other true disciple were unable to achieve. Then, he would be counted among few senior true disciples who were able to step into truth sixth stage which was considered extremely hard to achieve.

"Well, as long as you are sincere to join, Qianyu faction will gladly welcome you and you will never be ill-treated in the future. And for you, breaking through to the sixth stage will be something just around the corner." Ye Xiwen said with a loud laughter. Guiyi Zhenren was the first true disciple who willingly came to join the faction so they would certainly not ill-treat him, not to mention, as long as a refuge true disciple was willing to help in the growth of Qianyu faction, there was no point in ill-treating him.

Although Ye Xiwen was not the leader of Qianyu faction in reality, he was actually its spiritual leader. So, it could be said that if he gave his word to someone, it would become a law for the whole faction to follow. And just now, he gave his word to Guiyi Zhenren.

Guiyi Zhenren joined Qianyu faction, this news quickly spread throughout Yi Yuan School. The leaders of other forces sighed, after all, Qianyu faction was expanding quite fast and that too right in front of their eyes.

## Chapter 207: Blank

---

After all, Ye Xiwen was just a titular elder, though he was actually the Lord of the Court and most influential character in the entire faction, he did not want to get involved in the management of too many chores.

And now that Guiyi Zhenren had come to seek refuge in Qianyu faction, he got the position of law enforcement elder of the faction. Now, he was like the direct descendant of Qianyu faction since he had never been a part of any faction. And, even if no other true disciple would come to join, he would be staying in Qianyu faction for a very long time. In fact, keeping Ye Xiwen aside, now he was the strongest member and final line of defense of Qianyu faction.

Ye Xiwen did not make him wait long and immediately rewarded him with 100 Ling Dans. Guiyi Zhenren was suddenly very excited because this amount was already much more than what he was able to obtain in the past several years.

Ye Xiwen did not hesitate anymore and began a closed-door practice. Although the sect-head himself came forward to announce that he would ensure Ye Xiwen's safety and security and definitely wouldn't allow the eighth prince to have his way, if their battle was to be scheduled about a decade later then even if Ye Xiwen was to die, the sect-head wouldn't interfere. But at present, the scenario was entirely different. Not to forget, this was not the first time that a peerless genius was being targeted as the five forces had always been this way. Each time there was a rise of a peerless genius; the other forces would send their own to fight each other and eradicate any potential future threat!



Who wouldn't know about the legendary lore of the rise of Qi Feifan in Yi Yuan School!

But a sect absolutely wouldn't allow its distinguished disciples to die in unfair battles. It would be a serious threat to the sect's arsenal, but in turn, they might send Qi Feifan to strike the eighth prince; however it's another case that the royal clan would immediately come hopping to save their own!

Ye Xiwen had not yet begun the closed-door training when a task came out of nowhere. After several months of preparation, the royal clan seemed all prepared to organize a large force which would be tasked to destroy the ever-sporadic Bai Mojiao strongholds throughout the Great Yue State.

The largest force that the Great Yue State had ever seen finally began to reveal its fang. It was a result of hundred years of accumulation which finally began to come out. For a major force like Yi Yuan School, hundred years was almost like a generation's time to grow, but one could imagine that this accumulated strength, and that too in a span of 100 years, was going to be scary.

All of the secret legions were about to reveal their true strength. They were going to rush throughout the country and eliminate Bai Mojiao. Now, even the royal clan couldn't help but use its full strength to wipe out the Bai Mojiao forces. However, Yi Yuan School could not possibly rely on other forces. To destroy Bai Mojiao, the ordinary legions would just act as cannon fodder. They would certainly play the part of warrior regiments. The royal clan had helped in the production and development of these legions for

so many years, and finally, they were all forthcoming for a collective action.

This time, the four major sects got the invitation from the royal clan, inviting them with the request to send the most elite experts to take part in the expedition against Bai Mojiao.

It basically meant that the four forces needed to dispatch truth level experts because in general, sending Xiantian level experts wouldn't have much impact on the strengthening of legions. There were already many Xiantian level experts in the royal clan but it lacked truth level experts, particularly now when they wanted to suppress Bai Mojiao throughout the Great Yue State.

Being a pro-disciple, Ye Xiwen also received the task to go to the Imperial city as a pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School. And not just him even Qi Feifan also received the same task.

Out of the five pro-disciples, Chu Jingcai was busy training in the deep space of Yi Yuan School, whereas both Huang Luo Chen and Shui Yanluo were out on campaign, so this time, only Qi Feifan and Ye Xiwen were tasked to go to Imperial city.

Also taking into account that this was not the first collaboration between the two, sending them together was justified. Although Ye Xiwen's strength was not enough, but as long as he had the identity of the pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School, no one would dare to not listen to him.

But Ye Xiwen didn't go together with . He had some matter to

deal with in Qianyu faction so Qi Feifan took a group of people with him and left early.

"Imperial capital, according to the rumors, it is considered the liveliest and most prosperous area in the entire Great Yue State. Regardless of day and night, the whole city is lightened with endless lit colored lamps, making it seem like there's day all the time." Ye Xiwen remembered the description of the Imperial city that he had read before in books, but he had never gone there in person.

Certainly, this was just the impression of ordinary people. However, it was indeed true that Imperial capital was the supreme headquarter of the royal clan, comprising of many experts like Crouching tiger, Hidden Dragon and several others famous ones. Although no one dared to point at them, everyone knew about them. In fact, there were rumors that some Devil experts were also hidden in the Imperial city.

The entire Imperial city could be considered as Great Yue State's most prosperous city with the resident population of over twenty million, when not considering the floating population.

Ye Xiwen found Ye Feng and handed over almost 15,000 Ling Dans to him. Anyway, for Ye Xiwen, as long as he desired, he could obtain as many as he needed. He could obtain a steady stream of Ling Dans from Tianyuan mirror, so at the moment, these Ling Dans weren't so valuable for him. It could be said that right now, great wealth was right at his fingertips.

"Brother, you are going to the Imperial capital. Be careful there,

that place is the stronghold of the royal clan." Ye Feng said with some concern for Ye Xiwen, "There are numerous experts of royal clan in the Imperial capital, such as Hairy Ox, Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon, let alone a lot of people have come to hate you because of eighth prince's matter. So, you must be extremely careful!"

"Rest assured brother, I will be fine." Ye Xiwen smiled and said, "If someone tries to target me, I won't hold back either."

Ye Xiwen flatly said this but his words were full of killing intention. If he were to kill the eighth prince in Imperial city, the royal clan won't tolerate it. But, Ye Xiwen was certainly not a scapegoat because he had the backing of Yi Yuan School, one of the five major forces of Great Yue State. Even the royal clan couldn't dare to offend such an enormous beast.

Ye Xiwen did not wait long and left for Imperial capital the very next day Qi Feifan left for the same. He opened his devil wings and flew towards the Imperial city, darting all the way. In just a span of one day and night, he arrived at the periphery of the Imperial city wall, retracted the devil wings and descended near the city gate. The Imperial city was just like Yi Yuan School, there were numerous no-fly zones over the entire city. There was a circle of protection hanging directly over the city, but on the inside, there were no hard and fast rules.

When going through the city gate, the city looked so large that it was simply hard to imagine its vastness. The city wall stretched thousands of Li from east to west.

Even in the previous world, Ye Xiwen had not seen such a huge city. The perimeter of the city wall stretched up to a 1000 Li and was about 10 Li in width, there was literally no way one could see the terminus of this city.

Ye Xiwen looked around and found the entire city filled with Xiantian masters. Xiantian level experts were present simply everywhere, even on walls patrol soldiers were actually Xiantian powerhouses. Moreover, not just ordinary powerhouses, their cultivations were very deep. Looking from afar, it seemed as if bloody Xiantian qi was shooting round after round up into the sky. If not considering that it was the Imperial capital of Great Yue State, it would have been a terrifying sight to withhold.

Looking ahead, even pedestrians on the road possessed high cultivation levels. There were Xiantian masters everywhere and Ye Xiwen could occasionally sense some truth level experts from time to time. And sometimes, he could sense the surge of terrifying aura from the depths of the palace.

This was simply a terrible and dangerous spot, exceptionally horrifying, really worthy of being a royal stronghold.

Flying was not prohibited inside so long as one didn't go near the city wall. Only a small number of experts were flying near the city wall, and they too probably belonged to the royal clan.

Because if a person didn't belong to the royal clan and he tried to fly near the city wall, that would trigger the enchantment which would shoot him down. The royal clan certainly had a special way to face this enchantment.

As he went inside, he had a vague feeling about the pressure of this enchantment. No one knew exactly when the Great Yue State was founded, probably some 1000 years ago, so it could be considered that this enchantment was set up back then and had been reinforced multiple times to last this long. In fact, it was so strong that even if a truth level expert tried to face it head-on, he would still have a fearful feeling in his heart while facing it. Therefore, even if there were lots of experts in the city, no one dared to fly near the city wall.

Ye Xiwen entered the Imperial city and the first thing he needed to do was to find the place where his fellow disciples of Yi Yuan School were residing, but it was not difficult, after all, Yi Yuan School was one of the four major sects so the place where they had settled would naturally be famous and widely known.

Ye Xiwen was walking on a wide avenue, although it was the sidewalk, it was wide enough to accommodate two carriages at once.

The street was crowded with people and the eyesight of these residents was very sharp. Although Ye Xiwen was deliberately restraining his cultivation, they were still able to recognize that he was a truth level disciple, despite his commoner-like appearance.

"He is a truth level master. Absolutely yes, look, as he is walking, the air surrounding him is also changing, which is a symbol of a truth level expert."

"Yes, you are right, and this is not the usual calm aura of a truth level disciple who has recently stepped into the truth realm."

"Look at his armband; he is a disciple of Yi Yuan School. Well, Yi Yuan School is really worthy of being one of the four major sects, one mighty expert after another!"

"Indeed, yesterday itself a team of experts arrived from Yi Yuan School. Didn't you sense that mighty aura? It reportedly belongs to the leader of that team who is actually one of the five pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School. He is called Qi Feifan, when he was young, he once came to the Imperial city and picked fights with the experts all over the city, and that power and prestige he showed back then was truly mesmerizing."

"But they say that Yi Yuan School has sent two pro-disciples. Did you see the second one?"

## Chapter 208: Blank

---

"I did not see, reportedly he did not come together with Qi Feifan, but since you mentioned him, I tell you, there's a true story about this guy."

"What is it? Let us hear as well."

"This pro-disciple is actually the same guy who was challenged to a duel by our eighth prince. This guy is much [undisciplined and out of control](#), he is only twenty years old but actually beheaded the commander of Imperial guards. It really shocked the entire nation!"

regardless of the law and of natural morality; maverick; undisciplined and out of control

"What, Feng Kong was killed by him? Then he must really be a fierce guy. When the eighth prince would come back from the ruins, I'm afraid he would burn with rage. The eighth prince would certainly not let him off, after all, Feng Kong used to be his most capable assistant."

"No way, Yi Yuan School's head has personally come forward to grant full protection to this guy, so how will the eighth prince lay his hands on him? It is said that this guy is very young and if this duel was to be scheduled 10 years from now, then maybe, he would be able to compete with the eighth prince."

"This Yi Yuan School really has an abundance of talented individuals. Earlier, it was Qi Feifan and now they have Ye Xiwen



as well. The heaven really prefers that sect!"

"This is nothing; tell me which forces don't have one or two geniuses like that. Even if Ye Xiwen can contend with the eighth prince, he can only contend, he cannot win at any cost."

"Indeed, after all, legendary characters like Qi Feifan appear only once in decades."

The pedestrians were whooping among themselves on the street, but Ye Xiwen didn't actually care. Their talks couldn't have the slightest effect on his state of mind, since his state of mind had already been practiced to the rock-solid state. Hence, he was usually always calm, composed and focused on his objectives.

However, Ye Xiwen wasn't actually in a hurry to meet up with Qi Feifan and the others. It had been a long time since he arrived in this world, and after so long, he once again got the chance to aimlessly wander about in a fairly developed city. The streets, markets and crowd soon reminded him of his past life, giving him a feeling that he was back on the Earth.

But, this was not the previous world. The customs here were very different and so were the people walking on the road. Basically, each and every one of them possessed power in their bodies, although not all of them were formidable. There were also some who were at the fifth or sixth stage of Houtian realm.

Now, Ye Xiwen finally understood how the royal clan was able to produce so many fearful legions which comprised solely of

Xiantian level experts. The city and its residents themselves were the source behind the legions, and with such a strong foundation, no wonder these legions were so formidable.

Along the way, he saw a variety of shops that looked magnificent. These shops had this abnormal atmosphere around them which made them seem even more grandiose, in fact they were even more magnificent than some of the mansions for aristocrats.

And everywhere, the houses were very tall, stretching all the way up to ten floors or even more. These houses had the general structure of wooden houses but weren't made up of wood. A special kind of willow tree wood was used to construct them and its strength was almost comparable to that of steel.

Ye Xiwen knew that these stores didn't deal with ordinary individuals. They only welcomed powerful warriors or rich people who held valuable things to exchange. Not just that, these stores only accepted Ling Dans as currency.

And right now, the number of Ling Dans in his possession could neither be considered more nor less. In fact, even an amount of 500 Ling Dans could not be considered much in Imperial markets.

Ye Xiwen did not delay any more. He asked a local resident about the location of Yi Yuan School's courtyard and quickly arrived there. It was a magnificent courtyard and seemed to be made up of gold and jade. It was currently the residence of the team which arrived from Yi Yuan School and also the permanent place of stay for Yi Yuan School's delegates.

"Brother Ye is here!"

"Brother Ye!"

"Brother Ye!"

As Ye Xiwen arrived, the sharp-eyed disciples recognized him immediately and greeted him respectfully.

Ye Xiwen did not stay long with them and soon found Qi Feifan.

"Brother Qi, I'm sorry for being late." Ye Xiwen cupped his hands and said.

"No big deal, you are not late for the task." Qi Feifan smiled and said, "I presume this is the first time Young Ye has visited the Imperial capital, how about you go out on a stroll?"

"No, I would prefer getting down to business matters." Ye Xiwen shook his head. He had seen far too many metropolitans in his past life, and even in this world, it was almost nothing more than a little bit different in customs and thought process.

"Good, a while ago, the royal clan briefed us about the task. Basically, the truth level experts are supposed to destroy the Bai Mojiao strongholds, which are scattered throughout the Great Yue State." Qi Feifan frowned and said, "But this time, the situation is

quite stern, that's why the royal clan has invited strong experts to go into action."

"The day after tomorrow we will split off, I hope you are prepared. As far as the eighth prince's matter is concerned, I'm afraid there are some experts from royal clan who are very dissatisfied with you." Qi Feifan said.

"If they dare to cause trouble for me, I won't hold back either and behead them all if required. But, in this crucial time, shouldn't royal clan try to restrict the needless actions of its members?" Ye Xiwen said indifferently.

After talking for a while, both Ye Xiwen and Qi Feifan got busy in preparing for the task, which was scheduled to start the day after tomorrow. Ye Xiwen went down to prepare in his private small courtyard. Just when he was about to start practicing, the voice of a disciple caught his attention: "Brother Ye, Great Yue's ninth prince has come to visit you."

Ye Xiwen frowned, confused about what the ninth prince wanted from him. Anyway because of the eighth prince's matter, several members of royal clan didn't hold goodwill for him, and now, the ninth prince suddenly appeared out of nowhere to visit him, but for what?

"Send him inside!" Ye Xiwen said and thought, since the ninth prince had come in person, shutting him out wouldn't be fair.

In a few moments, two figures appeared outside the courtyard.

One of which was a handsome youth with dignified appearance who appeared to be twenty years old and clad in a royal-looking bright-yellow dragon robe.

Behind him was an old man in black clothes who was slavishly following the young man.

Seeing Ye Xiwen, the man clad in dragon robe stepped forward, cupped his hands and said: "You must be Brother Ye. I am the Ninth Imperial Prince of Great Yue State, named Yue Lin."

Yue Lin cupped his hands to show respect to Ye Xiwen even though he came from royal background, after all, in this world, strength was the supreme law. Being a truth level expert, Ye Xiwen commanded enough respect and ninth prince showed proper etiquette by greeting him this way, especially because both of them belonged to the same generation of experts.

"Nice to meet you, ninth prince," Ye Xiwen also greeted him respectfully. Considering Ye Xiwen's values, if the other party was being polite, then there was no need to give them a cold shoulder.

"I am not aware of ninth prince's reason for this sudden visit." Ye Xiwen straightforwardly jumped to the main issue.

"It seems like Brother Ye is also a straightforward person like me. I see, then I will not beat around the bush." Yue Lin smiled and said, "Frankly speaking, I have come here hoping to form an alliance with Brother Ye."

"To form an alliance ....." Ye Xiwen was surprised all of a sudden then looked curiously at the ninth prince, smiled and said, "Your Highness seems to be mistaken about something. Why would he think about forming an alliance with me?"

"Of course, there is one reason behind this, for example, what if I say it's the eighth imperial brother." The ninth prince faintly smiled and said.

As he mentioned the eighth prince, Ye Xiwen's pupils immediately contracted. He then smiled and said: "The eighth prince, how exactly?"

Ye Xiwen actually began to think crazily, extracting points and facts from the news he had been obtaining lately. There were about a dozen princes in Great Yue State and at least four-fifths of them were already all grown up, all of them were ambitious, outstanding, and talented and considered one of the bests in their generation, capable enough to mount the throne as the emperor of Great Yue State. But it was not at all surprising since they had obtained the most elite education, but the biggest problem was that there was only one throne and only one person could mount it. And among these princes, few were exceptionally powerful and influential.

The eldest prince, the second prince, the fourth prince and the eighth prince, these four were by far considered the most powerful candidates for the throne. They were not just powerful, they also had people's support and they had also accumulated support from several peerless experts. But, the most recent eye-catching prince among them was the eighth prince, because looking at the rate his

strength was enhancing lately, he would most likely step into the legendary realm and might become the legendary emperor, and that too after the gap of several generations.

Although during the imperial power struggle, personal strength was not the most important thing, but it was still a considerably important factor in deciding the victor.

And, Ye Xiwen was most concerned about this because with respect to these four strongest princes, the ninth prince was definitely not one of the most dazzling princes left in the competition. In fact, a lot of people didn't even know that he existed.

It could be said that he was relatively low-key, but there was a possibility that this was because Ye Xiwen was not too concerned about the royal clan and its affairs. But, the news about several other princes usually reached Yi Yuan School as rumors; after all, Great Yue State was under the rule of royal clan. Although they lived in peace for thousands of years, who could possibly predict the next emperor's character? What if a madman was to ascend the throne and decided to go to war with them? Not to forget, it was possible for any of the princes to ascend the throne, so Yi Yuan School used to obtain specific information about royal clan's affairs. In fact, they had stationed a special person in charge of studying these princes and whenever they pointed out a prince who was relatively on unfriendly terms with Yi Yuan School, they would either get rid of him or at least make them lose the throne.

Also, this was not just the case for Yi Yuan School. Even other major sects also followed the same line of politics. But, even on the

research files of Yi Yuan School, the name of the ninth prince was nowhere to be seen, which proved how low-key he really was. However, today, it seemed like something was different about him!

"Brother Ye, do you really want me to state it?" The ninth prince said with a smile, "The news about your duel with the eighth imperial brother had already spread throughout the Great Yue State."



## Chapter 209: Alliance

---

“So what?” Ye Xiwen said.

“I know that your sect’s head has announced that he will protect you, but considering my eighth imperial brother’s character, he will not give up so easily.” The ninth prince further said, “Actually, we have a common enemy.”

“Enemy .....” The word just slipped out of his mouth, as he continued to ponder. It seemed like in the research files of Yi Yuan School, at least the information about the ninth prince was certainly missing.

Yi Yuan School certainly had an unpleasant impression of the eighth prince and the reason was very simple, the eighth prince was very ambitious. He basically wanted to control all of the four major sects on his fingertips.

“Even so, it doesn’t seem like we have anything to cooperate on, or do you think you can stop your eighth imperial brother?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“It should be said that it’s about mutual help and mutual cooperation. I know that you are a pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School and sooner or later, you are going to have a thriving future, and that is the basis of our cooperation.” The ninth prince lightly said, apparently he was a very proud fellow and usually didn’t prefer paying much attention to ordinary people.

“You help me ascend the throne, and after I mount the throne, I will use my royal power to help you mount the position of Yi Yuan School’s head.” The ninth prince indifferently said, but the way he said it was quite direct and straightforward.

“I am different from my eighth imperial brother, I am not as ambitious as him and neither do I dream of putting the complete control of Great Yue State into the hands of royal clan.” The ninth prince said; it was not as if he was resentful against the eighth prince. It was just difficult for him to accept the eighth prince’s ambition of dominating the four major sects.

“Even if the eighth prince is out of question, I can still choose from a lot of other princes.” Ye Xiwen said, after all, he knew that there were about a dozen princes in the empire, not to forget the eldest prince, the second prince and the fourth prince.

“Now, the eldest imperial brother, the second imperial brother and the fourth imperial brother have formed an alliance with Chu Jingcai, a pro-disciple of your Yi Yuan School.” The ninth prince said. “And, as far as the remaining imperial brothers are concerned, I assure you that none of them is stronger than me.”

“I should be, by far, the most suitable partner for Brother Ye.” The ninth prince confidently said, “It’s the right choice for the both of us.”

Both of them held equivalent levels of potential, Ye Xiwen had recently emerged and was being compared to a legend like Qi Feifan, but he still had a very long way to go to become his rival. And, the ninth prince also had tremendous potential but he was

still in his dormant period, however, he was still an ambitious dragon.

“Ye Xiwen, this ninth prince is not an ordinary guy.” Ye Mo said, “He is not much older than you, but his cultivation has already reached the fourth stage of truth realm, and I can see that he holds strong talent. I’m afraid I don’t see much difference in his potential and that of the so-called eighth prince.”

After listening to the words of Ye Mo, Ye Xiwen considered for a moment. This ninth prince so confidently came to him and that too not without reason, although it was certainly a complementary cooperation of the two.

But, Ye Xiwen didn’t have any interest in the sect head’s position, still he would certainly have some powerful connections, so in the end, it was a good choice.

“Such being the case, I would respectfully do what you say, but always remember, [deference is no substitute for obedience](#).” Ye Xiwen spilled out a strange smile and said.

gōng jìng bù rú cōng mìng: deference is no substitute for obedience; to follow somebody’s precepts is the sincerest form of respect

Suddenly, there was a look of pleasant surprise on the face of the ninth prince. The kind of shocked expression he had on his face right now was actually a rare sight.

Finally, a big rock fell off the heart of the ninth prince, in fact,

today he came to meet Ye Xiwen but didn't have any grasp over the situation, in addition to that, Ye Xiwen might have opted to help other princes since he was relatively low-key when compared to his other imperial brothers. Not to forget, Ye Xiwen recently became the pro-disciple and was known as the next Qi Feifan of Yi Yuan School, so there was no need for him to be in a hurry to make a decision. In comparison, Ye Xiwen was a greater figure than him, considering both status and popularity. That's why when Ye Xiwen nodded, he could not help but feel a big stone falling off his heart.

“So long as Brother Ye agrees, it's all good. Today, I will go back to the castle and make a request to father emperor, so that Brother Ye gets transferred to my legion.” The ninth prince suddenly said in a lofty manner, “This will be my first time commanding troops in battle and I can only finish the battle in one fell swoop in a majestic manner, then only it will raise my position in the eyes of father emperor. You see, in this battle, we can only win, we don't have the luxury of losing, so Brother Ye must also win in a grand way!”

Ye Xiwen nodded, it seemed like the ninth prince didn't intend to continue to stay dormant, but again, if he actually planned to stay dormant for some more time, then at the time of choosing the emperor for the throne, he would have no chance against the four strongest princes.

Now these princes needed opportunities to show their valiance and courage. They must succeed in a short time, just the way the eighth prince did it. And they only had one way left to do that; they must courageously march forward, destroying all the obstacles and enemies in their way, constantly winning and rising

towards the final goal.

Ye Xiwen nodded, since he had already made the decision to help the ninth prince, he would certainly help to the very end.

“Where is your legion going the day after tomorrow?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“To the Heishui’s lair in the East China Sea, that Heishui is really very audacious; he dared to join hands with the devil. When we reach there, we have been tasked to slaughter all of the deepwater black snakes. None of those beasts shall be left alive.” The ninth prince said with an irrepressible excitement, which was quite understandable since he was going to be the leader of his own legion for the first time. And if he did not succeed, then, this might end up being the last time.

The power struggle for throne was a very nasty game, in fact, many princes did not get a chance to show their strength, those who managed to show their potential would get only one chance to prove themselves, otherwise they would get eliminated.

“But, Heishui’s lair is the residing place of half-step legendary level demon beast. At my current level, I cannot deal with him.” Ye Xiwen said since the deepwater black serpent king had left a very deep impression on him last time.

“Rest assured, naturally the royal clan will take care of that beast.” The ninth prince said as he really valued Ye Xiwen’s life, considering he knew that Ye Xiwen was not yet a grown up and

had limitless future.

“That’s no problem!” Ye Xiwen nodded.

## Chapter 210: Destruction Of Heishui's Lair

---

The royal clan moved very quickly, there wasn't the so-called hauling or procrastination, the entire huge state apparatus began to move, and in the face of such a thing, it seemed as if it was advancing to subvert the rule of this country. The mobilization speed of Yue Imperial clan went far beyond the imagination of Ye Xiwen. At this time, this was a display of the true strength of this legendary bureaucracy which was driving hundreds of thousands into actions at the same time.

Early in the morning, one after another, several teams finally began to reveal their fangs. They were advancing towards the respective city gates of the Imperial city in order to march out of it. Hundreds of thousands of experts were marching together which suddenly shocked the whole city, however, the citizens were not at all afraid. Due to the abrupt surfacing of Bai Mojiao, there had been turmoil for several months and everyone was aware of that. Although Bai Mojiao had not dared to be dissolute in the Imperial capital, they truly did some serious damage to the Great Yue State.

Ye Xiwen was flying at a very high altitude in the sky and watching how the combative armies were marching out of the Imperial gates. He was now fully aware of the fact that Great Yue State contained astonishing strength, which was finally unveiled in front of his eyes.

The fearful power of several legions was finally unleashed and fully emerged. The murderous aura swept throughout the sky and the clouds seemed to have been minced. One simply didn't stand a chance when facing such an army, unless he was a legendary level expert.

Soon, Ye Xiwen's wait for his own team was over when he saw the special regiment of Imperial armed forces marching forward with the Great Tiger's flag fluttering on the forefront. The imperial soldiers were mostly the experts of Xiantian realm, and the higher rank commanders were experts of Xiantian sixth stage or above.

The particularity of Great Yue's royal clan was that they didn't have too many top players unlike other major sects, but they housed far too many experts of Xiantian realm, and the sheer number far surpassed any of the major sects.

Yesterday, the ninth prince was clad in a royal dragon robe, but today, he was wearing a military uniform, which was giving him a heroic aura. As usual, the old man in black clothes was following him and sticking close behind him. The old man's cultivation was only [faintly discernible](#) and his skill seemed very profound.

ruò yǐn ruò xiàn: faintly discernible

A huge fleet of battleships appeared on the ground, stationed about 10 Li outside the Imperial city wall. The imperial soldiers marched towards these battleships and boarded them.

Dozens of warships soon took off together. These battleships were actually divine tools, their might was simply infinite and were completely different from the warships used by the Great Yue State during national campaigns and ordinary expeditions.

Ye Xiwen also flew down and landed on a warship which was



being led by the high-spirited ninth prince.

“Brother Ye, this is the beginning of our great cause!” The ninth prince said in a somewhat complacent manner.

Ye Xiwen did not speak; however, a faint smile appeared on his face.

One after another, battleships turned into dazzling streamers of light and flew far towards the horizon. In just half a day’s time, these battleships reached the East China Sea and descended on the seawater. However, even in the sea, these battleships were scary fast and charging around violently. There literally was nothing to stop these ships, and, the demon beasts that mistakenly came in their path were crushed miserably and simply turned into small bits of flesh and blood splatter.

Soon, they arrived in the waters around Heishui’s lair.

“Begin extermination and clean up each and every living thing in this and the nearby areas. I want it completely cleaned up, don’t forget to wipe out all the demon beasts here, not even a shrimp must be left alive. I want this place to turn into Heishui’s graveyard!” The ninth prince roared while he was brimming with killing intention.

“As you command my lord!”

The might of thousands of imperial soldiers manifested rapidly.

The demon beasts of Heishui's lair couldn't possibly be a match of an organized and trained army, not to forget the imperial army consisted of Xiantian level soldiers and several truth level commanders.

Suddenly, the whole sea turned bloody and chaotic. One could hear the pitiful roars and screams of demon beasts, transmitting straight from the sea.

After having swept clean the demon beasts on the sea level, the imperial corps proceeded to gradually dive into the sea. The soldiers were equipped with proper under-water equipment to enable breathing inside the sea, so that slaughtering demon beasts in the depths of the sea would be no problem at all.

Ye Xiwen sighed with emotion and thought that the royal clan was filthy rich and to the extent that the other sects simply didn't stand a chance in front of its wealth.

"Who dares to massacre my subjects!", A loud roar rang out from the depths of seabed and about 10,000 feet long deepwater black snake king instantly jumped out of the seabed with its mouth open, which suddenly sucked in dozens of imperial soldiers who were swallowed whole in one breath and were eaten raw.

At this moment, the deepwater black snake king's great roar terribly shook everyone's eardrums. This one roar was equivalent to the sound produced by a 1000 big drums.

One swing from his huge and powerful tail shook the entire sea,

but Ye Xiwen clearly saw a massive wound on his tail which once again cracked open, along with splashes of blood spreading in the seawater, when he swung his tail.

Apparently, this was an injury that he received during the previous fight and it still hadn't healed.

“Heishui, how dare you collaborate with those devils, today, in the name of Imperial decree, I must exterminate you and all these evildoers.” The ninth prince stepped forward and shouted to clear the way, “Today, this Heishui's Lair will be destroyed, and, it will be completely removed from the East China Sea!”

“Kill!” The soldiers of Imperial guard armed forces roared and the murderous aura of the deadliest of soldiers immediately upset the sea water. It was really an incomparably fearful sight.

At this time, there was a hint of regret on the face of deepwater black snake king. He had been thoroughly misled by Lu Hongwei so the regret was much self-explanatory in this situation.

“Evildoer, today is the day you die!” At this time, the old man in black clothes instantly flew up and a terrifying aura spread out in all directions. Despite having a skinny body, his presence was just like that of a mountain. The qi exploded out of his body and spread out in the surrounding radius of several thousand miles.

Half-step legendary master!

Ye Xiwen gawked for a moment because he never expected that the skinny old man, who always followed around the ninth prince and never left his side, would turn out to be a half-step legendary expert. He finally understood the hidden meaning behind the ninth prince's words when he said that the royal clan would deal with the beast, so the ninth prince was secretly talking about the black-clothed old man.

By quietly roping in a half-step legendary expert into his faction, it could be seen that the ninth prince was really aiming for the throne. He had secretly done no small preparation for this.

“Who are you?” The deepwater black snake roared fiercely when he saw a half-step legendary expert standing in his way. If he was not injured then dealing with a half-step legendary expert would have been no trouble for him, but right now, he was in a dire situation and he could sense that he was facing a terrifying expert.

“I am the one who is going to end your life.” The black-clothed old man said indifferently.

“You should know that the devil invasion is close, do you want to go against the heaven's will?” The deepwater black snake exclaimed.

“A lowly beast like you dares to teach me!?” The black-clothed old man disdainfully said.

The old man's palm gradually turned blood-red and the surrounding water instantly evaporated.

Ye Xiwen could not help but gasp, this technique was extremely frightening. This old man was clearly much stronger than an expert of half-step legendary level.

“Die!” The old man moved up instantly and it appeared like his physique suddenly turned into a water sword and rushed straight towards the deepwater black snake king. A gigantic hand congealed out of nowhere and grabbed the beast into its grasp. And right then, it appeared as if an endless scarlet hell evolved instantaneously and crashed right into the body of the deepwater black snake king.

“Great blood handprint!”

“Soaring Dragon!” ,the deepwater black snake king roared and its giant body instantly churned up the endless seawater, sweeping off a section of seawater which eventually took the form of a water-dragon and rushed towards the incoming ‘great blood handprint’ attack.

The roars of a dragon were constantly reverberating across the seabed.

“Boom!”

The two sides did not stay idle and immediately started a decisive battle of life and death.

With each collision between their blows, it seemed as if the world would collapse any second. Even the warships couldn't stand firm in the face of those terrifying shock waves.

The entire sea was being destroyed!

“Bang!” the blood splashed into the seawater, the flesh and blood flew in all directions. A large but fresh wound could be seen on the body of the deepwater black snake king.

The deepwater black snake king suddenly screamed pitifully, while at the same time, he spat out a water sword from his mouth which turned into an ice-cold treasured sword and instantly rushed straight towards the old man.

It was quite surprising to see that the old man stimulated Zhen Qi inside his body, which burst out of his body and congealed into a bloody big hand. This scarlet big hand instantly caught the water sword and crushed it, and right after that, the big hand rushed towards the deepwater black snake king.

Everyone was shocked while watching this scene. They were quietly watching this battle as everyone knew that this end result of this battle was ultimately going to decide the life and death of the two sides. Their own fights were basically insignificant in this situation.

“Boom!”

There came a terrifying burst of sound and the old man's big bloody hand directly pierced through the tail of the deepwater black snake king and ripped it off the very next instant.

Ye Xiwen was quite surprised because this black-clothed old man was way too powerful than an average half-step legendary expert. Just like in the case of Qi Feifan, other half-step legendary experts weren't the match for this old man as well.

If the deepwater black snake king was not seriously injured, he wouldn't be in such a miserable state.

The deepwater black snake king was screaming again and again and trying to get away, but a bloody big hand was constantly in his pursuit.

"Boom!" accompanied by a terrifying sound of an explosion, that bloody big hand grabbed the deepwater black snake king. Since the old man already knew that the deepwater black snake king was injured, he couldn't possibly let go of this chance of slaughtering this formidable beast.

"I don't want to die!" The deepwater black snake roared, but its skull was directly grasped in the big bloody hand and instantly crushed, splashing the brain fluid and blood into the seawater.

# Chapter 211: The Eighth Prince Arrives

---

Two months flew by, and for the Great Yue State, the war was getting more and more intense during the past two months. The royal clan had sent out its forces to lay siege on the main Bai Mojiao strongholds.

The scope of war was getting bigger and bigger, Ye Xiwen was also following the conquests of the imperial forces. They performed distinguished service and achieved illustrious military exploits. The reputation of the initially low-key ninth prince also rose up dramatically, now everyone knew about his exploits and achievements. The people had come to realize that perhaps, the ninth prince was yet another suitable candidate for the throne of Great Yue State.

However for Ye Xiwen, it seemed as if all of these achievements didn't have any relations with him. He only spent one month with the ninth prince's legion then rushed back to Yi Yuan School and began closed-door training.

Now, it's been a month since Ye Xiwen began the closed-door training, but it was nothing in the eyes of most people, after all, martial cultivation was something that continued for hundreds of years.

However, the real problem was that a few days ago, the eighth prince finally came back from an ancient ruin and must have brought back some extremely valuable treasures from that place.



The strongest expert of the younger generation, the supreme presence was finally back as a legend.

But, mostly everyone in Yi Yuan School was aware of the case, they knew that the duel between Ye Xiwen and the eighth prince would most likely happen soon. Although the sect head had personally announced that he did not give the permit to this duel, the eighth prince was not the type of man who would honestly obey the instructions.

Everyone was kind of unsure in their hearts.

But regardless of what everyone was thinking, the eighth prince finally arrived for Ye Xiwen!

A figure suddenly appeared flying from the void, and at the place where he descended, the air itself ruptured and pulled open the vacuum. It could be seen that a mighty existence had arrived at the main gate of Yi Yuan School.

"Ye Xiwen, come out to die!" A young man, clad in a magnificent dragon robe and carrying a cold look on his face, suddenly roared.

He had such a dominating presence that it swept off waves of Lingqi in the air that went rolling across the gate. The entire surrounding area was in a state of shock and chaos!

One could clearly see that the eighth prince was courageous enough to clamor like this in front of Yi Yuan School's gate.

The eighth prince was soaring in the sky; the long-spear in his hand was producing a buzzing noise, while there was a strange blood-red aura surrounding it. This blood-red aura was actually filled with the essence and blood of the enemies that had been killed by this spear. This spear was such a kind of tool which could grow stronger as it continued to absorb the blood from the enemies.

This caused a sensation throughout Yi Yuan School. So many years had passed since the last time someone dared to be so arrogant to pull off such a stunt.

A huge crowd of Yi Yuan School's disciples arrived at the gate, but they were watching from afar. They simply didn't dare approach because they could clearly sense a kind of cold and strange murderous aura. Even the true disciples didn't dare to go too close. They only surrounded the eighth prince while maintaining some distance.

At this time, the disciples were worried for Ye Xiwen. To be fair, they were well aware of the fact that Ye Xiwen was very formidable. A few months ago, they had come to know about the profoundness of his skill and cultivation when they heard his fierce roar. No wonder he was made the fifth pro-disciple at such a young age.

But, the great strength of the eighth prince was not hidden from anyone. He dared to be so unruly in front of the main gate, the kind of courage he had was not something an ordinary expert could display so casually. The dreadful imposing aura swept across

while he was at the center of the formation of a huge field which was solely made up of Zhen Yuan. If anyone went in, they would be in his absolute control.

"Eighth prince, you are really presumptuous if you think you can be so rampant in front of my Yi Yuan School's gate!" A figure arrived floating from a peak, it was a true disciple.

He was a genius of Yi Yuan School, although not as talented as Qi Feifan and the other strongest true disciples, but he was also prestigious, very young, only about hundred years old and had already stepped into the sixth stage of truth realm. He was one of the genius peerless experts with limitless future prospects. In fact, the sect had put great efforts in nurturing a genius like him.

"You are courting death. Do you actually think you alone can stop me?" The eighth prince said with a disdainful smile on his face, "More than 100 years of practice, but you are nothing but a waste."

"You are bringing about your own destruction!" That disciple's face suddenly flushed with anger. Even though he knew that in the future, he would probably not be an opponent of the eighth prince, but as an especially nurtured genius disciple of the sect, his pride would not allow him to retreat.

The true disciple instantly shot and eternal light descended from the sky and swept towards the eighth prince.

"I'll fulfill your wish of dying!" The eighth prince shot as well and instantly swept off as if a mountain of Zhen Yuan which went

whistling towards the incoming attack.

The eighth prince's attack immediately swept away as many things as possibly in the surrounding area.

"Boom!"

As the two attacks collided severely, it seemed as if the heaven and the earth were collapsing, setting off overwhelming air explosions everywhere.

However, in just a flash of contact, the eighth prince's attack routed that true disciple's attack and instantly rushed towards that genius true disciple, while sweeping away all of the things on the way along with it.

All of a sudden, he was completely cornered and had no way out.

"Poof!" the genius disciple suddenly spurted out a mouthful of blood and was sent flying upside down. He got blasted away horizontally and his body was almost torn to pieces.

As he fell down and fainted, the other true disciples immediately took him to the depths of Yi Yuan School to find an elder to treat him.

Everyone held their breath when they saw how the eighth prince used just one shot to seriously wound that true disciple. This eighth prince truly possessed earth shattering might and even the

experts at the same cultivation level weren't his opponents.

At this time, the disciple realized that this outcome was definitely the result of the eighth prince's recent adventure trip to an ancient ruin!

No one knew what kind of heritage and treasures he obtained there, which turned him into such a fearful expert. Probably, he was now almost ten or maybe hundred times more powerful than before.

"Pay attention, you ignorant disciples of Yi Yuan School!" The eighth prince said contemptuously, "Sooner or later, I will bring you all under my royal reign."

At this time, one could see the anger burning on the faces of Yi Yuan School's disciples, after all, the eighth prince was actually looking down on them.

However, after witnessing the scene where the blue sky was dyed red with that true disciple's blood, no one dared to step forward.

"Arrogant fool, don't you know you are standing right now!" Suddenly, a voice burst out of the depths of Yi Yuan School, and just then, the void was directly torn apart and a big hand instantly grasped towards the eighth prince. This was the power of the world law and it firmly fixed him on the ground.

"Old fool, we old guys shouldn't intervene into the matter of

young people!" Abruptly, a hoarse voice transmitted from behind the eighth prince.

And, in a flash, a big hand stretched out and severely clashed into the other big hand.

"Boom!" a loud and terrifying explosion occurred and completely distorted the space.

Now, everyone came to know that there was tyrannical expert behind the eighth prince, standing in his support. It should be a peerless master who backed the eighth prince, no wonder he dared to come alone to Yi Yuan School. But, since he had a peerless master with him, he would be more useful than a mighty force.

"Humph, our head has already said that this duel is not allowed, do you not know?" The voice coming from the depths of Yi Yuan School asked.

"You should understand, this is the matter of young people, we must not meddle. In our young times, didn't we go on expeditions like this? Just remember, the winner takes all." The hoarse voice immediately replied.

"You old fox, don't you try to tamper with the concept, you know what our head means. Ye Xiwen has not yet fully grown up, and know that if this duel is to take place 10 years from now then we won't be having this argument right now. What if we send QI Feifan to fight with your eighth prince, will that make you happy?" The voice coming from Yi Yuan School said disdainfully.

The voice remained silent this time.

However, the eighth prince suddenly spoke.

"The period of ten years is too long; I make good use of my time. I will surely manage to increase my cultivation at the same rate he does for the next ten years, so even after ten years, he will be easily slaughtered by me, so why do you stop me now?" The eighth prince sneered and said, "I'm invincible and no matter how powerful my enemy is, I will kill them all!"

One could see an absolute self-confidence hidden in his strong words which were definitely the result of going on expeditions for so many years.

"Ye Xiwen, I am ready to pull down my cultivation to match with yours. Now, I dare you to take up my challenge!" The eighth prince shouted and the mighty sound waves instantly swept off towards Yi Yuan School, "Can it be that you are too scared to come out, are you afraid of death?"

Several disciples were holding their anger, although the eighth prince willingly pulled down his cultivation level, he was still at a higher level and must have grasped several deeper world laws and principles, giving him a big advantage over Ye Xiwen.

"Why not, since you are really dying to die, I'll gladly buy you a ticket to hell!" An ice-cold voice arrived from the depths of Yi Yuan School and the blue silhouette of a person rushed flying from a

peak.

At this time, a youth, clad in blue clothes, flew towards the eighth prince. He released a dreadful imposing aura which was surging high into the sky; his eyes were as deep as the stars as he was coldly staring at the eighth prince.

Ye Xiwen arrived way too fast and a dense-bluish aura swept out of his body. There was an incomparably horrifying aura creeping around his body, giving him the presence of the reincarnation of an ancient emperor.

They didn't collide but their terrifying auras severely collided and set off shock waves in all directions.

"So you finally came to meet your death." The eighth prince said in a cold voice.



## Chapter 212: Same Level Showdown

---

"So you finally came to meet your death." The eighth prince said in a cold voice.

"Just because your practice time is ten years ahead of mine, don't get ahead of yourself." Ye Xiwen contemptuously sneered, "I'll crush you like an ant under my feet if we fight at the same level!"

"You're just trying to provoke me, but I will kill you, no one can save you now!" The eighth prince said in a cold voice then took a step forward and took a commanding gesture while intently watching Ye Xiwen.

The eighth prince's eyes were shining just like the ice-cold iron while a large mass of Zhen Yuan was roaring on his body. There was an invincible confidence on his face and it could be seen that he was not at all conceited about his strength. The terrifying strength he was displaying right now was the reason behind his unmatched self-confidence.

"Chop down this bastard prince into pieces, does he actually think of himself as the emperor of Great Yue State? He is nothing but an arrogant prince!"

"Yes, there are over a dozen princes in the empire, the whole avenue is filled with princes, might as well consider them as dogs, don't hold back and completely chop him off!"

The disciples of Yi Yuan School suddenly started to clamor. If the

eighth prince was fighting at his full strength, then in their eyes, Ye Xiwen wouldn't have a shred of chance of winning, but now the situation was different.

Ye Xiwen was able to kill Feng Kong, who was at a higher level. So, how could he possibly lose in a same level battle?

"You are done for, because even on the same level, I am invincible!" The eighth prince coldly snorted and said.

"We won't be sure about that before the battle starts." Ye Xiwen said in a cold voice. If the eighth prince was on a higher level, it would be difficult to defeat him, but if he were to lose in a same level battle then he might as well just commit suicide.

The killing intention was surging and causing air explosions everywhere, producing violent explosion sounds. Both of their killing intentions were colliding fiercely and neither of them seemed to yield.

Ye Xiwen's imposing aura completely released out, just like dreadful sea waves and swept across the surrounding area.

The terrifying aura of truth fourth stage instantly released out, as he stared coldly at the eighth prince. It seemed like both of them were prepared to begin the same level battle any second.

After practicing for a month, Ye Xiwen finally broke from the peak of truth third stage to the peak of truth fourth stage in one

fell swoop, but his battle efficiency didn't fully achieve a breakthrough to the truth sixth stage. Although he expected his battle efficiency to reach the truth sixth stage, it still remained in the Small Truth realm.

There was a huge difference between the battle efficiencies offered by truth fifth stage and truth sixth stage. In fact, even if Ye Xiwen was able to break into the truth fourth stage, his battle efficiency could only touch the early traces of truth sixth stage.

However, Ye Xiwen was confident that if he could break through to the truth fifth stage, his battle efficiency would directly step into the peak of truth sixth stage, and then, he would also be able to contend with the experts of truth seventh stage.

This time, this major enhancement in Ye Xiwen's cultivation was mainly due to the deepwater black snake king's neidan. After he was beheaded by the black-clothed old man, Ye Xiwen had discussed with the ninth prince about handing over the neidan to him. The ninth prince also very readily agreed to Ye Xiwen's request, because he knew that this neidan would help towards crazy enhancement in Ye Xiwen's strength. And, as he had already said that they had a common enemy, he didn't hesitate in handing it over to Ye Xiwen.

Also, by relying on this half-step legendary realm neidan, Ye Xiwen's cultivation skyrocketed all the way from the peak of truth third stage to the peak of truth fourth stage, and so far, he had only consumed 1/3rd of the entire neidan.

If the eighth prince hadn't arrived all of a sudden, then he would

have continued to consume the remaining neidan, and would have reached all the way to the Small Truth realm. By that time, he could have sufficient battle strength to deal with the eighth prince at full strength.

Now, the eighth prince was at the peak of truth sixth stage and he had reaped big benefits from his adventure trip to ancient ruins. However, he didn't have time to consume the looted exploits from the ruins. As soon as he obtained the news about Feng Kong's death at the hands of Ye Xiwen, he was very furious and rushed back. No one dared to lay their hands on his imperial guards, but this Ye Xiwen actually slaughtered the commander of imperial guards, how could he possibly tolerate such a thing?

"Ha ha ha ha!" The eighth prince laughed while a domineering aura was overflowing throughout his body and his cold eyes were glaring at Ye Xiwen, as if he was looking at a dead man. It seemed like no one else existed in his world but himself.

The eighth prince was exuding a transcendental aura as if he had been baptized in the ancient ruins. After returning from that place, he had become much more extraordinary than before.

"Well, since it's the same level battle, it should be fair." The voice transmitted from the depths of Yi Yuan School and the big hand extended towards the eighth prince's body and placed a seal on his cultivation, limiting it to the Small truth realm, thereby making his cultivation level same as that of Ye Xiwen.

Even now, the eighth prince still held a considerable advantage, after all, Ye Xiwen could only compete with experts of Small truth

realm or below, but only when his opponents were ordinary experts, and the eighth prince couldn't be taken lightly, considering his ten years of extra experience and unbeatable battle record. Not to forget, he was the undefeated genius of the younger generation, so his battle prowess was going to be tyrannical, even with the seal on!

Whatever be the case, there was self-confidence brimming on his face even after the seal was applied on his cultivation by the big hand. He was certain that he would kill Ye Xiwen today, not to mention, it could be said that even after applying a seal on his power, he was still at a higher level than Ye Xiwen when considering Ye Xiwen's actual cultivation level.

If he was still unable to kill Ye Xiwen, then he might as just commit suicide.

"Prepared to die? Here I come!" The eighth prince roared and his roar broke through the limits of rivers and mountains. He rushed straight towards Ye Xiwen, while bringing shock waves of air along with him. It seemed as if a massive mountain was falling towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen also roared at the same time and instantly released a tremendous amount of Zhen Yuan from his body, and immediately, a long blade appeared in his hand as he furiously chopped out a large arc of Bladelight towards the eighth prince.

"Boom!" The spear in the eighth prince's hand severely collided with Ye Xiwen's long blade and induced a terrifying blast in the surrounding region. This blast was so intense that it twisted the

space itself and sent both of them flying back.

The battle efficiency of both sides was incomparably horrifying since, Ye Xiwen could display the battle strength of Small truth realm, and despite being sealed to Small truth realm, the eighth prince could still display the battle strength of higher levels, thanks to his huge battle experience. This round could be considered as a draw, pertaining to the same level of skills the two of them showed just now.

When the eighth prince had heard the news about Feng Kong's death, he got so angry that it seemed as if his anger would burn the sky. He couldn't wait to consume the exploits from his latest adventure and directly rushed to kill Ye Xiwen. If he had gotten a chance to assimilate the treasures, he would be much more tyrannical than now.

Ye Xiwen was slightly surprised for a moment. How could the enemy be so terrifying even after suppressing his level to the Small Truth realm? No wonder he was so confident that he came straight to Yi Yuan School from the ruins, solely to kill Ye Xiwen.

If the eighth prince hadn't suppressed his cultivation level, then while facing him at his real strength, perhaps, Ye Xiwen really wouldn't stand a chance!

But, Ye Xiwen did not lose confidence even though the enemy was so formidable. So what if the enemy was tyrannical? As everyone said, if Ye Xiwen was given the option to practice for ten years, he would be able to take on the eighth prince. However, what they didn't know was that he actually wouldn't require ten

years to surpass the eighth prince.

"I can see that you have got some means to fight back, but you and I are sworn enemies from the moment you opposed me, and without a doubt, you are doomed to die!" The eighth prince slowly expressed his hatred.

Ye Xiwen was somewhat speechless. When did he actually choose to oppose this eighth prince?

In reality, he had been forced into all of this mess. However afterwards, he certainly did things to provoke the eighth prince!

His overbearing style could be easily inferred, in fact, it could be easily [traced backed to the same origin](#) as that of Feng Kong and the other imperial guards.

traceable to the same stock; of a common origin

However, it was obvious that he was completely mistaken about the concepts of power and prestige!

One could literally see stars exploding in Ye Xiwen's ice-cold eyes, as if the universe was taking birth in the depths of his eyes.

"You talk too much nonsense!" Ye Xiwen shouted loudly and the long blade danced in his hand. A long arc of Bladelight crawled through the sky and fell towards the eighth prince. This blade attack was so tyrannical and terrifying, it seemed as if the sky was breaking apart into several pieces.

The eighth prince's spear pierced through the sky and layer after layer of energy waves swept across in all directions, while the tyrannical spear attack advanced towards Ye Xiwen's blade attack.

The spectators could clearly hear the roaring sounds of two mighty forces, but Ye Xiwen, in particular, appeared exceptionally overbearing and tyrannical. It seemed as if he commanded a mighty force, in fact, even his imposing aura resembled that of an overlord of the battlefield.

Ye Xiwen's killing intention and imposing aura were so overwhelming that they were directly affecting the people's consciousness.

In a flash, the blade attack fiercely collided with spear attack and resulted in an astounding explosion.

"Boom!"

A giant mushroom ascended towards the sky. The two tyrannical attacks mutually obliterated each other and gave birth to this giant mushroom cloud which continued to get bigger and bigger and swept across, engulfing everything on the way.

The disciples suddenly looked frightened, was this really a duel between two experts at Small truth realm?

Some of the disciples were caught in the aftermath of that



terrifying explosion and were seriously injured!

If they were not being protected by the barrier enchantment, set up and maintained by an elder of Yi Yuan School, which blocked most of the complementary shock waves from the blast, they wouldn't have survived at all.

But even so, some of the disciples got injured because several cracks appeared on the barrier enchantment. Due to that, the elder who was charged with maintaining the barrier enchantment had to increase its toughness in order to resist the upcoming tyrannical collisions like this.

"Boom!"

They collided again since there wasn't the slightest pause in this duel. Both sides continued to attack again and again. An incomparably scary light erupted in the horizon and completely obscured the entire sky.

## Chapter 213: Four Sacred Beasts

---

Not even a minute had passed since the duel began, but the two experts already exchanged more than ten moves, with each being extremely terrifying and earth shattering. Their speeds were rising slowly and gradually, and in a while, to the eyes of spectators, it seemed as if both of them turned into colorful streamers of light and were rapidly colliding back and forth. In fact, the Xiantian level disciples could merely see the fierce collisions between a blue light and a yellow light.

And even for the truth level experts, it was getting difficult to clearly observe this duel since they couldn't follow the movements of the two contenders. All they could see was a duel between two afterimages.

"It's really horrible that these two peerless heroes of this generation had to bump into each other, so early."

"Right, although the eighth prince is arrogant, we must admit that his strength simply goes against the heaven's will. He is definitely not some ordinary braggart."

"Even in a low-level battle with Ye Xiwen, he is able to display such battle efficiency. I must say that both his talent and strength defy the heaven's will. Although we must also consider that Ye Xiwen's cultivation level is too far behind that of the eighth prince, but he still managed to fight back on equal terms. Not to forget, even after putting the seal on the eighth prince's cultivation, the resulting level was 'Small Truth', and Ye Xiwen's actual cultivation is less than that, but Ye Xiwen still didn't fall under the wind. It is

too shocking, I am afraid we will have to agree that Ye Xiwen really is a legend, the next rising Qi Feifan of Yi Yuan School."

The disciples of Yi Yuan School were discussing among themselves, and this time, they weren't discussing the arrogance and overbearing attitude of the eighth prince. After all, they witnessed his terrifying strength in this stunning duel, which captured all their attention.

However, while they were discussing, the duel became more and more intense and an astonishing collision occurred between the two.

"There's no point to this duel, all your resistance is futile since you are just a stepping stone and destined to become a pile of bones on the road to my success and glory!" The eighth prince expressed his overbearing self-confidence in a loud voice.

As soon his voice faded, four huge golden seals appeared out of nowhere and started spinning around him.

At the same time, layer after layer of Zhen Yuan started surging up in the eighth prince's body. And as his Zhen Yuan was constantly bursting out of his body, these four huge golden seals instantly began to change shape.

And in just a blink of an eye, huge beastly shadows appeared in the battlefield.

Azure Dragon, Phoenix, White Tiger, Black Tortoise, these four god beasts instantly appeared in front of the eighth prince. Each of these beasts was huge, almost 100 feet tall and looked magnificent while positioned in complete defense formation in front of him as if pushing chock full. It seemed like in their presence, it would simply be impossible to approach the eighth prince.

The four beast spirits, which transformed from the four huge golden seals, turned their heads towards the sky and began to roar fiercely. It seemed like their roars were shaking the entire world, as if the four sacred beasts had really descended from the heaven into this world.

The eighth prince jumped onto the Azure Dragon's head and looked at Ye Xiwen like an ancient god of war. He appeared indifferent, heartless and incomparably formidable. And while standing on that Azure Dragon's head, he seemed like the commander of the heaven's dragon community.

The disciples of Yi Yuan School were suddenly panic-stricken. In fact, even the true disciples had their complexions fade instantly when the eighth prince's terrifying coercion suddenly swept off.

Suddenly, in the depths of Yi Yuan School, several tyrannical experts started talking to each other through [soul search technique](#).

Truth level experts can use soul search to sense each other's presence/like a mobile to talk to each other/for mind control and probing the minds; like Luo Yifan had tried on Ye Xiwen to destroy his mind but Ye Xiwen was saved by 'Special space'

"Could it be that the eighth prince has obtained the heritage of the ancient 'Four Sacred Beast' sect of the southeast region?"

"Four Sacred Beasts sect, are you talking about that mighty ancient sect that was rumored to have run amuck in the ancient martial world, long back in the past? The Four Sacred Beasts sect was able to accumulate over 1 million disciples and had outclassed all other rival sects in the southeast region, but later during the Devil invasion, it was completely destroyed. Their headquarters also disintegrated and fell into the turbulent flow of space. So, this eighth prince managed to obtain the heritage of that ancient Four Sacred Beasts sect?"

"It should be true because I have read about the four sacred seals in some old antiquarian books. This is most likely the ancient martial technique of the great Four Sacred Beasts sect. However, it's supposedly a top-tier martial arts technique and I can see that the four beasts that have been summoned by the eighth prince are nothing like the real deal. The eighth prince must have used the blood of the demon beasts that contain the bloodline of the original four sacred beasts, but even so, this technique is very ominous."

"It seems like Ye Xiwen is in big trouble. These four beasts are the guardian beasts between the heaven and earth. They are said to be the direct embodiment of the world laws. Now, while facing these four sacred beasts at once in this duel, he is going to fight at a great disadvantage!"

"Don't forget, Ye Xiwen is no fool, and he is certainly not an ordinary person. He is a fierce and formidable figure and will

certainly have a way to deal with this situation."

"Yes, Ye Xiwen is a rare genius of our Yi Yuan School. When he grows up, he will turn into the next Qi Feifan of our sect. Not to mention, he is one of the five pro-disciples and one of the brilliant disciples of the younger generation of Great Yue State. Our head has personally announced support and protection to him, so you can put your mind at ease and relax. Let's wait and see how the battle unfolds!"

"Ye Xiwen, it appears that this eighth prince truly had a great and fortuitous adventure!" Ye Mo's voice resounded in Ye Xiwen's mind. "I never expected him to summon the four sacred beasts."

"Is it that terrible?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Of course, it's very powerful and the genuine four sacred beasts are the supreme gods of heaven and earth. These beasts actually transcend the three realms and are said to be the masters of all five elements. There are legends about them in all of the ten thousand worlds, and especially in your human world." Ye Mo said, "There are rumors that they were entrusted with the task of guarding the ten thousand worlds, and in each world, they take different avatars. And, all of the world laws between the heaven and the earth obey their command, granting them abnormally terrifying might, but fortunately, the eighth prince has summoned only their imitations. However, since these imitations have the features and powers of the original mythical beasts, it's going to be hard to deal with them."

There was a sullen look on Ye Xiwen's face. He knew from the

outset that the eighth prince was a tough opponent, after all, his subordinate, Feng Kong, too was such a difficult guy to deal with.

However, he wasn't the slightest bit discouraged. Defeating stronger enemies to prove that his way was right, this had been his style all along. Anyway, he had already planned to sweep away any and all obstacles in his way and thereby pave the way to his destination, the peak of martial arts world!

But, before he could obtain the full explanation from Ye Mo, the eighth prince made his move. The dragon beneath his feet instantly moved and rushed roaring towards Ye Xiwen.

The horrifying aura of the four sacred beast spirits suddenly burst forward and pressed down towards Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if the eighth prince was the emperor of this world, like an omnipotent god, and right now, this god had directed all his might towards Ye Xiwen.

This was the might of terror which directly swept towards Ye Xiwen.

But at this time, Ye Xiwen also made his move and 'Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array' instantly soared out and the terrifying figure of 'Deepwater Black Serpent King' suddenly appeared and coiled around Ye Xiwen. One could see dragon scales on its skin, the abnormally protruding four limbs, and the hook-like angled head. All of this was announcing that this deepwater black snake king was about to evolve into a water dragon.

Everyone gasped at this scene because they could clearly see that this beast was about to evolve into the realm of dragons, so horrifying! They could easily figure out that this beast used to be at the half-step legendary realm when it was alive, but it was then killed by Ye Xiwen and its precious corpse fell into the hands of Ye Xiwen, who then used it to upgrade his divine tool. This actually transformed the image of Ye Xiwen in their hearts as that of a fearful expert.

But only Ye Xiwen knew that this deepwater black snake king had been killed by the old man in black clothes. After being killed, its corpse fell into the hands of Ye Xiwen and was completely absorbed by the Poisonous Dragon Water Control flag.

It was needless to say how precious the corpse of a half-step legendary realm demon beast actually was. Needless to say, this beast was also the king of deepwater black serpents. Hence, its corpse was an extremely precious treasure and could be used to refine powerful tools. But, in order to win Ye Xiwen's support by giving respect and honor, the ninth prince handed over the corpse of the deepwater black serpent king to Ye Xiwen. In fact, not just that, he also gifted the corpses of thousands of other deepwater black serpents to Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen offered the sacrifice of the corpses of these deepwater black serpents to enhance the 18 surfaced Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag. In addition to that, he used the half-step legendary level corpse of the deepwater black serpent king to form a new array to the flag.

'Whiz Whiz Whiz' sound resounded several times, and from the



side of Ye Xiwen, several deepwater black snakes flew out roaring from the 'Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array'. Looking at the mighty forms of these serpents, it seemed as if they were simply reborn because they had become much more formidable than before.

Ye Xiwen obtained the corpses of over a thousand deepwater black snakes and fed their souls to these original deepwater black snakes, making them transform into such mighty beasts, but because of the limited time, these few snakes could just evolve to the peak of truth fifth stage, however in doing so, almost 1/5th of the total one thousand deepwater black snakes were already consumed.

This divine tool had not yet fully formed its battle efficiency as originally envisaged by Ye Xiwen. After a complete feeding time and fully maturing, all sides of the 18 sided 'Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array' would take true shape, then at least, each side of the flag array would be able to reach the truth ninth stage, not to forget that one side of this flag array contained a half-step legendary realm beast's soul. So, after successfully applying all the amendments to improve this flag array as he originally planned, the flag array would display its true might, and then with its help, Ye Xiwen would be able to contend with the experts of half-step legendary realm.

In other words, right now, this flag array was just a semi-finished product, but even so, Ye Xiwen didn't have any other means to face the boundless might of the four sacred beasts, he could only bite the bullet and brace himself.

One by one, the deepwater black snakes rushed forward on the battlefield, and suddenly, numerous disciples were amazed at this scene. Some of them had previously witnessed Ye Xiwen's flag array, but most of them had not seen such a magnificent divine tool.

## Chapter 214: Eighth Prince's Fatal Error

---

At this time, there was a look of shock on the eighth prince's face. He never thought that Ye Xiwen would actually have such a hidden card. However, now he didn't have a way out of this situation, he must finish what he started and behead Ye Xiwen, in order to save his reputation.

On one side stood a large array of the four sacred beasts, namely the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, The Phoenix and the Black Tortoise. While, on the other side stood the even bigger array of 19 gigantic deepwater black snakes of Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag, and not to forget that one of them being the deepwater black snake king.

All the disciples had horrified expressions on their faces as they were anticipating an earth-shattering collision between these two peerless geniuses.

Between the two of them, any of whom could be considered as an unimaginably tyrannical presence.

The four sacred beasts and the gang of deepwater black snakes severely collided.

"Boom!"

Giving rise to an inexhaustible air explosion and forming a large vacuum belt. It seemed as if the surrounding space had been shattered by this explosion.

Both sides were submerged in the terrifying fluctuations of space and energy, while at the same time, the deepwater black snakes and the four sacred beast spirits fiercely rushed towards each other and clashed maliciously.

The entire air was boiling as the fierce beastly roars continued to resound throughout the region. There was chaos everywhere while the surrounding space was slowly cracking and collapsing. It seemed just like the collapse of this entire world.

The terrible scene scared everyone to death, as they could clearly see that this decisive battle was almost reaching its end.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

All kinds of horrifying beastly roars were directly impacting the clouds in the sky and shaking the atmosphere.

This was truly a fight between ominous beasts, which was actually able to shake the heaven and the earth.

"Clang!"

Eighth prince's spear was once again wrapped in a terrifying light. The dragon beneath his feet began to roar loudly, as he again

advanced towards Ye Xiwen. The energy surrounding the spear started getting bigger and bigger and fell towards Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if a mountain was collapsing upon him.

The spear packed an invincible might, to the extent that it simply punctured through the atmosphere and spread chaos everywhere. This scene was literally like the birth of the world!

There was a calm look on Ye Xiwen's face. He didn't say anything, he was very calm. Irrespective of the kind of attacks enemy was throwing at him, there was no way to shake his confidence.

Ye Xiwen shot his long blade, releasing an equally fearful attack, in the form of Bladelight, towards the incoming attack.

Ye Xiwen's blade attacks were extremely horrifying, to the extent that each of his blade attacks was capable of cutting open through the space.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!" the two experts collided again, but this time, they staggered away from each other.

In a flash, the flesh and blood flew in all directions.

The disciples felt their hearts tremble, who was hurt? Whose blood was this? Yi Yuan School's disciples were naturally hoping that Ye Xiwen was okay, that it wasn't him who got hurt.

As the light dispersed, everyone saw the eighth prince's figure, standing atop the Azure Dragon. They were shocked to find that his whole arm was almost torn off by Ye Xiwen's long blade, and the blood was constantly dripping down his arm.

No one expected that Ye Xiwen would actually turn out to be so formidable that he would manage to almost chop off the eighth prince's arm.

After seeing the eighth prince's blood flying in front of their eyes, everyone was stunned. There was pin drop silence on the battlefield.

The eighth prince almost fell off the Azure dragon's head.

Could it be that the eighth prince was not a match of Ye Xiwen in a same-level duel? No, in fact, Ye Xiwen was only an expert of truth fourth stage and his enemy was an expert of much higher level.

This in itself was not a fair fight, but even so, the duel should have been in favor of the eighth prince. In the end, what was the

true extent of Ye Xiwen's strength?

"You actually dared to hurt me, now no one can save you from my wrath!" The eighth prince's body suddenly exuded a strange godly aura, and soon, the wound on his arm gradually began to heal, was no longer bleeding like earlier.

There was a very simply reason behind why the bleeding suddenly stopped, it was because Ye Xiwen's Daoqi was still lingering in his wound and was constantly devouring his wounds, so this was the fundamental reason why he could not recover.

Just now, the strange godly aura instantly expelled Ye Xiwen's Daoqi and allowed the bleeding to stop.

Ye Xiwen sneered but didn't say anything, just looked coldly at the eighth prince.

The eighth prince grinned cruelly while he was standing on the Azure dragon's head and holding a spear in one hand. And suddenly, he rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

The spear in the eighth prince's hand began to produce a buzzing noise and instantly evolved into a huge cage of energy, which then went towards Ye Xiwen in order to suppress him and choke him to death.

Ye Xiwen didn't waste any time, he rushed forward and waved the long blade in his hand, thereby releasing nine blade shadows,

which then fiercely collided with the spear attack in the sky.

"Boom!"

The two attacks glittered as they severely collided and suddenly began to exude terrifying rays of light in the sky!

"Puchi!" the spear left a fatal wound on Ye Xiwen's waist, inducing a deadly trail of blood across his waist. This was the first time Ye Xiwen got injured in this duel, but the eighth prince was in a worse state. A horrible wound had opened up on his chest and the blood was crazily oozing out of it.

"What's going on? That eighth prince actually fell under the wind!"

"How is this possible, how can this Ye Xiwen be so formidable?"

Several disciples exclaimed while there was shock and surprise on their faces. Although they always thought of the eighth prince as an arrogant and annoying guy, but deep in their hearts, they could still not deny his overwhelming might.

Although they did not want to admit it, but the powerful image of the eighth prince was deeply rooted in their hearts, so they never thought that he would actually fall under the wind. The scene that unfolded in front of their eyes was simply beyond their original expectation.



This was an unprecedented matter!

Not even the eighth prince himself ever imagined such an outcome!

Since his debut and the beginning of his so-called world conquest, he had never fallen under the wind in a same-level duel, not to mention he had never fought such a one-sided battle.

Not to forget, he was the one who instigated this duel and still ended up falling under the wind, this was just too ridiculous and unexpected.

In fact, he was not unaware that he made a blunder of underestimating Ye Xiwen and fell into his own trap.

He could sense intense threat from Ye Xiwen. He was aware of the fact that Ye Xiwen was so young and still managed to kill Feng Kong, who was clearly at a higher level. It was obvious that Ye Xiwen was capable of fighting with experts of higher level, but he just never expected that Ye Xiwen would turn out to be so terrifying.

Despite being at a fairly higher level, he had been completely suppressed by Ye Xiwen.

Suddenly, an ominous and dense aura manifested around Ye Xiwen. He didn't wait for the eighth prince to recover and attacked, but this time, he didn't use an ordinary blade skill. What

he used was actually a horrifying sword intention, which instantly swept across and completely engulfed everything in the surroundings. Looking at the overwhelming might of this sword intention, no one could guess the rank of this skill. Immediately, the entire expanse of the sky was engulfed in the brilliance of this sword intention, whereas the nearby mountains couldn't stand its presence and disintegrated into bits. Everyone had a feeling in their hearts that if anyone tried to stand in its way, they would be instantly obliterated, leaving nothing behind.

Eighth prince's complexion suddenly paled. This was the first time such a terrified expression appeared on his face, other than the usual ice-cold expression. He cursed in his heart and thought that this Ye Xiwen was not playing by the rules and suddenly shot the sword intention, carrying such an out-of-the-world destructive power. Moreover, he could sense that there was an inherent meaning of creative concept hidden inside the sword intention, but the eighth prince couldn't understand how Ye Xiwen managed to practice it to such a profound level that it so effortlessly smashed his spirit illusions.

This attack was extremely fearful and was virtually impossible to guard against. Ye Xiwen so casually switched from using blade-based attacks to using a sword skill to catch his enemy off guard. He carefully waited for the right moment to unleash the sword intention, a strange but deadly skill he picked up from that fearful swordsman.

And right then, Ye Xiwen finally decided to go all out and fully unleashed his long trained combat style!

Bladelight!

Sword Intention!

Palm shadow!

One after another, Ye Xiwen was unleashing various techniques and skill without any rules and patterns, totally random. As if all of these skills were on his fingertips and invoking them was a child's play for him. This clearly showed that he had a very high-level understanding of the martial arts when compared to his peers.

Gradually, the eighth prince was completely pressed under the wind. Needless to say, no matter how high a level he was at before the seal was placed on him, right now, the best he could do was display the might of Small Truth at best. And when considering the level of understanding of martial arts, who could possibly beat Ye Xiwen?

So long as it was at the same level, no one could contend with Ye Xiwen. Not to forget, when Ye Xiwen was at truth third stage, he was able to compete with the experts of Small Truth level. And now that he stepped into the truth fourth stage, he should possess enough battle efficiency to beat any and all experts of Small Truth level.

Of course, eighth prince was just too tyrannical and that's how he managed to survive this long in the duel, otherwise, any other expert would have been slaughtered in one shot by Ye Xiwen.

Being able to last so long against Ye Xiwen, the eighth prince certainly proved his well-deserved reputation. Of course, only Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo would think so.

Everyone else was simply dumbfounded to witness that Ye Xiwen was prevailing in the duel.

But now, the battle had thoroughly fallen into the hands of Ye Xiwen, and it was time to end this once and forever.

Choosing to fight Ye Xiwen at the Small Truth level was really the biggest mistake committed by the so-called perfectionist, the eighth prince!

"Eighth prince, your legend ends today. Your decision to fight me at the same level was the biggest mistake you'll ever make!" Ye Xiwen gave out a loud shout and a burst of energy broke out of his body.

# Chapter 215: Eighth Prince Defeated

---

Perhaps if the eighth prince was in his peak condition, he might have been able to kill Ye Xiwen, but it just so happened that he was too conceited and made the fatal error of challenging Ye Xiwen to a same level duel.

Everyone was anxious at this moment. They were fully aware of the extraordinary prowess of these two experts, and the fact that both were capable of effortlessly beating any expert of Small Truth realm, but at this time, the younger among the two was able to completely suppress the other.

"But, I was so sure of your death!" The eighth prince said with an unwilling look on his face. He was cursing himself for committing his biggest mistake. Rather than blaming himself for being so conceited, he was feeling pain in his heart for facing such a miserable situation.

Conquest between peerless experts of each generation was always an extremely cruel occurring, and everyone knew that, but in every generation, there were always few experts who were able to reach the summit of the conquest, and later in life, they would also come to control several major forces.

If only these two could have avoided this duel, at least in a few decades, they would have certainly obtained influential positions in the major forces of Great Yue State. But, the duel took place ahead of time.

Ye Xiwen's battle strength was too terrifying and he easily managed to suppress the eighth prince.

Eighth prince's spear possessed tremendous might. Each of its strikes was capable of shattering the space. It seemed to be releasing a tyrannical qi which was seemed as if it was coming straight from the grasp of the king of the world.

And each blade attack of Ye Xiwen seemed to be cutting open the world itself and breaking the entire universe.

While they were fighting and clashing with each other, it would appear like a terrible collision between two planets, leaving the horrifying aftermath of the explosion everywhere. And with each collision, the enchantment barrier would almost collapse by shattering into several pieces and dispersing.

The disciples held their breaths as these scenes of terror continued to unfold in front of their eyes. These two men were undoubtedly the supreme leaders of the younger generation.

Especially, the true disciples were simply frustrated to death after witnessing such a scene. Of course, they were among the elite geniuses of Yi Yuan School, but when compared with the two peerless geniuses fighting in front of their eyes, their own accomplishments were nothing. They had the kind of feeling that their hair fall off to the ground while thinking about the shame they felt for not having the capability to carry on such a fight.

After all, their strength was far worse.

This in itself was not necessarily going to determine the winner of the conquest, as long as the vast majority of peers could be beheaded, and in that case, the battle between these two could have been avoided. However, now the fight was close to the end.

And since the eighth prince's ambition was to dominate the world, he actually needed to destroy all obstacles with his own hands.

"Ah!" The eighth prince looked up towards the sky and gave out a long and loud battle-cry. And at the same time, a terrifying burst of monstrous energy rushed throughout the spear in his hand.

Eight prince's previous heroic aura had disappeared and only a boundless killing aura remained in its place. His tall stature appeared quite domineering, just like a huge mountain, when he suddenly rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

However, he still couldn't injure Ye Xiwen, in fact, his attack was easily blocked.

The eighth prince was incomparably overbearing, to the extent that even though he had been fully suppressed by Ye Xiwen in the duel, he still didn't switch to defensive-play and kept on going all out.

An example of infinite courage!

"The duel is reaching its end so soon? I never expected that the dignified eighth prince would be so close to facing a disastrous defeat."

"It's strange, Ye Xiwen is too strong and witnessing his performance in this duel; he is certainly worthy of the title of Yi Yuan School's fifth pro-disciple."

"The eighth prince really had it coming. He actually wanted to use Ye Xiwen as his stepping stone in his world quest. Even when our head declared his full support and protection of Ye Xiwen, he still dared to pull off such a stunt. This clearly shows that he looks down on us!"

All of the disciples felt that this duel's outcome would be out any minute.

Ye Xiwen's facial expression looked even more callous while the Bladelight completely quelled the eighth prince.

"Ah!" Eighth prince roared again and again, and suddenly shot his spear, which stabbed towards Ye Xiwen like an endlessly falling mountain. The approaching flying spear looked dazzling and colorful, just like a small sun.

"Look at yourself, now you are nothing but a cornered beast!" Ye Xiwen roared and shot his palm, which then turned into a coiling dragon and flew towards the incoming spear.



"Boom!" the resulting horrifying blast even obliterated the atoms in the atmosphere.

The eighth prince's spear collided with Ye Xiwen's dragon claw and stagnated, it simply couldn't advance.

Both of Ye Xiwen's hands turned into coiling dragons and soared towards the sky, like two god-beasts, suppressing and obliterating everything in the surroundings.

Eighth prince's face finally revealed a look of panic and terror. In so many years of his life, he had never been suppressed so thoroughly by anyone. Now that he was facing Ye Xiwen, he was just like a cornered beast. No matter how much he tried, it was still extremely difficult for him to escape from Ye Xiwen's attacks.

Ye Xiwen's palm turned into a coiling dragon, which swept its huge tail towards the eighth prince. He used the strongest move of coiling dragon palm, 'Divine Dragon swings its tail'.

Eighth prince was sent flying several hundred miles away, along with the spear, and finally fell on the ground. No one knew how many bones shattered in his body, his clothes were tattered, his hair scattered in all directions. He no longer looked like the heroic prince he was when he arrived earlier, now he was just a miserable looking warrior who was on the verge of losing everything he accumulated so far in his life.

But the duel was not over yet. Before the eighth prince could take a breath of relief, a spear came piercing across the sky and stabbed

into his body.

Eighth prince was simply not prepared for this and was directly pierced by the spear.

"Boom!" the eighth prince was punched on top of a mountain peak by his own spear, and suddenly, the entire peak was cut off in half by the inconceivable might of the spear.

The eighth prince was still struggling, roaring again and again. One-third of the mountain had already been smashed by the enormous might of the spear, but then suddenly, the fearful seal on the spear-tip started to glow intermittently and instantly activated, thereby completely sealing off the prince's strength.

Ye Xiwen flew across the sky and landed next to the pale-looking eighth prince, then said: "As pathetic as you are right now, do you still want to kill me? I told you, in a same-level battle, I will squash you like a bug."

"I dare you to fight a fair battle with me. Since my real strength was sealed by your elder, I couldn't show my complete strength!" The eighth prince clamored, while there was still a murderous look in his eyes, but not so intense like earlier.

"Fair, you say? How ridiculous! You are far above my level, but you still rushed here to kill me. Now you want a fair duel?" Ye Xiwen said in a ridiculing manner.

The eighth prince was furious but he couldn't do anything. Right now, his martial arts and skill had been sealed by his own spear and he couldn't even move.

"So now you can stop going on expeditions. Maybe try next time, in your next life." Ye Xiwen said and the long blade instantly danced in his hand.

The surrounding disciples immediately exclaimed and started celebrating. Ye Xiwen finally defeated the eighth prince and saved their face. And this was simply beyond anyone's expectation. However, if he killed the eighth prince, then it would create a huge sensation throughout the Great Yue State.

After defeating the eighth prince, the one who actually intended to dominate the entire Great Yue State, it was obvious that Ye Xiwen was going to become very famous.

"I refuse to accept this outcome!" The eighth prince suddenly shouted, and this time, there was fear in his eyes. He was scared of Ye Xiwen since he had never bumped into a tyrannical expert like him. Ye Xiwen was just like an indomitable person, a truly fearful and bizarre existence and the eighth prince finally realized it!

"Stop!" a loud shout transmitted from far away, and suddenly, a big hand opened a crack in the space and stretched towards the eighth prince.

Ye Xiwen frowned, how could he possibly forget the terrifying expert who arrived along with the eighth prince?

Ye Xiwen immediately seized the eighth prince's body and threw across the sky. The eighth prince's body was sent flying at an extremely fast speed and it escaped from the reach of that big hand.

"What do you want?" Ye Xiwen said coldly and looked towards the void.

"Young man, this duel is over!" That hoarse voice said.

A skinny old man's figure suddenly appeared from the void.

"Duel, you say? You think this was really just a duel?" Ye Xiwen sneered and said.

"This time you've won, just respect the rule of so-called forgive and forget. The royal clan will owe you one!" The old man said.

"Humph, what will I do with a royal favor? Do you think it is good enough to stand on level with this matter?" Ye Xiwen said in a strict voice. To others, perhaps royal favor was as heavy as a mountain, but the same didn't apply to Ye Xiwen. His origin was extraordinary! He had come from a much-advanced world with advanced societies, where the hierarchical system of monarchy was already a long gone tradition.

"He rushed here to kill me, there was killing intention filled in his heart when he challenged me to a duel, in fact, he even said

that he would take my life today. And you say that this was just a duel?" Ye Xiwen said disdainfully, "If he had won, would you show up to stop him from killing me? If I hadn't defeated him today, he and his spear would have taken so many innocent lives of countless geniuses. Would you persuade him to stop and convince him otherwise? No, all you can do is try to teach me a lesson on 'forgive and forget'!"

"In the end, you just follow double standards. You treat yourself and others based on two different sets of standards!"

"Look Ye Xiwen, the road ahead is long. Even if you possess god-given wisdom and talent, you are still young and far from being a legend warrior. There's a long way to go and you will face countless unknown obstacles along the way, so making a new friend is good for you!" A hint of threat was apparent in the old man's words.

# Chapter 216: Demon Island Bell Rings

---

"Look Ye Xiwen, the road ahead is long. Even if you possess god-given wisdom and talent, but you are still young and far from being a legendary warrior. There's a long way to go and you will face countless unknown obstacles along the way, so making a new friend is good for you!" A hint of threat was apparent in the old man's words.

"Are you threatening me?" Ye Xiwen's complexion suddenly became dark and filled with anger.

"I am just stating the fact, kid." The old man said in a casual manner.

"I don't need others to help me pave my way to success. Even if there are thorns in my way, I will completely chop them off and make my own way." Ye Xiwen said unmoved. He was standing in front of Yi Yuan School and wasn't afraid of the enemy.

Ye Xiwen consecrated to the unusual repugnance towards the royal clan. Earlier when the eighth prince was challenging him to a fight to the death, this old man said that the elders mustn't get involved in the fight of the young ones. And now that his own disciple's life was on the line, he interfered without thinking twice about his own statement. Two sets of standards were pretty obvious in this situation!

"I remember how you said just now that the old guys mustn't get involved in the matters of the younger generation. Now, you

intend to go back on your words!" Ye Xiwen said in a mocking voice. "If I was the one nailed atop a mountain, would you come out to save me from your eighth prince? Look at the pious look on your face and the dignity you carry as an expert, it's fake in the end. You are not even ashamed of yourself, old man."

"You!" the old man choked from the anger, bulging inside of him from Ye Xiwen's words, but he didn't dare to attack, after all, he was standing in front of Yi Yuan School. If he actually dared to attack Ye Xiwen, neither him nor the eighth prince would go back alive.

Not to forget, the eighth prince's entire stunt was like a provocation, as if looking down on Yi Yuan School.

The five forces were capable of peaceful coexistence for so many years, naturally by not making sudden moves and abiding by the rules and the eighth prince's everyday clamoring about dominating the world itself was no different from committing the taboo. Who would want the eighth prince in power?

One could simply and smoothly kill the eighth prince for this reason conveniently and no one would be able to say anything. Not to mention, even the royal clan wouldn't say anything; in fact, many people would be clapping and celebrating.

The competition in royal clan was more brutal than other forces. Although the five pro-disciples were competing for the seat of Yi Yuan School's head, they wouldn't steep so low as to killing each other for its sake, because it was just a position and didn't give the right to continue one's own royal bloodline. However, the same

was not true for the throne.

Eighth prince's death would greatly benefit the eldest prince, the second prince, the fourth prince, uh, and now the ninth prince was also in the race. Not to mention, other major forces were supporting the aforementioned princes and they certainly didn't approve of the eighth prince's ambition. So, even inside the royal clan, there were many people who didn't approve of the eighth prince's actions; after all, they didn't want to mess with the other major forces. Since they were fully aware of the fact that the royal clan alone wasn't responsible for the foundation of Great Yue State, in fact, without the help of other forces, it would have been impossible for the royal clan to achieve such a feat.

Many people were scared that if the eighth prince really got the throne and waged war against the other forces, the end result would be the destruction of the royal clan. The overall strength of Yi Yuan School and the other major forces was tyrannical. They possessed several legendary level experts, and while facing so many legendary level experts, the imperial legions would prove pretty useless. Since the rule of strength in numbers didn't stand a chance in front of a legendary level expert.

Because of this, the royal clan was deliberately planning to keep strong ties with Yun Cheng sect. By doing so, it was barely maintaining a balance of power with Yi Yuan School and the other two major forces.

Even if he wanted to dominate the world, he shouldn't have kept blabbering about it all the time. Fear controls all and people instinctively fear the unknown!



Therefore, considering the hostile elements inside the royal clan who hated the eighth prince, the old man didn't dare get involved.

"I am not the kind of person who easily gets scared of such empty threats. I just believe in the fully repay of a debt!" Ye Xiwen sneered, "And it seems today, it's going to be difficult for your eighth prince to escape from the death's claws!"

Ye Xiwen lifted his long blade and was about to stab the eighth prince, and from the far distance, the old man's angry shout suddenly thundered.

"Ding!" The melodious sound of a bell suddenly rang out of nowhere, as if transmitting from the sky, and instantly struck Ye Xiwen's mind. Ye Xiwen was left completely stunned for an instant.

"Ding!"

"Ding!"

"Ding!"

One after another, the bell continued to ring.

The old man looked at Ye Xiwen and couldn't understand what stunned him, but he saw the opportunity and immediately grabbed

the eighth prince's body in his big hand and disappeared.

"You will pay for what you did today!"

"Ye Xiwen, what's wrong?"

"Wasn't he going to kill the eighth prince?"

"Impossible, I can just feel Ye Xiwen's monstrous killing intention and anger. I don't understand why he didn't kill him while he had the chance."

"Then what happened exactly!"

"God knows!"

"Could it be that something happened and stopped Ye Xiwen's attack?"

Moments after the eighth prince was rescued by the old man, Ye Xiwen finally recovered and got extremely furious!

However, what on the earth was that bell sound and where did it come from?

The news quickly spread throughout the Great Yue State among the warriors community. After a long period of 50 years, the

Demon Island bell rang once again in the sky of Great Yue State.

There were lots of legends related to the Demon Island in Great Yue State and several neighboring countries.

The older experts were not much concerned about the Demon Island because, more or less, everyone knew about this strange island's connection with the younger generation of disciples.

Since the demon island only appeared once in every 50 ears, and for an average person, it was a considerably long time. Naturally, no one knew about the background of the demon island.

However, very soon, the legend of the Demon Island spread once again.

According to hearsay, long time ago, the Demon Island appeared in this world. There was no record of how long ago it really appeared, but after a cycle of every 50 years, it would appear in the East China Sea. Again, no one knew about the reason behind its appearance and disappearance and how it happened.

Everyone knew only this much that it would appear only once in 50 years, and each time with its appearance, a melodious bell would ring and call forth the chosen ones. Not anyone could listen to this bell's sound, only the leaders of the younger generation could hear the melodious sound of this bell and only these chosen few could enter into the island. Those who couldn't hear the bell summons shouldn't even dream about going to the Demon Island.

Therefore, many people considered the bell summon as a standard. Those who heard the bell ringing were considered as young heroes of their respective sects.

Fifty years ago, Qi Feifan went to the demon island and reaped great benefits over there. That's how he could become so strong.

And after a lapse of five decades, the Demon Island once again rang the bell, which gave rise to countless rumors.

And this time, Ye Xiwen heard the call of the bell, which also became a staple of conversation for countless people. After he received the summons from the Demon Island, finally, even the unwilling and most stubborn people had to recognize Ye Xiwen's peerless talent and extraordinary abilities. This was no different from attaining instant glory overnight.

Since the demon island bell never summoned non-top geniuses.

However, Ye Xiwen was not much excited or flattered about this, like everyone expected him to be.

In fact, this thing was too weird since Ye Xiwen didn't know about the origin of this demon island.

After continuously searching through books and materials for a few days, Ye Xiwen finally had a profound understanding about this demon island and why it was famed as the killing fields of peerless geniuses.

The demon island bell summon was not just for Yi Yuan School, but for ten countries of the southeast region. Almost over a thousand peerless geniuses from the ten countries of the southeast region were going to participate in this expedition.

No one could count how many peerless geniuses fell during the last summons. Qi Feifan himself was an invincible expert of his generation and incomparably tyrannical, and largely because most of the peerless geniuses of his generation had already fallen in the demon island.

Fifty years ago, that time was one of the most miserable times for the Great Yue State. It lost more than 50 peerless geniuses in one fell swoop, and in the end, only Qi Feifan survived and returned from the demon island. In the end, what happened there, no one would ever know except Qi Feifan.

However, even if the situation was relatively good, as many as only a dozen people would manage to come back alive.

And one must know that these weren't some ordinary disciples, but were considered the specifically cultivated peerless geniuses of various forces. The death of any of whom would cause severe loss to the sect.

It was said in the southeast region that only those who would manage to come back alive from the demon island would be standing on the top of the pyramid of power.

Therefore, although the demon island was called an elite meat grinder, it still gave enormous opportunities to the brave young geniuses. That's why even after clearly knowing about the narrow escape, they would still choose to go.

Several of them wanted to go because they thought; they would either die on the demon island or come back alive to become the strongest figures among the ten countries of the southeast region.

Moreover, these were the so-called elites among the geniuses and possessed great self-confidence. Every one of them was confident that they would be able to come out alive from the demon island.

Anyways, there would a huge gap between the strength and skills of those who didn't go to the demon island and those who came out from there.

So they were willing to take the risk and make good use of this chance!

Now it was Ye Xiwen's turn to choose whether to go or not!

"I will go, why wouldn't I go when everyone else is going? And if only one person were to come out alive from there, that person would be me."

# Chapter 217: The Sinister Demon Island

---

The Demon Island appeared again and immediately set off a storm in the entire southeast region. The infamous bell once again summoned countless geniuses from all over, and they set off on the journey.

This expedition was only focused on preparing a battlefield for the chosen geniuses hailing from the ten countries of the Southeast region!

They were all brave and fearless, but the success was going to belong to only a few, the rest could only be used as paving stones in the supreme glory of the winners.

Although it wasn't clear at what time they must go to the Demon Island, under normal circumstances, the major forces would come along and send their respective chosen geniuses together, so that they could get along on the way and take good care of each other.

And this time, three disciples were summoned from Yi Yuan School. No one was surprised to find that one of the chosen candidates was Ye Xiwen, while the other one of the remaining two was actually Hua Menghan. In the last two months, Hua Menghan had firmly stepped into the second stage of truth realm, and her cultivation was surprisingly almost comparable to that of Ye Xiwen.

After all, Hua Menghan had spent a long time in Xiantian ninth stage, accumulating all the time, so now when she finally had a

breakthrough; she directly reached the second stage of truth realm. Initially, Ye Xiwen was a bit surprised, but he knew that she had a strong background. He actually felt quite relieved, since Hua Menghan joined the Main Sect of Yi Yuan School at the age of 16 and that too when she was at Xiantian fifth stage. And, noticing her excellent talent and shocking cultivation speed, later, she was taken in as a direct disciple of Wu Potian, the head of Yi Yuan School. Now, in just a matter of few years, she reached all the way up to the truth second stage. This really put her in a league, far ahead of her peers and sibling disciples.

Hua Menghan had been considerably low-key all the time since she was focusing on the accumulation of profound knowledge and skill, and now that her cultivation finally had a breakthrough, it literally put her in the spotlight as a peerless genius of Yi Yuan School. Not to forget, she was one of the three chosen by the Demon Island bell.

Hua Menghan's achievement could be regarded as extraordinary, literally far beyond the expectations of Ye Xiwen.

However, Ye Xiwen was much more curious about the third candidate. He was a young guy in black clothes who appeared to be about 20 years old. Named Chen Ruochen, he was a sibling disciple of Hua Menghan and had been directly trained by Wu Potian. He was a disciple of truth third stage and was actually not really a well-known disciple among Wu Potian's disciples. He could only be regarded as mediocre, with a normally silent and withdrawn personality. He was basically a loner and didn't have many friends; in fact, even Hua Menghan didn't know him well because of his eccentric attitude.



Even though Chen Ruochen was not very famous, Ye Xiwen didn't dare to look down on him. After all, only peerless geniuses could hear the summoning bell of the Demon Island, so it was impossible for mediocre geniuses to be summoned. Perhaps, he was deliberately trying to keep a low profile.

But anyway, a total of three disciples from Yi Yuan School were going to set foot on the Demon Island. So, they would obviously maintain a good relationship with each other, after all, mutual cooperation was not always bad.

Because everyone needed to prepare for the long journey ahead, their departure was delayed until ten days later, when the three finally hit the road. Although each time the Demon Island made its appearance, it was always in the East China Sea, the location was not the same each time. Besides the experts who heard the summoning bell, others couldn't sense its location.

However, to actually find its exact location was not very difficult because thousands of experts were summoned each time, making the task easier. Not to forget, even the non-summoned experts of the same sect would help their chosen peers in finding the Demon Island.

However, it was impossible for the non-chosen ones to enter the island.

Ye Xiwen and the other two flew all the way towards the Demon Island and saw a lot of people on the way. They were also flying in the direction of the East China Sea, where the Demon Island was going to appear after fifty years. Among them, there were many

people who didn't believe in this legend and wanted to confirm with their own eyes.

Along the way, the three didn't have much communication until they reach the East China Sea coast. They started looking for a Zhen Yuan propelled wooden boat. Ye Xiwen noticed that this boat was way faster than the speedboats of his previous life.

The trio had an approximate location of the Demon Island, so they decided to advance in that direction.

Although flying would be faster than riding a boat, the airspace near the Demon Island was said to be infested with tyrannical flying-type demon beasts, so the use of a boat was recommended. Even though the trio was somewhat dissatisfied with the speed, they didn't want to take the lead and definitely weren't in a rush.

On the way, occasionally, small groups of 3-4 experts could be seen rushing towards the Demon Island. Obviously, they were the leaders of the younger generation among the ten countries of the Southeast region.

Early morning sunlight was reflecting on the sea in the form of shiny bits and pieces of dazzling stars. The whole scene looked extremely beautiful as the trio sped on the boat for three whole days, but there wasn't a shred of weariness on their faces. Having reached such high levels of cultivation, there was no necessity of taking rest.

From afar, they saw a figure approaching very fast from behind

and were actually surprised to see that it was a young priest in black robes. He looked roughly 25 or 26 years old from his appearance. His robe was fluttering as he was riding the waves and quickly approaching them. His movements looked natural and elegant.

The trio was slightly surprised since they never expected to actually see a priest in the world of martial arts. Ye Xiwen could somehow relate to this from the knowledge of his past life since the priest somewhat resembled the monastic martial artists from his previous life. However, there were some differences, like the spiritual cultivation involved training one's mind and soul; this priest seemed to have a very powerful martial arts heritage.

This young priest's agility skill was extremely superior. It didn't take him even a moment to arrive beside these three.

But he didn't wait to converse with the trio and quickly went ahead. He just stopped for an instant and nodded slightly to greet the three, which showed that he was not an arrogant guy.

Hua Menghan frowned while looking at the back profile of the young priest and said: "This priest looks very strong. I could not perceive his cultivation."

Chen Ruochen nodded in agreement. This priest was actually daring to go alone to the Demon Island, which was the proof of his incredible courage.

There was a calm and dignified look on Ye Xiwen's face, because

unlike the other two, he was well aware of this priest's outstanding strength. He had already seen through the cultivation of the young priest, who was at the sixth stage of truth realm. This should clearly place him among the few strongest peerless geniuses on the Demon Island.

He was so young and still managed to step into the truth sixth stage, which was proof of his natural talent. Needless to say, since the Demon Island appeared only once in 50 years, plus it summoned only special geniuses who were generally only 50 years old or less, each having great potential genius, Ye Xiwen could determine from this that this priest was definitely less than fifty years old. In fact, he looked less than 30 years old, which again placed him among the rarest of peerless geniuses like the eighth prince.

Fortunately, the test on the Demon Island was not to determine one winner out of so many contestants. It was more of a treasure hunt!

However, the slaughter was inevitable whenever a rare treasure would pop up.

Demon Island has been able to attract so many people; all kinds of adventures await these people on the Demon Island. There are many materials and treasures which could provide great benefits.

The main attraction of the Demon Island was it being a host of several rare treasures and adventures.

Most people were attracted towards the endless treasures and were crazed for the upcoming fortuitous encounters.

In a blink of an eye, two days passed. Ye Xiwen and the other two finally approached the Demon Island. The excitement was getting more and more intense in their hearts, as they were nearing the dyed black sky, filled with dark billowing clouds.

The strong winds were howling, numerous sea waves were billowing and shooting up into the sky, but in this boundless sea, they could still see the blossoming of small waves.

When looking from afar, there was an endless sea stretched for miles and obscured by dark clouds. The trio was enjoying beautiful sunlight earlier, but now they were in the deeper region of this sea. Here, dense dark clouds were running amuck, obscuring the sky, and a huge island could be seen looming in the stormy waves of [Yaoqi](#), soaring throughout the sky.

Yaoqi = Demonqi

The trio knew that the dark clouds were actually composed of Yaoqi, and within a month, the entire Demon Island was going to be sealed off by a barricade of these dark clouds. It would not re-open until more than a year later, which meant that they would be sealed off on this island for a whole year until it would re-open.

For more than a year's time, the people on the Demon Island wouldn't be able to contact the people outside and vice versa.

Under these dark clouds, there was a no-fly zone for any living or

non-living thing of alien origin.

The trio quickly sped the boat towards the island, while the dark clouds were directly above them, but suddenly from afar, they saw few human figures coming towards them and were shocked to find out that each of them possessed a tyrannical aura. Judging from their auras, it was certain that they were legendary level experts. Finally, the trio saw three old men dressed in magnificent robes, as if they were the super heavyweights of some big faction.

However, these three old men looked extremely distressed. Their robes were ragged and torn all over, as if they were desperately fleeing from someone or something. There wasn't a shred of imposing aura coming from them, as the trio expected from legendary level experts.

"Roar!" a loud roar of unknown origins pierced through the sea breeze and shook Ye Xiwen's eardrums. It left his ears buzzing and slightly bleeding, which caused him to feel nausea and sick.

Ye Xiwen looked in the direction of the sound's origin and saw a huge golden light flying across the sky. Even in the dark and gloomy sky, it looked extraordinarily bright and dazzling.

In a matter of few breaths, the golden light arrived close by and dispersed into golden fragments of light, revealing a gigantic golden eagle. Its entire body was covered in yellow feathers that were exuding golden light. It also had a curved black beak and a pair of extremely large yellow claws.

# Chapter 218: Great Ominous Mountain

---

Roar!" the huge golden eagle gave out a loud shriek and fled all the way towards the three legendary experts. It was extremely fast and arrived in front of them in a blink of an eye, and stretched out its huge claws.

"Back off, you filthy beast!" One of the three old men swayed from side to side to barely avoid the deadly claws. He immediately flew above the golden eagle's head and instantly unleashed his terrifying powers, shooting numerous water arrows towards the golden eagle.

The great golden eagle shrieked in a loud voice, instantly lifted its golden wings upward, and in a flash, the innumerable golden feathers on its wings started to glow with golden light. Its golden wings seemed all prepared to welcome the incoming water arrows from above.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The innumerable blue colored water arrows and dazzling golden feathers scattered everywhere and covered up most of the visible sky. It seemed as if the ambience of the world itself had changed in an instant.

The gigantic explosion seemed to churn the ocean, setting off tremors and ocean waves in all directions. Ye Xiwen immediately dived into the sea when he saw several meters high sea waves coming towards him, along with the aftershock of the explosion.

The terrifying might present in the aftershock pushed all three of them in random directions into the sea, while their boat was directly shattered to bits.

Ye Xiwen took a direct hit and the huge impact almost made him lose consciousness, but he knew that if he fainted in this damned place then there would be no saving him. This golden eagle was extremely tyrannical and was literally chasing around legendary level experts as if it was chasing stray dogs. In the end, it was hard to imagine its rank and the level of its cultivation.

Ye Xiwen was cursing these old men in his heart. If they knew that they wouldn't be able to escape from the golden eagle then why did they mess with it in the first place?

Each time the two sides clashed, it caused a blast so potent that it seemed to have been caused as a result of collision between celestial bodies. The whole sea was boiling and literally burning to the point of vaporizing as a result of terrifying attacks, derived from the fluctuations in the world principles. These fluctuations in world laws were morphing everything on the scene and Ye Xiwen felt intense pressure which began to suffocate him on the spot.

The protective layer of Zhen Yuan on Ye Xiwen's body was



instantly neutralized by the aftermath of the battle, even though it was taking place about 1 Li away from there. The terrifying fluctuations in the world laws were almost about to crush Ye Xiwen to death.

"Tianyuan mirror!," Ye Xiwen gave out a loud shout and Tianyuan mirror instantly flew out from his body and irradiated rays of scarlet light, forming a protective curtain around him. Only after this, Ye Xiwen finally relaxed and felt a little better.

At this time, he looked all around but couldn't find Chen Ruochen and Hua Menghan.

"Ah!" suddenly, Ye Xiwen heard a desperate cry and looked up, only to see that the old experts had been firmly clutched in the claws of that golden eagle. Their bodies had been pierced by the horrifying claws and the blood was endlessly streaming out from their wounds. A bone-chilling sea breeze blew and the entire area was filled with the smell of blood.

How could they possibly survive after being clutched in the fearful claws of that golden eagle? They struggled for a while but ultimately, died.

The golden eagle roared and seemed quite self-satisfied. While still clutching the corpses of the three old men, it immediately flapped its wings and soon disappeared into the horizon, leaving a long trace of golden light across the sky.

When the golden eagle disappeared from there, the sea finally

calmed down, although still turbulent because of the usual rough waves, but when compared with the dreadful waves from a while ago, it seemed quite tranquil.

After witnessing this scene, Ye Xiwen suddenly recalled reading about a mysterious bird in the myths and legends. This magical bird was called golden-winged eagle, a legendary giant bird which was famous for taking dragons as its food.

He only considered it a ridiculous legend initially, but after witnessing the legendary golden-winged eagle with his own eyes, he couldn't help but hold his breath. To think a mythical bird from ancient fables was actually living on this island.

This Demon Island was extremely dangerous, just like a wild forest from ancient times. Not to mention, it was a host to bad weather and all kinds of unusual demon beasts.

Ye Xiwen searched for Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen for a while, but couldn't even find a trace of the two. He could only give up and advanced towards the Demon Island.

He was aware of the fact that Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen were the experts of truth realm and shouldn't have any trouble breathing under water.

He continued the search inside the sea but was surprised to not see any demon beasts there, even though this part of the sea was supposed to be infested with several kinds of sea beasts. Of course, he didn't dare approach the dark clouds.....

Ye Xiwen walked for a day and night in the sea and finally reached the Demon Island.

The island was completely surrounded by pitch-black clouds.

This was a huge island, tens of thousands of miles in radius, floating in the boundless sea, while countless monstrous waves were crashing against it.

On the island, Ye Xiwen looked from afar and noticed that this was not so much of an island, but was more of a huge continent. The immense emerald-green forest appeared pleasant to the eye. One could hear loud beastly roars coming from the woods from time to time.

The terminus of the endless forest was actually a towering mountain, which was shrouded in dense fog. One could clearly see that it had a desolate atmosphere, which was continually spreading in all directions.

Moreover, precious medicinal plants were present everywhere on the island, including some special herbs for cultivation like several types of ginseng, white fungus, grass fire, and so on.

No wonder the Demon Island was so famous and attracted everyone's attention, after all, heavenly treasures and rare herbs were spread everywhere on this island.

Ye Xiwen looking for a place to rest, sat down cross-legged and began to meditate to recover the lost Zhen Yuan. In order to resist the aftermath of those attacks, he had almost depleted the reserves of Zhen Yuan in his body.

At this time, Ye Xiwen wasn't interested in collecting herbs and heavenly treasures because restoring strength was more important to protect himself on this island, more than anything else, and although many of these treasures were important raw materials for medicines, these were only so important for average experts. Considering Ye Xiwen's cultivation level, these things didn't have any significance.

Daytime passed quickly, and the island welcomed nightfall.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

Numerous roars of unknown origin started to come from the center of the island, where the towering giant mountain was located.

The noise from intermittent roars suddenly pulled him out of the meditation state.

The fearful sound of roars induced a chilling sensation in Ye

Xiwen's heart. From the time he stepped on the island and came all the way to this place to rest, he saw several demon beasts on the way and was already accustomed to a variety of roars, which simply couldn't affect his concentration, but these horrifying roars that began to arise from that far off giant mountain, after the nightfall, actually sent chills down his spine.

The roars coming from that giant mountain were similar to the shrieks of a ghost, and definitely didn't seem to belong to a living creature.

During the day, the mountain appeared to be shrouded in fog, but during the night, an endless amount of surging Deadqi would cover up the entire mountain area and also surge up into the sky, forming dense dark clouds.

The usual roaring sounds of various demon beasts would vanish during the nightfall, and for the rest of the night, only the fearful shrieks would continue to transmit throughout the island. The rest of the Demon Island was always strangely quiet during the night, except the huge mountain which was the only source of those terrible roars.

"It's very strange." At this time, Ye Xiwen was standing on a tall tree's branch and looking towards the huge mountain. The silver-colored starlight was sprinkled on his body, making him appear very cold and fierce.

"Well, that's quite a strong Deadqi and resentment!" Ye Mo said. "Cannot say how many people must have died to have caused such a dense accumulation of Deadqi."

"It's hard to guess the level of this powerhouse, fair to say, it will be very difficult to kill him, but the point is that what in the world happened to have caused such a terrible scene?" Ye Mo muttered.

Ye Xiwen looked at the giant mountain, surrounded by an encirclement of Deadqi, and frowned. This was an extremely terrible scene because the Deadqi was condensed to such an extent that it was visible even to the naked eye.

The dreadful roars lasted until dawn. When the stars gradually faded away, the roars also died down. After a while, the Deadqi also dissipated in thin air, as if nothing happened.

As the roars from the giant mountain disappeared, roars from all sorts of demon beasts began to resound throughout the island, just like the time when Ye Xiwen stepped on this island a day ago.

However, these beastly roars sounded pleasing to the ears when compared with the dreadful shrieks from last night.

After a night's rest, Ye Xiwen fully recovered. He was now sure of one thing that this Demon Island was several times more dangerous than he had imagined. Not only did he need to be careful of the other peerless geniuses, but this mysterious island itself was a terrible threat.

So, now was the best time to familiarize himself with the new place and find other people. Since, Ye Xiwen believed that he was not the only one who stepped on this island.

Meanwhile, he also needed to find the whereabouts of Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. Ye Xiwen believed in their strengths and knew that surviving shouldn't be a difficult task for them, so he just needed to scout the island and snoop around for any news about the two.

Although almost one thousand people would be setting foot on the demon island, very few would be of an average level. The remaining majority of the candidates would turn out to be extraordinary experts, each possessing high cultivation levels.

# Chapter 219: God's Descendants

---

The giant mountain was actually only a part of the vast sierra which crossed from the east to the west side of the Demon Island. It was hard to see the terminus of the sierra. Although the Demon Island was just an island in this boundless sea, its size was simply beyond the imagination of an ordinary person.

Ye Xiwen was flying through the woods, and suddenly from afar, there came intermittent sounds of ‘bang’ ‘bang’ ‘bang’, one after another, and caused terrifying tremors in the ground. He finally found the source of this noise in the form of large mammoths which came running from far away, trampling and crushing everything in their path, including some of the great towering trees that might have lived for over a millennia.

These mammoths actually looked like giant elephants, and almost each of them was about 30 feet tall, and their whole body was covered in brown hair. The two tusks were long, sharp at the tip and curved upwards, which made them appear very ominous and dreadful. Almost each and every one of them was at either truth fifth stage or in Small truth realm. Although Ye Xiwen had faced several monstrous beasts in the forest, they all had [retreated three day's march](#) to give way in the face of Ye Xiwen's superior strength; but right now, these ominous looking mammoths were actually pursuing him.

tuì bì sān shè: to retreat three day's march; to give way in the face of superior strength; a strategic withdrawal

“Ha!” Accompanied by a loud shout, a sword intention fell down from the sky.



“Puchi!” a mammoth was directly cut down; the blood gushed out from the large gaping wound as it fell down on the ground. Ye Xiwen’s sharp eyes instantly saw a hint of dark golden color, concealed in the dark red blood. There was a faint trace of golden color in the blood as if a golden thread was mixed in the crimson blood.

“What? Golden blood?” Ye Mo suddenly exclaimed in an astonished manner, “How is this possible? This is the characteristic of a god! So these mammoths are actually God’s descendants!”

“God’s descendants? What do you mean by that? You mean these mammoths turned out to be an immortal’s descendants?” Ye Xiwen said in an equally astonished voice.

God, the most formidable being among the most powerful creatures in the scope of the heaven and earth, and the most famous of whom was naturally the Devil God, who was well-known for his endless destructive prowess. The Devil God gradually fell from his throne and position, but there were some people who possessed immortality and continued to live for generations. They were incredibly formidable beings and became well-known in the ten thousand worlds, where some called them immortal sages and some called them gods.

In fact, there was a way to ascertain a God’s existence. A formidable immortal being contained golden blood in his veins, and their offspring also held golden blood in their body, but with the passage time, generation after generation, the golden blood

continued to grow thinner. Even so, the God's descendants possessed a natural talent and their practice speed was incomparably fast.

In their last conversation, Ye Mo was talking on this topic but Ye Xiwen didn't pay much attention. After all, he had never heard about God's descendants and neither did he believe in the existence of a creature called God.

Ye Xiwen was from Earth, and unlike most people there who worshipped different gods, he wasn't indulged in god worship, because he thought that god was a very formidable being and was simply beyond the comprehension of mere humans.

In other words, the ancestors of mammoths actually turned out to be as strong as the immortals?

Although he couldn't make a guess as to how many generations had already passed in the bloodline, he was still shocked that the so-called immortals actually existed in this world!

However, right now, Ye Xiwen didn't have time to ponder about this matter, because just then, he saw the fast approaching figure of a man far in the horizon.

Ye Xiwen took a closer look and saw a man, roughly thirty years old in appearance and dressed in a brilliant warrior's clothing. He was a grandiose looking man with somewhat rough facial features and a burly body.

“Hello brother!” The young man’s voice transmitted from afar and fell into Ye Xiwen’s ears, after travelling for miles as a sonic boom. The profoundness of his skill was simply unimaginable.

“Hey, brother., Ye Xiwen cupped his hands across his chest and said.

“It’s rare to see someone coming to this island so early.” This man had a matured appearance and appeared very forthright. A jolly man like him would certainly not treat Ye Xiwen as an enemy.

Although the Demon Island was called a genius meat grinder, not everyone was bloodthirsty. It was not a competition where only one person would get out alive. Since on such a dangerous island, one simply couldn’t afford to offend everyone.

Demon Island was going to stay open for a month, so the participants had a window of one month’s time to reach the island. After one month, the island would close down and would open only after a year.

“Great Wu State, Wu Shaoqun!” The man said with a smile.

“Great Yue State, Ye Xiwen!” replied Ye Xiwen.

“You do not mind that I am a person from Great Wu State?” Wu Shaoqun somewhat accidentally said. Although he meant it as a joke, but the fact was that Great Yue State and Great Wu State had a long border line, and one simply couldn’t imagine the number of

conflicts they have had for ages. When the state of Great Yue was formed and was relatively young, then Great Wu State had mobilized almost one million warriors to attack it. In the war, Great Yue State's founding emperor was seriously injured and ultimately died. Since then, both sides forged a deadly hatred for each other. In fact, Great Wu State was actually the most hated enemy of Great Yue State.

“Of course,” Ye Xiwen said with a smile, after all, he didn't have a sense of belonging to this country itself. All he cared about was his family and friends.

“Ha ha, good, even I don't care about such bullshit matters about hatred and all. It really tires me to death!” Wu Shaoqun laughed and said.

“You are a member of Great Wu State's royal clan, and if you don't care about all that then why should I?” Ye Xiwen also laughed and said. He could make out that this Wu Shaoqun was a relatively sincere and jolly person. It was actually rare to find a generous expert like him in this world.

Wu Shaoqun's surname was ‘Wu’ and was derived from Great Wu State's royal clan, which also indicated that he was actually a royal prince.

Although Great Wu State and Great Yue State were mortal enemies, Ye Xiwen's knowledge on the topic was quite limited.

The time of his stay in this world was fairly short, and since the

day he crossed over to this world, he had spent most of his time practicing martial arts.

“Ha ha, well said. No matter what nonsense is going on between our countries, it has nothing to do with us, martial artists.” Wu Shaoqun said with a smile.

No one knew for how many years, there had been a rare quiet border between the two states and it was already gradually evolving from hate between countries into a turf war.

“Ye Xiwen, why are you not together with the people of Great Yue State?” Wu Shaoqun asked.

“Actually, I arrived here with two fellow disciples of Yi Yuan School, but two days ago, we bumped into a golden eagle which was chasing down several legendary level experts. Their battle caused the destruction of our boat, and I was also separated from them.” Ye Xiwen said.

“Did you run into those idiots from the Heavenly Rock faction?” Wu Shaoqun asked.

“Do you know who they are?” Ye Xiwen asked.

“En!” Wu Shaoqun nodded and said, “They were part of a rising big influence in our Great Wu State. When they learnt about the legend of the Demon Island, they sent a lot of formidable experts to capture the entire island. In the end, the golden-winged eagle

killed numerous of their disciples and only a few old guys were able to escape from the island. But according to what you said, it seems they were chased down by the golden-winged eagle and ultimately perished at its claws.”

“Those idiots were too arrogant. Did they really take the Demon Island’s legend as a hoax? They once had a fearful influence, and were confident enough to plan a raid on the Demon Island, but in the end, they all died. And now, the weakened faction will soon break up into several small forces.” Wu Shaoqun said with a look of disdain in his eyes. Obviously, he didn’t have a favorable impression of them.

“Since you still haven’t found your people, why don’t you come and stay with us for the time being?” Wu Shaoqun invited him.

“Then excuse me.” Ye Xiwen was anyway looking for a gathering place for experts. There could be no better place than this to spread the news about Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. And perhaps, there, he might get some information about their whereabouts.

Both Ye Xiwen and Wu Shaoqun travelled for about 100 Li and finally reached a big mountain valley, where some warriors were gathered. All of them were truth level experts, and not just that, most of them were the experts of the truth fifth stage or above.

However, there were several among them who wouldn’t stand a chance against Ye Xiwen’s real strength.

Seeing Wu Shaoqun flying across the sky alongside a youngster in

black clothes, suddenly attracted the attention of several people.

A young man and a young woman walked over to welcome them.

“This is Liu Yueru, a disciple of Evil Moon valley.” Wu Shaoqun introduced her to Ye Xiwen. She was a very beautiful woman and dressed in a long yellow skirt. She had a peerless appearance and looked just like a celestial fairy, with beautiful eyes and smooth snow-white skin.

“That is Xiao Zhen, the strongest disciple of East China Sea’s Magic sect.” Wu Shaoqun said while pointing at a tall and handsome young man who looked roughly 20 years old.

“Brother Wu, this man is?” Xiao Zhen asked.

“His name is Ye Xiwen, a disciple from Great Yue State’s Yi Yuan School. He got separated from his group, so until he finds them, he will be staying here with us for some time.” Wu Shaoqun replied.

“Welcome!” Xiao Zhen said, but judging from his demeanor and the way he said it, it was quite apparent that he was looking down on Ye Xiwen.

After all, on the outside, Ye Xiwen appeared to have recently stepped into the truth fourth stage.

Such a cultivation level was actually considered a big feat among the ten countries of Southeast region, but now on the demon

island, it was considered nothing in the presence of the strongest geniuses of the younger generation. Only those of the truth fifth stage or above could command respect on this island.

Whether it was Wu Shaoqun, Xiao Zhen, or Liu Yueru, all of them were experts with their cultivation above truth fifth stage and possessed terrifying auras. There was no way their aura was inferior to that of the eighth prince.

As far as Xiao Zhen's rude attitude was concerned, Ye Xiwen was not angry or anything, after all, strength was the fundamental law of this world.

While facing these God's favored ones, Ye Xiwen really didn't have the qualification to be arrogant, but he was not discouraged. Their practice time was much more than his, and as long as there was enough time to practice, he would certainly be able to catch up to them, and eventually surpass them!



## Chapter 220: Broken Relations

---

These people were lucky and could be called elites among the peerless geniuses in their respective forces; otherwise, there was no way to be summoned by demon island bell.

Everyone had settled here and was waiting for more people to come, but it was only just the beginning. In the coming ten days' time, more and more people would continue to arrive on the demon island. Then, it would truly be the most intense time; after all, besides competing with each other, these experts would have to deal with this mysterious island's environment. However, at least the majority of them were not here to battle with others, but just to find various precious heavenly treasures, so there was no need to make enemies here and there.

Of course, at some point, they might have to compete over rare treasure, and then if necessary, they wouldn't hesitate to kill.

Ten days passed quickly, and during this period, more and more people arrived in this valley, and the number of gathered experts soon reached more than two hundred. Ye Xiwen did not stay here for a long time, every time he stayed for some time then set out in search of Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. And, he did not want to stay here for a long time, because to be honest he didn't want to join their alliance.

Yes, three days ago when Ye Xiwen returned from the search, he heard that an alliance had been formed during his absence. And it was made under the leadership of three super experts, namely Xiao Zhen, Liu Yueru and Wu Shaoqun. The three super experts

initiated the idea of forming an alliance and received many people's support; after all, if they could have the backing of an alliance then treasure hunt would be fairly easy and safe.

Of course, there were some ambitious people who didn't join the alliance.

Three days later when he arrived here, things had slightly changed and looked more formal, even the population had decreased in the valley. Initially, there were 200 experts gathered here, but now merely 60-70 people stayed back; probably as part of the alliance.

Ye Xiwen occasionally used to come here but only stayed for a while then used to leave in a hurry, so he didn't recognize several faces.

He didn't even know when they built a small city in the valley. However, considering the magical powers and capabilities of these truth level experts, building a small city from scratch shouldn't be too difficult.

Today, when Ye Xiwen arrived, he saw that a group of warriors had arrived on the Demon Island. The group consisted of ten men and was led by a tall skinny man, who was clad in leather clothing and had disheveled hair while there was an unchanging sinister and ruthless expression on his face.

In front of him, a huge formidable looking tiger was crouching on the ground and its roars were echoing throughout the valley.

It seemed like they were waiting for the city gate to open, and there were a few guard disciples stationed near the gate, which seemed a bit strange.

After some time, the city gate finally opened. When the skinny man saw the gate opening, he lifted his chin up, puffed out his chest, and walked forward. Other members of the group immediately followed after him and none of them dared to overtake him. However, suddenly, all of them were surprised to see that from the other side, a black figure took the lead and went ahead, meanwhile also overtaking the skinny man in the process.

A ruthless look appeared in that skinny man's eyes. He immediately used his mind connection with the tiger and ordered it to attack. A fierce and deafening roar resounded everywhere, and it suddenly transformed into a yellow and black lighting and leapt towards Ye Xiwen from behind, while keeping its big mouth opened as if to bite him to death.

The tiger's terrifying power was overflowing at this moment, and whether it was the guard disciples or the followers of the skinny man, all were trembling with fear. They were not strong enough in the face of such a beast, especially since they were mostly the experts of the truth first stage, truth second stage or truth third stage at most.

This tiger was at least a demon beast of the Small truth realm, so how could they not feel terror and threat from it?

For experts of this age, stepping into the truth realm itself was a great feat. Reaching Small truth realm was not something all could achieve at such a young age, except few exceptionally talented disciples like Xiao Zhen and handful of other experts.

Ye Xiwen was suddenly furious at how quick they were to start this inexplicable dispute, but he reacted very fast. He immediately took his long blade and chopped out a terrifying Bladelight towards the approaching tiger. This Bladelight was lightning fast, and in a blink of an eye, it rushed out and collided with the demon tiger.

"Puchi!"

The huge stature of that demon tiger was directly cut into two halves by the Bladelight and its blood sprayed out all over the ground. All of the disciples were perplexed because they thought that this would be the end of Ye Xiwen, they had never expected that he would turn out to be so powerful.

The tiger was a demon beast of Small truth realm, but its master was much more terrifying. He was an extremely strong expert of more than Small truth realm.

"How is this possible? It was a Small truth realm demon tiger and considered a frightening creature in the outer world, but was actually slaughtered in one blade attack. Who is this man and how is he so formidable?"

"Do you want to die?" The tall skinny powerhouse was furious,

and was about to attack, but suddenly, the figure of a handsome young man came flying from the valley and landed on the scene. It was none other than Xiao Zhen, but at this time, there was a cold look on his face.

"Ye Xiwen, are you trying to provoke Battling Heavens brotherhood?" Xiao Zhen glared at Ye Xiwen and shouted.

"I am not trying to provoke anyone and neither do I intend to stir up trouble. If I am not welcome here then I will leave this instant." Ye Xiwen looked calm and there was an ever tranquil expression on his face, but there was anger surging in his heart. This Xiao Zhen didn't even bother to know what happened here and directly put the blame on him. Ye Xiwen's flaming heart was restless with anger but he decided not to continue the conflict with Xiao Zhen, since there was a large difference between their levels.

"First, you kill my pet then you try to run away. Well, it's too late for that." The sinister looking skinny man said with a ruthless look in his eyes.

"Do not mess with me, or I'll slaughter you just like I slaughtered your pet." Ye Xiwen narrowed his eyes and fiercely said.

"Ye Xiwen, how dare you behave so arrogantly!" Xiao Zhen once again shouted out loud.

"Are you blind or what? Cannot you see who really is trying to provoke whom?" Ye Xiwen said in an anger-filled voice. Although he was aware of Xiao Zhen's tyrannical strength, he didn't care.

Even if he couldn't beat Xiao Zhen, he could just open his devil wings and get out of here. He was being passive for now because he didn't want to break his relation with Wu Shaoqun, therefore even though he was furious right now, he was holding himself so as to not completely ruin his relations with Battling Heavens brotherhood.

Immediately, Xiao Zhen felt that his dignity had been challenged while his sword-like fierce eyes were constantly staring at Ye Xiwen.

"Brother Xiao, I arrived here with people of my tribe at your invitation and this guy killed my most important partner. Today, if I do not kill him then it will be difficult to bear the hatred in my heart." The skinny tribal youth's insidious eyes were stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen.

"You seem quite eager to die. I'll gladly buy you a ride to hell." Ye Xiwen said in a calm voice, but his cold gaze was as if piercing the skinny man.

"You're really arrogant. Is this how you want to challenge our Battling Heavens brotherhood?" Xiao Zhen said and looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. If not considering the relationship between this boy and Wu Shaoqun then he would have already beheaded this rampant boy.

"Obviously, this is a matter between him and me, what does this have to do with Battling Heaven brotherhood? It is imperative that you keep on proclaiming the name of Battling Heavens brotherhood, because, in your eyes, it is just a tool to be used for

your convenience." Ye Xiwen's accurate words directly hit the mark.

Ye Xiwen wasn't afraid of him, and at the worst he would leave this place, after all, his cultivation level was far worse than that of Xiao Zhen, so fighting him was not an option.

But that was only for now because later, the situation might be different, therefore, he was not afraid of Xiao Zhen. And as far that skinny youth was concerned, Ye Xiwen was simply not paying attention to him.

The skinny man was certainly an extremely formidable powerhouse and was at the peak of the Small truth realm, but it was not enough to impress Ye Xiwen. After all, the skinny man's current battle strength was only comparable to Ye Xiwen's battle strength when he used to be on the truth third layer, and now, Ye Xiwen had already broken through to the truth fourth stage.

After listening to the words of Ye Xiwen, there was a sudden commotion among the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood. Everyone saw what happened there and they were certainly smart enough to figure out who was at fault here. It was the skinny man who first tried to kill Ye Xiwen, and when Ye Xiwen acted in self-defense, he was actually accused of provoking their brotherhood.

Xiao Zhen made an appearance and interfered, but if he had acted alone, nobody would say anything, however, he kept on proclaiming in the name of brotherhood, which was not a right thing to do. Why was he pulling them into this matter for no reason?

Indeed, they were now the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood, but they joined it just because they were looking for a backing which would provide protection. They didn't join the brotherhood to act as someone's lackeys and be treated as cannon fodder.

One must know, even the most ordinary members of Battling Heavens brotherhood were actually considered super geniuses at their respective native places, plus they were also the center of attraction in their sects. None of them was foolish enough to willingly act as a cannon fodder for someone else's sake.

Xiao Zhen also noticed the commotion among the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood, and his complexion suddenly turned unsightly.

He immediately looked towards Ye Xiwen but actually saw that his fierce eyes were full of hostility and killing intention. No one knew what Ye Xiwen was thinking and why he had not yet taken any action.

Ye Xiwen did not stay, just turned around and left, but he was actually secretly prepared to immediately fight back if someone tried to attack him.

But after this matter, he knew one thing that his relation with Battling Heavens brotherhood had completely broken off, even though there was no good relationship between them to begin with.



Xiao Zhen didn't know what to do until Ye Xiwen's figure vanished from there. He didn't do anything to stop Ye Xiwen and let him go, but the killing intention in his eyes was still unabated.

## Chapter 221: Gilded Tyrant Form

---

After breaking off his relations with Battling Heavens brotherhood, Ye Xiwen would need to figure out a new way of finding the whereabouts of Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen, but he did not regret it. He couldn't stand the other party's rampant attitude and the way they were trying to put blame on him again and again. If Xiao Zhen was not there, he would probably have slaughtered the skinny man right on the spot.

Ye Xiwen walked toward the depths of the Demon Island and arrived at a seemingly restricted area. This whole area was lush green with towering big ancient-looking trees, completely obscuring the sky.

"This Demon Island is too weird." Ye Mo's voice resounded in Ye Xiwen's mind, "I have spent so many years following the great Devil King on expeditions, but I have never seen such a strange place."

The quantity of Lingqi was adequate for the island and by far more ample than the outside world, but it was a place where demon beasts ran amuck. Even at Ye Xiwen's level, he always needed to be cautious, and from time to time, extremely frightening demon beasts would cross from the land or sky.

If Ye Xiwen's 'restraining breath technique' was not operating all the time, he simply wouldn't be able to roam around the island without being noticed.

Ye Xiwen's gaze fell upon a wreckage located in a far off place and he quickly flew over to there. The entire place had been nearly obscured by the towering ancient trees, but he was still able to see a huge white marble-paved plaza at the bottom.

A stone structure, placed right between two trees, attracted Ye Xiwen's attention. It was a huge stone, about 10 meters high. It seemed like the stone structure was cut off and only one-third of the original structure remained. He noticed that there were vague ancient seal characters inscribed on it. He went forward and stretched his hand to wipe off the dirt from the ancient seal characters.

Suddenly, at this moment, the ancient seal characters began to glow and the surrounding scenery suddenly transformed. Ye Xiwen suddenly felt his soul hanging in the sky, positioned right above a huge palace.

"Boom! Boom!"

Numerous electric snakes could be seen creeping in the black clouds and a terrifying thunder struck the palace. The palace couldn't withstand the enormous destructive power contained in the thunder strike and crumbled down.

"I am here, now come out!" Suddenly, a majestic voice resounded in all directions, "Buzz!" The low and dull muffled sound of a bell resounded and instantly sent out numerous sonic waves everywhere while several electric snakes could be seen lurking in the dark cloud, and seemed all prepared to bring down chaos in this world.

"Get lost!" Accompanied by a loud shout, a few hundred feet wide pillar of golden light went straight into the sky and dispersed the dark thundering clouds.

As the voice fell, a middle-aged man flew out of the wreckage of the palace and coldly looked towards the sky. He had a dignified bearing and was clad in a golden-colored emperor's robe.

In the sky, the scattered clouds suddenly agglutinated again and revealed a huge glowing eye in the center.

"If you dare to go against the heaven's will, you cannot do that without a fight!" A muffled voice echoed everywhere.

And a huge lightning maliciously struck down.

The scene had a crazy transformation in an instant.

Right before Ye Xiwen's eyes, the golden-robed middle-aged man suddenly jumped and a blast of flames spread beneath his feet as if produced by the terrifying explosion of countless stars.

"This world is unkind to a myriad of things and treats weak as worthless. If I were to become the god of this world, I will certainly spread the notion of fair and justice and create eternal peace!"

"Ye Xiwen!," Ye Mo's loud shout echoed in Ye Xiwen's mind and

forcibly pulled him out of the illusion.

Ye Xiwen could not help but hold his breath. Just now, he was completely trapped inside the illusion and if Ye Mo hadn't stopped him then he probably would have sunk deeper into the illusion, until his soul vanished without a trace.

This place was indeed too weird, and at this time, Ye Xiwen was suddenly able to understand what was inscribed on the stone. It was written in esoteric seal characters of some ancient sect.

But it was just a guess on his part since there was no proof available. He was still very perplexed after witnessing such a shocking scene inside that illusion.

"Judging from the surging [Yaoqi](#) in the sky, it may be because of a mighty Demon king's death. What I am trying to say is that this place is the tomb of a Demon King." Ye Mo said in a serious tone, "Ye Xiwen, maybe, this time, we have come to a wrong place. If this place is really the tomb of a Demon King then it is absolutely one of the most deadly places between heaven and earth!"

Yaoqi = Demon qi

Ye Xiwen frowned and said: "Fortunately, in the past, many people are said to have died in the conquest of the younger generation, but in comparison, not too many people died on the demon island."

"Maybe, but this place is a natural hunting ground. In the last few days, you have killed so many demon beasts and several among

them contained golden thread in their blood, although only a little, but enough to explain that they are immortal's descendants. And guess what, I have a way to extract the god's divinity from their blood, then you will be able to assimilate it into your body. That should help in upgrading your tyrant body technique and help you achieve the formidable golden body of gods. A supreme body and an incomparably tough flesh. It would grant you enough strength to tear even the gods to shreds!" Ye Mo couldn't hold the excitement surging inside his heart. How could he not when the god's power was right in front of their eyes. All they needed was to step forward and take it in their grasp.

For any God clan, awakening the blood of God was very precious for the children, and once it happened, they were immediately included in the elite training and were also called god's descendants. Not to mention, they were also targeted by enemies quite often.

One must know that god clans were all immortals and were rumored to have obtained immortality from the first gods. Perhaps the second or the third generation of God's descendants was still alive and was considered the closest existence to a God and didn't die easily. These old people were extremely tyrannical, capable of bringing chaos to the entire world. So, no one dared to annoy these God clan members, not just because they were immortals and extremely tyrannical, but also because they knew ancient martial arts and secret magical techniques.

This was common in all of the ten thousand worlds!

Just seeing God's descendants was difficult enough, let alone

killing them could easily cause a huge uproar and stir controversies!

Although the divinity contained in the blood of God's descendants was quite thin and weak, the quantity was extremely large. Perhaps, a year's time should be enough to collect enough divinities to completely practice gilded tyrant form!

Ye Xiwen had an old monster like Ye Mo on his side to help him. If it was an ordinary expert then it would be impossible for them to achieve such a thing, but if this year, he continued to absorb the divinity of these demon beasts, then gradually, his future practice would benefit a lot from this.

Perhaps, this was the reason why the practice speed was usually faster on the Demon Island, and this was also one of the important reasons why experts desired to come to this island.....

"Puchi!" a demon beast's scaly body was directly chopped into pieces by Ye Xiwen's long blade and its blood gushed out. As he expected, a golden thread was present in the crimson blood.

Under the guidance of Ye Mo, he began to absorb the divinity of that demon beast.

Ye Xiwen began to mobilize the tyrant body technique within his body, which formed a bronze sheen on his body, making it look stronger and tougher than before. Ye Xiwen looked slim, but it was only because of his natural build. No one should make a fatal mistake of underestimating his strength.

After fully absorbing the divinity, Ye Xiwen noticed a change occurring in his tyrant body technique. A slight trace of golden color had begun to surface on his bronze skin.

All of the gathered silky golden threads completely covered his body, and then only, Ye Xiwen finally learned that the gilded tyrant form was a success. It seemed that an overbearing and tyrannical might exploded inside his body, making his already enormous might even more terrifying.

After the assimilation of divinity was complete, the golden color of his skin gradually faded and turned back to bronze.

Ye Xiwen sighed and said: "This will not do, the divinity of a Small truth level demon beast can only slightly enhance my gilded tyrant form, and the overall progress is not even one out of ten thousand."

Ye Xiwen killed for one whole day and night and he slaughtered only god's descendants, but in the end, the overall progress in gilded tyrant form was accountable to only five out of ten thousand parts. At this rate, he would have to kill tens of thousands of god's descendants of Small truth realm in order to finish the practice of gilded tyrant form.

Perhaps the time period of one year was not enough to finish the gilded tyrant form!

And this was the only chance to finish the practice of gilded



tyrant form, after all, he was on the infamous Demon Island and it was filled with opportunities in the form of god's descendants.

If he was unable to complete this technique on the Demon Island, he might not find god's descendants elsewhere and gilded tyrant form would end up being an unfinished technique.

"I say we find those mythical demon beasts of beyond the legendary realm, for example, the golden-winged eagle that we saw earlier." Ye Mo said with a smile.

"Do you want me to die?" Ye Xiwen frowned and said.

"Well, you do not need to go for those formidable beasts when you can always aim for their eggs or cubs. For now, let's start by targeting the young ones."

## Chapter 222: World Law Fragment

---

"Roar!" a demon beast's roar resounded throughout the forest, and the color of the sky suddenly faded when the huge figure of a flame bird flew across the sky. The places it flew over instantly caught fire, and it seemed as if space itself was melting in its presence. Its dreadful roars were shaking the mountains.

Ye Xiwen was hiding amidst a thick patch of grass and felt relieved when he looked towards the furious flame bird, which was, at this moment, flying away towards the horizon.

In his arms, he was holding a big round egg, almost half his size.

This flame bird was a descendant of phoenix, an ancient god-beast; moreover, it was quite closely related as well. After reaching adulthood, a flame bird easily surmounted the legendary level.

Ye Xiwen was greatly relieved and looked at the glowing red egg held gently in his bosom. This was a big harvest.

In order to obtain this egg, it could be said that he had a narrow escape. Flame birds were very cautious while taking care of their own eggs. Of course, because of the very tight security, most people simply couldn't get close, but since Ye Xiwen relied on the magical properties of 'restraining breath technique,' he was able to approach the egg and then quietly carry it away.

Ye Xiwen found a cave then gently put down the egg. In the dark cave, the egg was exuding a fiery light.

Ye Xiwen did not hesitate to activate 'tyrant body technique' and began to absorb the egg's essence. It could be seen that the flame bird's chick had not yet taken shape inside the egg. From the appearance, it just looked like a vague collection of the essence.

"Bi!" Ye Xiwen heard a crisp sound, and a blazing red soul of the flame bird's chick, which flew out of the broken egg and was directly absorbed by him.

Ye Xiwen's bronze colored skin climbed up several levels while there appeared a faint trace of golden color on his skin. After all, the flame bird was the descendant of an ancient beast and was not very far apart in bloodline. Although he didn't absorb the essence of an adult bird, the inherent divinity contained in that egg was far beyond what he hoped to obtain by killing those other demon beasts, earlier.

According to his estimate, if he later killed an adult flame bird then the divinity obtained from its body should be enough to complete the practice of 'gilded tyrant form' in one fell swoop.

However, it was an impossible task at his current level, since an adult flame bird was a beast of an entirely different realm, and even legendary level experts didn't stand a chance in front of it.

In addition to divinity, there was no small energy contained in the egg, and once all of it was absorbed by him, his inner state slowly began to break.

He had spent a long time on the truth fourth stage, and even after practicing day and night, there was almost no sign of a breakthrough, but after absorbing the divinity present in the egg's essence, his stubbornly immobile cultivation finally started to break.

The next morning, Ye Xiwen finally opened his eyes and there was an excited look on his face.

After a night's time had passed, he had finally completely refined the flame bird's egg. His body no longer appeared the same as earlier, and occasionally, traces of golden threads could be seen floating in his eyes. It seemed as if the absorbed golden threads were concentrated in his eyes and whenever he activated 'tyrant body technique', his bright golden eyes flashed in the cave. Moreover, as he would continue to absorb divinity more and more, his entire body would be covered with a toughened golden layer, and by the time he would thoroughly carry out the 'gilded tyrant form' then his body would become incomparably tough and fearful.

To be precise, the practice of "tyrant body technique" didn't start in Xiantian realm, but in the early stages of Houtian realm. So, usually, even though the body would become very tough at the end of practice, the end result was generally completely different from the real thing.

'Tyrant body technique' was an ancient martial art and had been created by an ancient tyrant king. It was a fearful technique and the rumors said that its practitioner could actually slay gods and devils. Although tyrant body technique was an intrepid technique,

the 'gilded tyrant form' was its enhanced version, thereby making it even more dreadful.

Others certainly didn't dare to randomly make changes to the martial arts left behind by predecessors, especially when "tyrant body technique" was such a high-level martial art, but this was not the case for Ye Xiwen. Right after crossing the first layer of "tyrant body technique", he began to figure out his own comprehension of the technique. Although he didn't know much about the original thing, he believed that with the help of 'mysterious space', he should be able to comprehend this technique. Even though it might not become like the original, it would certainly not be inferior either.

Since the beginning of second layer of "tyrant body technique", Ye Xiwen began to have his own understanding and developed it in his own way. As a result, its comprehension reached unprecedented proportions, probably even more than that of the supreme master who invented it, after all, unlike him, Ye Xiwen had 'mysterious space' which helped him uncover and patch the loopholes.

So, in the end, Ye Xiwen dared to join the rank of Gods, and in doing so, he ended up developing his own technique, which he named 'gilded tyrant form'.

'Gilded tyrant form' was a tyrannical technique, and when compared to tyrant body technique on the same level, it was much more terrifying, after all, the divine power of Gods was used in it. Hence, its might was naturally going to be on an entirely different level.

Ye Xiwen was confident about his practice thanks to his stock of countless Ling Dans and spirit stones.

Compared to the beginning of the practice schedule for gilded tyrant form, Ye Xiwen was more pleased to have finally taken the most important step towards reaching the pinnacle of truth fifth stage, because his accumulation was really too vigorous, much more vigorous than anyone else.

When he was at truth third stage, his battle strength had reached the peak level of Small truth realm, and after the breakthrough to truth fourth stage, he had once again reached a satisfactory amount of accumulation, almost reaching the point where there should be a shift from quantitative to qualitative change, but there was still the need for a final push. And now with the help of flame bird's egg, the high-level life energy absorbed from it helped Ye Xiwen in finally attaining a qualitative change in his energy and he crossed the threshold, ultimately stepping into Small truth realm. Now, his battle strength was enough to beat the experts of truth sixth stage.

This meant that Ye Xiwen finally entered the ranks of the strongest experts on the Demon Island. Not to forget that this time, almost one thousand peerless geniuses had set foot on this island.

And among them, of course, the experts of truth first stage, second stage, third stage, fourth stage and fifth stage were in majority. However, the experts of Small truth realm were a rare presence, not to mention there were only 20-30 experts of truth

sixth stage and above.

Ye Xiwen had tasted the sweetness, and if he was able to complete the gilded tyrant form, his body would be toughened to what extent, no one could predict.

However, since he relied on the egg's energy to have a breakthrough, in the future, it would be difficult to reach the next breakthrough.

Later, he would have to continue accumulating in order to reach the next breakthrough!

On this island, besides a terrifying creature like the flame bird, there were several other tyrannical creatures, not to mention they had cubs or eggs. Basically, they were going to help Ye Xiwen in perfecting gilded tyrant form until he would transform into a fearful golden God.

One could imagine the kind of fate those pups were going to suffer.

But before Ye Xiwen could think more on this, suddenly, a loud ringing sound of bells began to transmit from a distant place, and along with that, a multi-colored light scattered in the sky and enveloped the entire island, in the form of a terrifying enchantment barrier.

"Ding!"

"Dong!"

"Ding!"

The intermittent ringing sound of a melodious bell began to resound unceasingly throughout the demon island, and even the demon beasts were excited all of a sudden.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

All of the demon beasts throughout the island were excited. They turned their faces towards the sky and began to give out long and loud roars as if trying to respond to the bell's call.

"The island is closing up!" Ye Mo said.

"En!" Ye Xiwen nodded, this also meant that they were about to enter the most brutal phase of fighting and competition on the island.

During the year, no one would have any means to contact the outside world. They would have to rely only on themselves, at the same time, everyone would also slowly reveal their true nature and



get involved in unscrupulous battles.

Sooner or later, the conquest for treasures would start, then things would start to get bloodier and more brutal!

Everyone on the island was still immersed in the colorful rays of light when the ringing bells sealed the island.

And, a rumor immediately swept across the island. Apparently, some people found world law fragment within a sierra.

Suddenly, this caused a sensation throughout the Demon Island. Perhaps experts of Xiantian realm might not know the significance of a law fragment, but that was not true for truth level experts, especially not for the super-genius experts, summoned on this island.

Regardless of what level of pious life a person had led, they must come in contact with world laws to progress further. World laws and principles were more like the essence of everything between the heaven and the earth. In order to practice further, one must grasp the essence of world laws.

This was also the only way to step into the legendary realm. There was no other way because the so-called truth realm was only a platform where one needed to prepare themselves for understanding the world laws.

Legendary realm experts were actually the tyrannical experts

who were able to comprehend world laws to a certain extent.

Although the truth level experts also comprehended world laws, they did so only to a very small extent. And it was only sufficient to help them rank up within the truth realm, but not enough to step into the legendary realm.

The so-called half-step legendary experts could vaguely touch the world laws, but weren't able to fully touch them, that's why they were still in a vague muddle-like realm and were unable to step into the legendary realm.

Just by relying on one's own insight, even peerless geniuses would find it extremely difficult and time consuming to comprehend world laws, which was the reason why there were several hundred true disciples in Yi Yuan School but only a handful of legendary experts.

To be continued

----

# Chapter 223: Next Encounter With Battling Heavens Brotherhood

---

Truth level experts only comprehended the basic world laws in order to prepare themselves for understanding complex laws in the future.

However, only after stepping into the legendary realm, experts began to have preliminary contact with advanced world laws.

But there was no easy way to comprehend these laws; in fact, most people simply didn't know what to do in order to comprehend world laws. Among nearly ten thousand people, only one person could comprehend a law on their own, and even on the Demon Island, a gathering place for super geniuses, not more than ten people had the ability to comprehend these laws on their own. Not to mention, this island was a gathering place for the supreme geniuses from the ten countries of the Southeast region. And these so-called super geniuses had been selected from millions of geniuses, and even after that, only a few were capable of self-comprehension. This proved the extreme difficulty of comprehending world laws in the truth level, but there was a way for them to make contact with advanced world laws.

And it was to obtain the world law fragments. A law fragment was such a rare and precious item that even legendary experts didn't have a way to obtain one, which showed the extent of its preciousness.

Corresponding to its degree of importance and the extent of its rarity, it was obvious that experts throughout the island burst with

joy and excitement.

The first law fragment was captured by Zhan Ying, the leader of the Demon Island's strongest alliance called Eagle union. According to rumors, he possessed earth shattering power and killed all those who tried to block his way. The first law fragment not only attracted lots of human experts but also many demon beasts, among which, some had intelligence and knew about the importance of a law fragment while others were clueless and were just following the wise ones.

Just one piece of law fragment led to the tragic death of more than twenty peerless geniuses. One could imagine the intensity of battle that took place.

The first law fragment appeared, followed by the second one, the third and the fourth one until the eighth law fragment appeared. This suddenly fired up the mood of many people; after all, these were law fragments. In the past, even if they were considered the topmost geniuses in their respective forces, but a law fragment was still out of their reach. And with the help of these fragments, promotion to the legendary realm would become an easy task.

And most importantly, by the time, the first four law fragments had already made an appearance, they all knew that not many fragments would come out after them, and the next one might be the last piece.

There were several experienced experts who knew the reason why these law fragments appeared, in fact, it was related to the sealed island. They speculated that this might be related to the

separation of this island's space from outside. When the island's space was separated, several world laws were also cut apart and were left behind in the form of fragments.

It was quite common for fissures to appear in space, and since one of them was a top-level genius, naturally they weren't ignorant like other people. They knew that all sorts of space cracks appeared in this world and many law fragments appeared in the surroundings of these space cracks. And over there, many people kept waiting for the fragments to appear but they mostly belonged to a big influence. Not to mention, these forces were tyrannical and weren't like Yi Yuan School that dominated only a small part of a state, instead they dominated an entire continent.

Moreover, the space around those cracks had many threats; after all, there was no way to find out what kind of unknown world was present on the other side of the broken space. It might end up being a terrifying world like the devil world.

All in all, even for them, the law fragments were too precious to lose.

Not to mention, the space surrounding the island was slowly consolidating, hence the law fragments were getting fewer and fewer. On the first day, two law fragments appeared at once, but now, they were appearing less and less often.

Everyone was excited.

While there was still anticipation in the eyes of everyone, the

ninth piece of world law finally appeared. And, even Ye Xiwen was looking forward to obtain this one.

Because by observing Tianyuan mirror, Ye Xiwen found out that the island's space had completely consolidated and had stabled down, which also meant that it might be the last piece of law fragment.

"Do not have too high hopes, since you are not like them." Ye Mo smiled and said, "You are the next great Devil King, so how can you possibly be like them? You must take the unprecedented path and must make your own path. Of course, this is a shortcut but if you take it then your future achievement will be limited."

Ye Mo had not given up on the plans of making Ye Xiwen the next Great Devil King, but Ye Xiwen ignored what he said just now because he was already accustomed to such talks. Almost every day, Ye Mo had been talking about it again and again, but from Ye Xiwen's indifferent attitude, it was apparent that he was not at all interested.

"There are a lot of people who will integrate the law fragment into their body, and on successful completion, the body will start resonating with the law." Ye Mo said, "But integrating the law this way is actually a gamble of life and death. If the development potential of integrated law is stronger, then their future development potential will be stronger as well. However, if the development potential of integrated law is poor, then their future development potential will be nothing."

"But if the comprehended law is compatible with them, then later

in the future, they can enjoy boundless prospects." Ye Mo explained.

"But still, I can refer to it, right?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"No matter what, regardless of whether I am going to use it or not, I have already decided to seize this ninth law fragment for myself." Ye Xiwen clenched his fist and said.

Ye Xiwen and Ye Mo immediately rushed in the direction where the ninth piece had supposedly made an appearance. After a while, they arrived at a very large open space and saw the ninth law fragment floating in the sky.

"Die!"

"Kill them all, this law fragment is mine!"

Numerous battle cries could be heard reverberating in the mountains, and in the forest, the corpses of over a hundred experts could be seen lying on the ground. Various martial arts were rumbling in the field and magical tools could be seen dancing in the air. The whole scene simply resembled an [Asura](#) battlefield.

[Asura](#)

"This is more intense than we imagined." Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen looked from afar and saw that Battling Heavens brotherhood was at war with another alliance, and at this time, two formidable leaders namely Xiao Zhen and Liu Yueru were going all out and were rapidly pressing the other alliance.

Ye Xiwen felt somewhat strange when he didn't see Wu Shaoqun.

Now, the demon island was bustling with dozens of alliances, large and small. The strongest among them was Eagle Union, with its weakest member being an expert of truth sixth stage.

Soon, the alliance, which was fighting with Battling Heavens brotherhood, realized that they weren't a match for the opposite party and quickly withdrew.

Ye Xiwen was carefully observing the situation on the battlefield, but suddenly, a huge axe was thrown over towards him at a lightning speed and instantly arrived in front of him.

Ye Xiwen hastily retreated few steps, and suddenly, a huge double-edged axe severely struck the ground and got embedded in it. With a loud 'Bang', the surrounding land in the radius of few hundred meters trembled with shock.

Ye Xiwen was suddenly furious since he had just avoided being chopped in half.

This sneak attack was too outrageous.



Ye Xiwen looked up and saw that it was none other than that skinny tribal youth whose pet tiger had been slaughtered by him.

Ye Xiwen stared coldly at the skinny youth, who was also keeping a close eye on him. Then, Ye Xiwen slowly walked towards the double-edged axe, grabbed its handle and sent a burst of Zhen Yuan into the tool in order to gain the control over it, then gave a cold glance to that skinny youth.

Ye Xiwen immediately twisted his waist backwards and hurled the long axe.

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

The huge axe went spinning and chopping the air like a fearful tornado, towards the skinny youth. This tornado was lightning fast since Ye Xiwen had quickly used some of the raw might of the gilded tyrant form, while throwing the axe.

"Puchi!" his blood, like a streaming fountain, splashed all over the ground, when the huge axe chopped him into two halves and stubbornly nailed itself to the ground. There was a look of shock and disbelief while he kept on staring at Ye Xiwen. He never imagined that Ye Xiwen would turn out to be so strong.

"Ye Xiwen, it's actually you, so you are really going to oppose us?" Xiao Zhen's frightening roar echoed throughout the battlefield. Right before his eyes, Ye Xiwen directly killed the skinny youth and this was no different from throwing a severe slap on his face.

"Isn't he?" Liu Yueru muttered when she clearly recognized Ye Xiwen. Wu Shaoqun invited this boy to stay with them, but he left soon afterwards, and later she heard that some trouble occurred and he broke off his relation with Battle Heavens brotherhood and never appeared again.

But this time, even the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood appeared confused when they saw Ye Xiwen, after all, in front of their eyes, he killed their comrade. No matter how one looked at this, it was apparent that he was not a friend.

"It's quite simple. You see, he wanted to kill me so I killed him. It's that simple!" Ye Xiwen said indifferently but there was a brutal look in his eyes. Then, he slowly walked towards the central committee of Battling Heavens brotherhood, as if dozens of other members simply didn't exist at all. He approached the leaders of the brotherhood and bravely stood right in front of them.

## Chapter 224: Completely Suppressed

---

"It's quite simple. You see, he wanted to kill me so I killed him. It's that simple!" Ye Xiwen said indifferently but there was a brutal look in his eyes. Then, he slowly walked towards the central committee of Battling Heavens brotherhood, as if dozens of other members simply didn't exist at all. He approached the leaders of the brotherhood and bravely stood right in front of them.

"Do you really want to fight with us and treat us like your enemy?" Xiao Zhen asked coldly.

"Your enemy? It seems like you are repeatedly trying to start a fight with me." Ye Xiwen said with disdain.

He wasn't some weakling who would lie down and take punches.

Ye Xiwen looked at the law fragment which was floating above the center of the field. It was exuding a faint pattern of light.

Ye Xiwen indifferently said: "I will take this law fragment and consider it as an apology from your side."

"How dare you!" Xiao Zhen was suddenly furious. They were the first to obtain news about the ninth fragment's appearance, and then they had to fight and win an arduous battle to obtain it. And now, this Ye Xiwen actually wanted to take it away from him?

"Ye Xiwen, first you kill our comrade, and now you are trying to

snatch away this hard-earned law fragment. Have you gone out of your mind?" this time, it was Liu Yueru who spoke, after all, Ye Xiwen was somehow related to Wu Shaoqun so she tried her best to not sound very rude.

"This is a law fragment, you and I are well aware of its value. As long as you hand it over to me, I am willing to write off the resentment between us." Ye Xiwen indifferently said.

"As if we will listen to you!" Xiao Zhen was extremely furious and his figure instantly turned into a streamer of light as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

The long sword in his hand released a terrifying Swordlight, which instantly arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

Gilded tyrant form!

Ye Xiwen instantly activated gilded tyrant form, and his entire body turned bronze in color. In the sunlight, it seemed as if he was a reincarnation of an ancient god. Ye Xiwen raised his hand which transformed into a claw and directly crushed that Swordlight to smithereens, while at the same time, his other palm turned into a dragon. The huge dragon opened its mouth and flew towards Xiao Zhen.

Xiao Zhen barely managed to evade this attack and that huge dragon nipped on the piece of ground, where he was standing an instant ago, and blasted a big hole in it.

"Well, I never thought that I was actually mistaken about your strength." Xiao Zhen was short of breath and said with an anxious smile, "Not just me, everyone is mistaken about your strength, including Wu Shaoqun. I didn't expect that your actual strength would be so profound."

Xiao Zhen never thought that Ye Xiwen would actually be so powerful that even a truth sixth stage expert like him would feel overwhelmed.

However, since he never realized it before, there was a feeling of being fooled in his heart!

"But your luck will stop here because making an enemy out of Battling Heavens brotherhood is your biggest mistake!" Xiao Zhen roared and rushed towards Ye Xiwen, while simultaneously releasing a terrifying Swordlight towards him.

By this time, the gilded tyrant form had been mobilized to the extreme, and Ye Xiwen looked like an ancient overlord reborn. His overwhelming imposing aura instantly ran towards Xiao Zhen.

Swordlight and domineering imposing aura maliciously hit together.

"Boom!" accompanied with a loud noise and layer after layer of shock waves, an incomparably bright light swept away in all directions.

"Boom!" a big hole instantly appeared on the ground where the explosion took place.

Ye Xiwen's bronze skin was glowing in the sun, and there was a trace of golden color in it, making him appear like a divine being, a golden god of war.

Everyone froze when they witnessed this scene, especially the people of Battling Heavens brotherhood. Some of them knew Ye Xiwen but never expected that he would be able to defeat their boss.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Both sides mercilessly and relentlessly shot at each other. Ye Xiwen's palm transformed into a dragon and without giving an opportunity to Xiao Zhen to react, it completely suppressed him.

Xiao Zhen was depressed because he never thought that he would be suppressed like this by Ye Xiwen. This was like the most ridiculous joke in the entire world.

He never thought that Ye Xiwen, a guy whom he underestimated and simply never paid attention to, would thoroughly suppress him like this.

The two men went all the way into the woods, and were as fast as lightning, fighting along the way and destroying everything in their path. Their violent and immense energy was destroying the surrounding forest bit by bit!

Complexions of the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood suddenly paled. Such a battle was extremely terrifying, although they were also known as gifted disciples, they could never dare to become opponents of those two. These two men were insanely powerful, to the extent that the ordinary experts of truth sixth stage weren't their match. In other words, these two could be considered as super experts even on the truth sixth stage.

And Ye Xiwen could be called the king of the experts of truth sixth stage.

Xiao Zhen's incredible fearful long sword was capable of destroying the hardest of defenses, but Ye Xiwen was even more fearful. He actually stopped this long sword with his bare hands, which actually left Xiao Zhen in an unbearable panic-stricken state. What kind of dreadful body was this?

Unexpectedly, his Swordlight was unable to put even a scratch on Ye Xiwen's body.

Ye Xiwen's invincible body was just like an absolute impenetrable defense.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Ye Xiwen's palm attack gave rise to a wind blade which fiercely clashed with Xiao Zhen's long sword and the horrifying force made him tremble, making him lose his footing.

"Bang!" Xiao Zhen was sent flying several miles away, hitting several ancient towering trees on the way.

This scene made so many people look unbelievably at Ye Xiwen, as if they were looking at a monster. They were well aware of the fact that Xiao Zhen was a very powerful man and undoubtedly deserved to be their leader, but just because they knew this, they couldn't ignore Ye Xiwen's tyrannical strength, which was able to suppress their leader to such an extent.

Ye Xiwen instantly flew forward, chasing after Xiao Zhen's flying body, and a large dragon claw suddenly collided with Xiao Zhen's long sword. The sword exploded and split into fearful rays of light that immediately swept off and spread in all directions.

Xiao Zhen was also hit by the fearful blast and spat out a mouthful of blood.

But at this time, Liu Yueru finally made a move and instantly waved her long blue sword, throwing a blue Swordqi towards Ye



Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen took a casual side-step and effortlessly evaded that Swordqi.

Ye Xiwen stood there firm like a mountain, and slowly turned his face towards Liu Yueru. Her complexion suddenly paled as she never wanted to attack him, she was just trying to save Xiao Zhen. She, then, clenched her fists and lightly said: "Ye Xiwen, since you want this law fragment, we won't take it. I hope it's possible to write off the grudge between us with this."

Hearing Liu Yueru's words, Xiao Zhen was depressed to the point of vomiting blood, but he also knew that she was right. Ye Xiwen was extremely terrifying and no one in the entire Battling Heaven brotherhood could possibly dream of taking him on.

Only he knew the feeling of terror and dread he had to go through just now while facing Ye Xiwen. It was like facing a violent storm head on, which made him choke several times. He was doing his best to survive as his battle with Ye Xiwen was no different from a desperate battle for survival.

Just for the sake of survival, he would have to give up on the law fragment. He had been the leader of the younger generation for several years, but in front of Ye Xiwen, he collapsed at the first blow.

Ye Xiwen seemed entirely different from before and this aggrieved his heart even more.

However, Xiao Zhen knew that her words were right. If Ye Xiwen lost his cool, he would really end up obliterating their entire existence. Not to forget, on the Demon Island, there were no elders to save their asses from Ye Xiwen.

The strong commandeered the world while the weak became their game, it was that simple.

Ye Xiwen didn't care about what they were really thinking. Although Xiao Zhen was powerful, but according to Ye Xiwen, he still wasn't an opponent of the eighth prince.

Ye Xiwen had a profound impression of the eighth prince's strength. Ye Xiwen was impatient about enhancing his strength. His strength was at the peak of truth sixth stage and if he was to fight the eighth prince at his current strength, then he would be at great disadvantage. But if Ye Xiwen continued to enhance his cultivation on the Demon Island as planned, it would be hard to guess his level until his next meeting with the eighth prince.

After hearing Liu Yueru's words, Ye Xiwen lightly said: "As long as you do not cause any trouble for me, I will naturally let you go."

Liu Yueru understood what Ye Xiwen meant. The fear of Ye Xiwen was deeply embedded in her heart, not to mention it had intensely impacted on her mind as well. Ye Xiwen's reservoirs were too deep and profound. Earlier, when he arrived with Wu Shaoqun, he was still at truth fourth stage and his aura was quite ordinary, but now, all of a sudden, she came to know that it was all

fake; was it seriously possible for a fourth stage expert to dominate a sixth stage expert?

But what she did not know that earlier, Ye Xiwen really wasn't her opponent.

## Chapter 225: Law Crushed

---

"Where is Wu Shaoqun? Why is he not with you people?" Ye Xiwen asked in a dull voice.

At the mention of this, Liu Yueru's complexion slightly changed as she said: "There was a clash of opinion between him and us, so he left."

Just from the look on her face, Ye Xiwen guessed that something was off, but he did not interrogate further.

At this time, the crowd suddenly exclaimed that the law fragment had started to distort as if trying to escape from there and return to the place where it really belonged.

The crowd continued to shout, and looked extremely anxious, but at this time, Ye Xiwen finally jumped up and flew straight towards the law fragment, stretched out his hand and grabbed it.

"Stabs!" the anomalous fragment abruptly cut a terrible wound on Ye Xiwen's palm.

When the spectators saw Ye Xiwen directly reaching out to grab the law fragment, suddenly, the feeling of exultation spread in their hearts. After all, they were going to see how Ye Xiwen would be torn to pieces by the fragment.

One must know that this was no ordinary glass fragment or

something, but a real space fragment. It didn't originate from a material existence but directly separated from the physical existence of space. Just like a person's reflection in a mirror that looked intact when the mirror was intact. But, as soon as the mirror was broken, the entire person's figure was also fragmented and changed back to the reality.

No one would dare to directly grasp a law fragment. This was the reason why Battling Heavens brotherhood had made a lot of preparations. They had brought several magical tools to catch this law fragment.

How could someone directly hold a law fragment? Ah, it was as if this person was courting death, but irrespective of what they assumed, Ye Xiwen was not torn to pieces. Only his palm was slightly injured and bleeding, although he quite awkwardly dropped from the sky to the ground, he was still standing and looked alright. This suddenly caused commotion in the surrounding crowd.

"My God, how is he able to hold a law fragment in his hand? He looks like an ancient mythical god reborn."

"He is too fearful! How can he possess such a tyrannical body? No wonder he was able to suppress our chief from the outset. Having this kind of flesh is really insane!"

"What we are witnessing is a miracle, isn't it?"

Nobody could achieve such a feat, at least they had not seen

anyone do it before, but Ye Xiwen did it right in front of their eyes and suddenly shocked the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood. In fact, at this time, even the words weren't coming out of their mouths, including from the mouth of the latest stepping stone, Xiao Zhen, who appeared quite depressed and was looking at Ye Xiwen with a baffled look in his eyes.

Ye Xiwen's bright red blood sprayed out from his palm, and actually contained a trace of golden thread. It was the result of divinity refined and assimilated by Ye Xiwen in his body.

At this time, Ye Xiwen was incomparably amazed since this law fragment was too horrifying. Even though he was well prepared, with a protective cover of Zhen Yuan on his body, and he had also activated tyrant body technique, his palm was still instantly cut open.

Xiao Zhen's Swordlight was unable to put even a scratch on his hand, but this blade law fragment was incredibly terrifying. Moreover, without feeling a shred of resistance, it instantly cut through his defenses and inflicted a cut wound on his palm.

Like in his previous life, when Ye Xiwen used to easily cut through a piece of plastic foam with his finger, without feeling any resistance.

Perhaps the fearfulness of 'tyrant body technique' was beyond the comprehension of this world, but even so, its defense was easily cut open by the law fragment, cutting all the way to the bones. If Ye Xiwen had not immediately activated 'gilded tyrant form' and used the power of divinity, his palm might have been

chopped off by now.

However, if 'tyrant body technique' was practiced to its peak level then it was possible for the practitioner to use bare hands for tearing off space, but right now, Ye Xiwen's skill was not that high. Let alone tearing the space with bare hands, his palm was almost cut off by a law fragment. Fortunately, Ye Xiwen managed to escape from this tragedy and the credit would entirely go to the divinity.

The law fragment was struggling in vain and trying to escape. From the instant it was separated from the space, it was a separate entity with its own consciousness. If it could run away and find a place to hide, then after tens of thousands of years, perhaps, it would take the shape of an incomparably fearful expert with in-depth knowledge about the world law lingering inside it.

"Bang!" the law fragment suddenly broke free from Ye Xiwen's grasp, and his blood spattered as it took off instantly and fled towards the horizon.

"Look, the law fragment is escaping. I wonder what Ye Xiwen will do next."

"Even the law fragment doesn't like him!"

"Exactly!"

Several members of Battling Heavens brotherhood laughed and

ridiculed him. As for them, it was the only thing they could do to retaliate against Ye Xiwen.

However, Xiao Zhen and Liu Yueru were stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen, eagerly waiting to see what he would do next.

Ye Xiwen was not in a mood to come to terms with that law fragment. As soon as it escaped, he also immediately flew towards it and his hand instantly transformed into a huge coiling dragon. The coiling dragon was enveloped in a golden-colored light, because of the divinity mixed with Zhen Yuan, and made it seem as if the dragon god himself had descended in this world.

Ye Xiwen's dragon claw was like a raging sea, scratching and tearing the world. A plume of divinity spread in the sky, and at that moment, it directly caught the law fragment. The divine element and law fragment had a fierce friction with each other in the hand of Ye Xiwen, and terrifying intermittent explosions took place as if resembling the birth of the universe.

Using the divinity to firmly bind a law fragment was something only Ye Xiwen could achieve. It was simply unimaginable for other people to accomplish this.

Everyone was shocked because they never thought that Ye Xiwen would actually be valiant enough to once again catch and directly hold the fleeing law fragment in his hand.

"His body, is it really a human body? It's like he has transplanted the body of a devil in his own body."



"He is incredibly strong. I wonder who can be his match in the future."

"With such strength, he can definitely be called a supreme level expert in the younger generation."

"No one will dare to grasp a law fragment in their hand, but he actually did, which is simply unimaginable."

Ye Xiwen grasped the law fragment in his hand and crushed it. In a flash, the law fragment crumpled and left everyone in a stunned state. Everyone was dumbfounded when they witnessed the law fragment being crushed to a powdered state in Ye Xiwen's palm.

A law in itself was not visible to human eyes, but as a fragment, it was very hard and sharp. Even a simple touch of law fragment could be fatal.

But Ye Xiwen extraordinarily dared to grasp it. Moreover, he conveniently crushed it, as if it was nothing.

Immediately, countless people exclaimed because this was simply a crime in their eyes. This was not just a casual heavenly treasure, but a precious law fragment. After all, it was a treasure which could help them in stepping into the legendary realm.

Witnessing this kind of treasure, for them, was an extremely rare case that occurred only once in a hundred years, and even if they

could not obtain it, why waste it like this? Right in front of their eyes, Ye Xiwen ruined a rare and extremely precious treasure.

# Chapter 226: Overnight Fame

---

If you want to step into the legendary realm, you must spend decades finding answers to the questions posed by the secrets of world laws, and you must successfully manage to answer all of the featured questions, over the years, in order to pass the test.

However, just now, the same priceless list of questions had been torn to pieces by Ye Xiwen. Wasting such a valuable treasure, in the eyes of everyone, was a serious crime.

But in Ye Xiwen's opinion, crushing this law fragment was no big deal, especially because he had 'mysterious space' in his mind and it could help him in restructuring the broken information, then he could completely absorb and comprehend it.

Ye Xiwen chose to crush the law fragment because keeping it intact was too dangerous. While he was holding it in his hand, it continued to cut and injure his palm, and if he was not careful, then it might cut through his whole body. He also knew that Battling Heavens brotherhood would surely spread the news about this incident and it might attract tyrannical experts to track him down. So, he decided to destroy the law fragment in front of everyone.

On the Demon Island, a lot of tyrannical experts had formed alliances, for example, the Eagle Union consisted of several experts of truth seventh stage, a few experts of truth eighth stage and some terrifying existences of above truth eighth stage as well. And, even the weakest members were at truth sixth stage.

However, was this really the extent of the current younger generation?

Ye Xiwen did not believe in that, after all, he had seen that Taoist priest earlier, but was unable see through the priest's cultivation level. He was using a high-level agility skill and must have had a very high cultivation level. Ye Xiwen believed that there were a lot of hidden experts like him on this island, and just to be on the safe side, he didn't want to attract their attention.

Not to forget, the eighth prince had not yet made an appearance. There was a possibility that he was hiding somewhere on the island and practicing, probably, waiting for an opportunity to kill Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen didn't want to waste time on these things. He would prefer exploring this mysterious Demon Island.

He had spent a month's time on this island but only explored the peripheral zones. He still didn't know what was present in the depths of the Demon Island.

While holding the crumpled debris of law fragment in his hand, Ye Xiwen flew away from there and soon disappeared in the horizon. Although the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood were filled with hate and grinding their teeth, no one dared to pursue Ye Xiwen.

After all, when a tyrannical expert like Liu Yueru chose not to battle with Ye Xiwen, how could they then possibly think about

going after him?

The impression of Ye Xiwen's incredible strength was deeply seared in their hearts.

The news about the ninth law fragment instantly attracted the attention of many people. Excluding the two law fragments that fell into the hands of demon beasts, a total of six law fragments were seized by human experts. And now, they were shocked to find out from the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood that the ninth law fragment was actually seized by a boy named Ye Xiwen.

But Ye Xiwen's name became famous overnight. Counting out Wu Shaoqun, there were two peerless experts of truth sixth stage in Battling Heavens brotherhood, making it one of the strongest alliances on the Demon Island.

This was just like stealing food out of a tiger's mouth. The news about Xiao Zhen's pathetic defeat at the hands of Ye Xiwen really shocked the entire Demon Island. Not to mention, in the presence of so many members of Battling Heavens brotherhood, the two leaders of the alliance willingly handed over the law fragment to Ye Xiwen. Just what kind of strength could make it possible? Eventually, the rumors put Ye Xiwen among the numerous powerhouses of the Demon Island.

However, the news about Ye Xiwen crushing the law fragment made everyone jump up from shock. If he didn't want it then why did he have to waste it like this?

They were cursing Ye Xiwen for such a foolish act, but they couldn't overlook the fact that he was formidable enough to hold a law fragment in his hand and casually crush it. This was solid proof that he was indeed incredibly strong. No mortal could do such a thing and survive!

In their eyes, Ye Xiwen suddenly became a very mystical and horrifying existence, and at the same time, there were several experts who put down the thought of looking for Ye Xiwen. Once a law fragment was broken, it turned completely useless, as if tearing an exam question paper to shreds. And who would go looking for a tyrannical powerhouse who was capable of crushing a law fragment?

In the end, things turned out just the way Ye Xiwen wanted.

Anyway, in order to use a law fragment, one would need to be at least at the half-step legendary level, and on this island, there were no experts of such level, and even if there were, no one dared to entertain such a terrifying idea.

Just the way elderly fishermen did not dare to entertain the idea of monstrous tides, waiting to ambush them in the sea.

Somewhere on the demon island, the eighth prince, clad in royal clothes, was sitting in a cave and practicing an outstanding technique. The shadowy figures of an Azure dragon, a phoenix, a white tiger and a black tortoise were unceasingly glittering around the eighth prince while his aura was getting more and more formidable with each breath.

After hearing the rumor about Ye Xiwen, suddenly, a cold smile appeared on his face.

"I will let him enjoy for some time."

His voice echoed throughout the cave.

Just because others could not comprehend from a crushed law fragment did not mean that Ye Xiwen couldn't comprehend from it either. He had the help of mysterious space, which could help him in reconstructing and comprehending shattered or lost information. The only thing needed for that was Lingqi, and now with the help of upgraded Tianyuan mirror, the daily production rate of Ling Dans had increased from 500 to 700.

For ordinary martial techniques, this was enough, but not for comprehending a world law!

The fundamental principles of this world were actually the final analysis of a particular phenomenon. For example, the sun always sets in the west was one law, water always flows from higher gravitational potential to lower gravitational potential was another law, but none of the above mentioned laws explained the real reasons behind the phenomena.

However, in the legendary realm, experts tried to understand world laws to a deeper level, by tackling the questions such as why water flowed downhill instead of going uphill. And for other experts, it might be very difficult to figure out the real reason

behind these laws, but the same was not true for Ye Xiwen.

This time, being a person from the earth was his biggest advantage in this world. Although there were a lot of powerhouses in this world, very few of them were inquisitive and, took their own strength for granted, never questioning why they possessed such strength.

All they needed to do was follow their predecessors in order to enhance their strength. There was a constant ongoing race with time in which they needed to cultivate and enhance their cultivation level, and at the same time, they needed to comprehend various martial techniques. They just needed to reach a certain level and comprehend martial techniques, even at the cost of not really knowing the reason behind them. It was not like they didn't want to know; instead they did not need to know because time was a very tight factor during their practice. Xiantian level experts only had a lifespan of two hundred years, and it was even less for Houtian level experts. There was no time for the experts to thoroughly understand each and every theory they were practicing. They were just following the path followed by their predecessors. In short, they were first focusing on cultivation and increasing their lifespan and would consider understanding things on a deeper level, later on.

It was just like the exam-oriented education system from Ye Xiwen's previous life. The college entrance examination was a node and there was a total of twelve years from the beginning of elementary school education till the college entrance examination. As soon as you enroll in the school, the countdown of 12 years to college entrance examination begins. The teachers will begin to fill various types of concepts in your head, and it doesn't matter



whether you understand them or not, you must deal with several intermediate examinations until you ultimately face the college entrance examination.

But in this world, the node was life itself. A martial artist's life was long when compared to an ordinary person, but in order to achieve longer lifespan, they must cultivate and keep practicing and they were always short of time, so most of the time, it was necessary to give up on something to gain something necessary.

And after stepping into the legendary realm, they finally started to catch up by cramming up ferociously. They must begin to study very thoroughly, even about the easiest of laws and must find answers to the simplest of questions such as why does the sun set in the west?

This was a huge shift in practice style and not everyone could withstand this abrupt transformation. This was the problem of so-called fixed thinking, so only a small number of people could get used to this reversed notion, then continue to practice on the long road leading to a pious life.

However, there was a shortcut to all this; and it was none other than the law fragment. A law fragment was like an encyclopedia, although some people never understood why the sun sets in the west, they could still manage to find out from the encyclopedia that the reason was actually the earth's rotation.

A long time ago, someone did a lot of research and concluded that earth's rotation was the reason why the sun sets in the west. Now, anyone could just read the conclusion in a book and understand

the reason behind this law, so there was no need for self-comprehension anymore.

Moreover, this was a question of ideas and could be reversed very easily.

But for Ye Xiwen, this kind of thing was normal, although he did not possess formidable strength in his past life, he had an inquisitive attitude. He was a curious guy in the past life and knew the importance of getting to the bottom of something in order to understand it better.

Therefore, Ye Xiwen had an advantage over others, and because of this, even though he seized a law fragment, it would still not hinder him from being inquisitive.

The crushed law fragment was absorbed into the mysterious space then Ye Xiwen began to burn a lot of Ling Dans which then transformed into Lingqi, which was injected into the mysterious space, little by little. This began to reorganize the sudden influx of information bit by bit.

## Chapter 227: Shuffles

---

Ye Xiwen spent almost one month in an unceasing absorption of the law fragment in its powdered state.

During this month, the entire Demon Island was in a state of turmoil. It was a chaotic time of conquests just because of the appearance of law fragments.

90% of truth level disciples were deeply attracted towards law fragments and the reason was the sudden appearance of the nine law fragments. Excluding the ninth one which was directly crushed by Ye Xiwen under the watchful eyes of several disciples, two law fragments had fallen into the grasp of formidable demon beasts.

The remaining six were all up for grabs and resulted in several battles. As Ye Xiwen had previously guessed, several fierce experts were really hiding on this island. And during the contest for law fragments, there appeared a large number of horrifying experts of more than truth sixth stage. Except the Eagle Union, the other five alliances, that had managed to obtain a law fragment each, were completely under siege from several other hidden destructive forces and undercover terrifying experts. This led to the destruction of many alliances, and in the end, these law fragments ended up in the grasp of the strongest.

The Eagle Union was actually very stable. A group of people went looking for trouble but the result was their own thorough annihilation instead. Henceforth, everyone agreed that Eagle Union was the strongest alliance on the entire island and no one

should provoke them.

Some people tried searching for Ye Xiwen but were unable to find him because they couldn't find his trail, as if he was a ghost or something. Moreover, since he had crushed that law fragment, they could only bitterly give up.

After Ye Xiwen departed from there, there was severe infighting among the members of Battling Heavens brotherhood and as a result of that, the alliance completely dissolved. Afterwards, Xiao Zhen and Liu Yueru had a dramatic dispute, and Liu Yueru departed. In the end, Xiao Zhen led the remaining people to seek refuge in Wan True alliance.

This was the first reshuffle on the Demon Island and cropped up some of the original hidden forces, but Ye Xiwen knew that this would not be the last reshuffle because there were several horrifying experts still waiting and watching from the shadows. They were not much attracted to the law fragments, after all, a year's time was left till the reopening of the island and early exposure wasn't a good thing. Only those who get the last laugh are considered the winners.

It was conceivable that there would be a terrible upheaval before the reopening of the demon island.

Ye Xiwen did not want to be a part of this reshuffle. He was more interested in exploring the island's depths.

But, Ye Xiwen did not go directly to the island's depths since he

was looking for Wu Shaoqun.

During the reshuffle, Ye Xiwen finally heard news about Wu Shaoqun and decided to go and meet him. He was also worried about Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen because he got no news about them. He was hoping that Wu Shaoqun would help him in getting information about their whereabouts.

There was a stretch of several log cabins in a square and Wu Shaoqun was living in one of those cabins. Occasionally, terrifying beastly roars came from far off. After arriving there, Ye Xiwen had a feeling of coming to paradise with a peaceful and serene atmosphere.

Ye Xiwen didn't approach, just deactivated the 'restraining breath technique'.

Wu Shaoqun sensed Ye Xiwen standing outside and immediately came out of his cabin. With a look of pleasant surprise on his face, he laughed and said: "Ye Xiwen, what brings you here?"

"Of course, I have come to meet you. Why did you leave Battling Heavens brotherhood?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"I left because of that sly Xiao Zhen. He was secretly planning something behind the scenes and was about to start a war for power and his person profit. If not for giving face to Liu Yueru, I would have surely butchered him." Wu Shaoqun answered and this really surprised Ye Xiwen. This was the first time he witnessed Wu Shaoqun's crazy side which was quite a contrast to his usual jolly

attitude. "But I knew that Battling Heavens brotherhood won't last long under his leadership."

"Ye Xiwen, you have become very famous these days. The whole island knows your name. Damn bro, you are really ruthless, actually crushed a law fragment!" Wu Shaoqun smiled and said.

"It's such an honor to have a friend who has come from so far to visit us." Suddenly, a voice sounded from a nearby log cabin and a young Daoist priest came out from there. Ye Xiwen noticed that he was the same Daoist priest he saw earlier.

"Daoist priest, the pleasure is all mine." Ye Xiwen cupped his hands and said.

"Ye Xiwen, meet Qing Xu." Wu Shaoqun introduced them.

"You can call me Qing Xu and I'll just call you Ye Xiwen." Daoist priest was surprisingly not attaching any importance to superficial formalities.

For Ye Xiwen, it was still very difficult to see through Qing Xu's cultivation. Even though his own cultivation level had increased since the last meeting, he was again unable to sense Qing Xu's cultivation level.

"How come you two are together?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"We do not want to join any alliance, so we all decided to live in

the same place and watch each other's back." Wu Shaoqun smiled and said.

Wait, so there were more than just these two living here. Ye Xiwen was now curious, since it looked like a small group of people who didn't want to be a part of any alliance. But, Ye Xiwen did know that this was no ordinary group.

Wu Shaoqun was at the peak of truth sixth stage and even after the recent shuffling, he could be counted among the top experts on the island. But, Qing Xu was on a whole other level and would be counted among the handful of terrifying existences.

"Well, why don't you join us here? I think your strength is sufficient enough to be one of us." Wu Shaoqun indirectly tried to check what Ye Xiwen was thinking. After all, although their group had not become famous, its battle efficiency was on par with the strongest active alliances on the Demon Island.

"No, I can bring a lot of trouble for you guys and I don't want to see anyone hurt because of me." Ye Xiwen shook his head and refused. What he said was true but more important was the fact that he needed to hunt as many god's descendants as he could in order to perfect 'gilded tyrant form'. And, he certainly couldn't tell them about this.

"Oh come on, we can deal with any trouble, and just because there is trouble out there, we must work together to tackle it." Wu Shaoqun laughed and said.

But, Qing Xu immediately figured that Ye Xiwen did not want to join their group and said: "Shaoqun, you don't have to force him. We are not an alliance, think of us as a group of people who have come together to mutually aid each other. Ye Xiwen, as long as you want; we will always welcome you in our group."

"Indeed, if there is anything you need help with, just ask." Wu Shaoqun said, although he had only met Ye Xiwen a few times, he had a good impression of him, probably because Ye Xiwen's temperament was very much to his liking. These two really hit it off from the very first meeting.

Precisely because of this, Ye Xiwen hoped that Wu Shaoqun would definitely help him out. And just now, he felt that his decision of meeting Wu Shaoqun was right. Although these experts were not part of any alliance, they should still have a broad network of contacts, spread across several alliances.

"Actually, I want your help with something." Ye Xiwen didn't beat around the bush and directly said.

"Feel free and ask." Wu Shaoqun said.

"As I told you before, I was separated from the two fellow disciples of my sect earlier when we encountered Golden-Winged Eagle. I hope you can help me in getting information about them." Ye Xiwen said.

Qing Xu also remembered seeing two people with Ye Xiwen in the sea.



"It's a small thing, no problem!" Wu Shaoqun beat his chest once and said in a confident tone.

"Also, I want you to help me in obtaining any news about Great Yue State's eighth prince." Ye Xiwen said.

"The eighth prince of your country, you mean Yue Yi?" Wu Shaoqun immediately said the eighth prince's name; after all, his own country had an old enmity with Great Yue State, so the royal clans of their country would obviously collect important information about each other. Wu Shaoqun's knowledge about Great Yue State's political situation was far more than that of Ye Xiwen.

"En!" Ye Xiwen said with a smile, "He and I hold a personal grudge against each other."

In fact, Ye Xiwen was most worried because Yue Yi had remained silent all this time. If he was on this island then considering the hate he held for Ye Xiwen, once he got news about Ye Xiwen seizing a law fragment, he would definitely step out to kill him. Not to mention, if Ye Xiwen was able to obtain a law fragment, then it would be much easier for Yue Yi to get his hands on one.

Now, Yue Yi had sufficient time to consume the treasures he obtained from the ancient ruins. It was tough to guess the extent of his strength when he would appear in front of Ye Xiwen the next time. Hence, Ye Xiwen was eager to perfect 'gilded tyrant form' before that.

Wu Shaoqun was somewhat amazed, immediately raised his thumb and said: "Terrific, this is even easier. I know about the existence of Great Yue State's Imperial guards and Yue Yi, the peerless genius who leads it. It seems you are going to teach this guy a good lesson. Not bad!"

Wu Shaoqun actually said it in a way which made it seem like he was taking pleasure in another's misfortunes.

## Chapter 228: Wan True Union

---

Ye Xiwen certainly knew that the rumors about the eighth prince's exploits were not only prevalent in Great Yue State, but overseas as well.

"No problem, if there is any news, I'll let you know." Wu Shaoqun nodded.

After saying goodbye to Wu Shaoqun, Ye Xiwen went towards the depths of the Demon Island. With the help of Wu Shaoqun, he also felt relieved.

Ye Xiwen was shuttling through the mountain forest, but abruptly stopped and said: "Come out!"

At this time, the figure of a man came out of the woods and stood in front of him.

He appeared like a twenty-year-old youth, tall, slender physique and had a handsome face.

"Who are you?" Ye Xiwen asked. "Why are you following me?"

"My name is Jiang Hua." The young man looked at Ye Xiwen and said, "I am the deputy chief of Wan True Union."

Wan true Union was the alliance where Xiao Zhen took refuge.

"Is this related to Xiao Zhen?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"It is not, I have come to invite you to join Wan True Union. So long as you join our union, we will gladly write off the enmity between you and Xiao Zhen. He absolutely won't dare cause any trouble for you. Moreover, we will help in preserving the law fragment that you seized." Jiang Hua explained.

"The law fragment has already been crushed by me." Ye Xiwen said.

"You don't need to lie, although we do not know what means you are going to use, but we have every reason to believe that you definitely have a way to take advantage of this crumpled law fragment." Jiang Hua said.

"Why are looking for me, fair to say, there's a deep grudge between me and Xiao Zhen. So, why are you trying to rope me in?" Ye Xiwen said and looked somewhat puzzled.

"We mean no harm since our chief is ingenious and possesses outstanding ability and grand vision. So this trivial contradiction is practically nothing in front of his grandeur!" Jiang Hua said and there was a somewhat fanatical expression on his face. At this time, from the fanatic look of Jiang Hua, Ye Xiwen was actually reminded of Feng Kong, the chief commander of Imperial guard.

Feng Kong also held a fanatic-like devotion for the eighth prince.

Such people are the hardest to deal with, because they don't listen to reason, and are generally a group of lunatics. They are just like the crazy fans from Ye Xiwen's previous life. If someone doesn't believe in their lord then that someone is an enemy to them.

Ye Xiwen appreciated the loyalty of people, including those who were blindly devoted, but he absolutely could not stand lunatics who couldn't differentiate right from wrong and were just blindly devoted to their lord, irrespective of whether their lord was a good or bad person.

But Ye Xiwen didn't know how to deal with these fanatical believers, because in their hearts, the faith in their master was like their belief in God as if their faith was absolute justice.

"You are this younger generation's top genius and that Xiao Zhen is nothing in comparison. As long as you are willing to give your loyalty to our chief, you will certainly obtain more than just a law fragment from him." Jiang Hua said with pride.

Ye Xiwen laughed, after all, this law fragment had been seized by him and belonged to him, but according to Jiang Hua's logic, his chief would gift it to Ye Xiwen. What kind of ridiculous logic was this?

"Well excuse me, I'm not interested." Ye Xiwen refused.

"You cannot reject!" Jiang Hua's complexion suddenly darkened

as he coldly stared at Ye Xiwen, as if he committed a sin just now and wouldn't be forgiven for this crime!

"I have no interest in joining any alliance." Ye Xiwen replied. Earlier, Wu Shaoqun invited him to join their small group but he said no, not to mention this was some random alliance and his enemy, Xiao Zhen, was also in this alliance.

"Once our union decides to recruit someone, they cannot refuse!" Jiang Hua's face revealed indifference as he coldly uttered these words.

Jiang Hua looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen also coldly stared at him, and as they continued this staring game, there was a sudden burst of aura from Jiang Hua's side and the dreadful aura instantly enveloped Ye Xiwen.

Jiang Hua knew that Ye Xiwen was an extremely powerful expert; otherwise, his chief wouldn't send him, the deputy chief of their alliance, to personally come and invite Ye Xiwen. Even among the top geniuses of the ten countries of Southeast region, Ye Xiwen was considered the most outstanding.

Such a peerless genius was usually very hard to deal with, but he knew what he must do. He must thoroughly defeat Ye Xiwen in order to crush his pride and self-confidence, thereby taming him in the process.

"Such threats don't work on me." Ye Xiwen grinned and a cold light flashed in his eyes, "And what is this Wan True alliance? I

have never even heard of it."

"If you want to die so badly, I'll help you out!" Jiang Hua said in an angry tone and looked at Ye Xiwen with his ice-cold eyes, while his killing intention was overflowing.

"Destruction of the Gods tactics!" Jiang Hua's temperament instantly changed and a dreadful killing intention surged out of his body, making him appear like the incarnation of an ancient evil god.

Jiang Hua's internal qi generation engine was operating at its peak, while the terrible rays of light spread everywhere. The entire mountain forest began to quiver under the dominating pressure of the terrifying power of truth seventh peak.

Ye Xiwen shouted and instantly activated 'tyrant body technique'. His whole body was immediately covered in bronze flesh and the faint golden light was glowing in the sunlight, making him look like the incarnation of an ancient overlord.

"Boom!" Jiang Hua's fingertips flashed and shot a huge divine beam at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen instantly shot his palm and a coiling dragon, overflowing with terrifying dragon qi, appeared out of nowhere and roared loudly.

Ye Xiwen was secretly vigilant in his heart. This guy was at the

peak of truth seventh stage and could be considered one of the strongest in the younger generation of all ten countries of Southeast region. No wonder he was so confident.

However, even such a person had been tamed by someone. Ye Xiwen was quite curious to find out, who actually was the chief of Wan True Union. But, he must first think of a way to escape from this psycho.

The coiling dragon roared and flew towards the incoming divine beam.

"Bang!" the coiling dragon severely clashed with the divine beam and ripped it apart, rendering it useless.

Then it opened its large jaws and rushed towards Jiang Hua to swallow him whole.

Jiang Hua snorted and said: "Evil dragon!"

His fingertips flashed again and released ten divine beams towards the coiling dragon. These tyrannical beams of divine light attacked it and tore it to shreds.

At this time, Ye Xiwen suddenly appeared in front of Jiang Hua, coldly smiled and said: "Now die!"

Ye Xiwen shot his palm which immediately transformed into a giant dragon claw and maliciously rumbled on Jiang Hua's chest.



"Boom!" a loud explosion occurred and set off strong winds in all directions and directly bulldozed numerous trees in the forest.

The destructive power of these two experts was extremely frightening.

Jiang Hua looked solemn as he said: "You are a very good fighter; you actually compelled me to use my best shot. But, rest assured, I will definitely kill you."

However, in his heart, Jiang Hua was shocked and never expected Ye Xiwen to be so formidable. One must know that he had already used his best shot and was unable to hurt Ye Xiwen. And at the same time, he could see the strange look in Ye Xiwen eyes, as if conveying "You want to kill me?"

Ye Xiwen grinned and his eyes looked even colder than before. His body resembled those of the ancient tyrants, incomparably tyrannical. Jiang Hua was secretly horrified in his heart because he knew well that if he were not a higher level expert then he would probably be dead by now.

"You are very strong but this actually increases the fun. Killing a formidable enemy will prove my strength!" Jiang Hua said softly and step by step walked in the air.

Ye Xiwen immediately took out Tianyuan mirror which made a scarlet protective screen around him.

Jiang Hua suddenly blasted a punch which shook the surrounding space.

"Boom!" the [Quanjin](#) rumbled fiercely on the protective screen, but it only trembled a bit and didn't collapse.

Quanjin = Fist power

Ye Xiwen did not wait and immediately shot his palm, which transformed into a dragon claw and then rumbled maliciously on Jiang Hua's body.

"Boom!"

A terrible explosion occurred in the sky.

"Bang!" Jiang Hua was sent flying hundreds of meters away. Blood was dripping from the corners of his mouth since his internal organs had been damaged. How could he possibly know that Ye Xiwen used the power of gilded tyrant form?

Although Jiang Hua's cultivation was at a higher level, he was still injured by the aftermath of this explosion.

Although Ye Xiwen had used Tianyuan mirror's protective screen, he was still sent flying by the explosion.

An incredible look appeared in Jiang Hua's eyes. He just couldn't

believe what he witnessed just now. How could Ye Xiwen's body be so terrifying? He initially planned to rely on his higher level to effortlessly kill Ye Xiwen, but what the hell happened just now? In a protracted battle, Ye Xiwen should have ended up consuming his energy and should have been at a disadvantage, but he still couldn't overlook Ye Xiwen's tyrannical flesh. He couldn't understand how Ye Xiwen managed to attain such a body.

It was basically impossible to find a same-level rival for Ye Xiwen.

But then the killing intention again flashed in his eyes. He knew that he must strangle this threat ahead of time.

Otherwise, in the future, Ye Xiwen might become a formidable enemy.

## Chapter 229: Struggles Hard To Escape

---

Jiang Hua had entered full slaughter mode and shouted: "Die!"

Ye Xiwen now had no way out. He knew that he must not fight with Jiang Hua, but he could find no escape route. He rejected the invitation of Wan True Union, and considering Jiang Hua's blind devotion to his master and alliance, perhaps, this act was a blasphemy according to his beliefs.

If Ye Xiwen withdrew now then he could be hunted to death. His only option was to continue this desperate battle, and at least try to seriously injure his opponent, only then it would be possible to escape.

At this time, Jiang Hua seized the opportunity and shot decisively. He joined his hands and released a huge divine beam as if resembling an endless mountain, which immediately advanced towards Ye Xiwen as if to swallow him whole.

The very presence of this mountain of divine beam was enough to shake the entire world. The terrifying power of truth seventh peak had fully manifested at this time.

It was certainly beyond the imagination of an ordinary person!

It could be said that it was hard to find a same-level opponent for Jiang Hua, somehow, Ye Xiwen managed to compete with him while having two levels less in comparison.

Ye Xiwen was relying on the supreme might of gilded tyrant form, granting him unsurpassed attack and defense power.

The divine light held in Jiang Hua's hands transformed into a strange beast. It roared upwards and rushed towards Ye Xiwen while ejecting flames all the way from its body.

Jiang Hua was going all out without any mercy, and Ye Xiwen didn't have the luxury of being lenient, instead he had to go all out.

Ye Xiwen shouted, his whole body turned bronze and began to emit unequalled gloss and luster. He looked just like an ancient overlord reborn.

"Boom!" a terrible collision occurred and the seemingly inexhaustible divine beam was directly torn apart by Ye Xiwen. The huge mountain of light tumbled down layer by layer, taking away as many things as possible with it.

The enormous power of the explosion swept off and Jiang Hua was shaken by the great might displayed by Ye Xiwen just now, but Ye Xiwen himself was pushed back all the way, though it didn't cause him any injuries. Ye Xiwen didn't stop even for an instant and immediately shot his palm, releasing a golden dragon. This dragon was exuding a terrifying mysterious energy and there were traces of golden threads in its body.

Ye Xiwen went all out and attacked.

Jiang Hua stopped and shot his palm, causing countless air explosions. To a naked eye, one could see the endless combustion and explosions in the air, sweeping all the way and finally colliding with the golden dragon.

"Boom!" the enormous explosion destroyed everything in the surrounding areas.

The two experts once again battled together without rest. Basically, Ye Xiwen had been pushed under the wind, but his invincible tyrant body was able to resist all attacks, not to mention when Ye Xiwen used his tyrant powers then no one could block those attacks. Even Jiang Hua was being careful and not indulging in a hand-to-hand combat with Ye Xiwen, otherwise, even though Ye Xiwen could not kill him, he could certainly severely injure him.

"Boom!"

A majestic power exploded and Ye Xiwen was once again sent flying.

"Today, you will die without a doubt!" There was an extremely cold look in Jiang Hua's eyes, but he was secretly terrified in the heart when he witnessed Ye Xiwen's fearful vitality.

Other experts of same-level simply couldn't stop his attacks, but this Ye Xiwen was simply a genius. Even if he was at truth fifth stage, it was literally impossible to suppress him.

And Ye Xiwen not only dared to attack him, but all his attacks were meant to kill. Not to mention, although Ye Xiwen was wounded, he was constantly fighting back. He was not the type of guy who would flee at the first sign of defeat. If such a person was allowed to grow, then it would be disastrous for him and his lord. Ye Xiwen must never be allowed to step into the truth sixth stage.

Thinking of this, Jiang Hua's killing intention increased and he once again attacked Ye Xiwen.

An ordinary expert of truth fifth stage would have been killed by now, but Ye Xiwen's tyrant body was no joke.

"Boom!" the explosion ripped the ground once again, creating a large crater.

Jiang Hua was constantly trying to kill Ye Xiwen and Ye Xiwen was furiously struggling to resist. His hands would transform into dragon claws and tear apart the huge mountain of divine light. But each time, it was getting more difficult for Ye Xiwen to resist Jiang Hua's attacks.

However, Ye Xiwen's facial expression did not change and still appeared callous, ice-cold and domineering. As expected from a practitioner of supreme tyrant body.

"Ye Xiwen, it cannot go on like this!" Ye Mo said in a serious tone. "Although it is hard for him to kill you, but if it goes on like this, you will end up consuming all your energy."

Since Ye Xiwen was relying on the might of his tyrant body, it was impossible for Jiang Hua to kill him in one shot, but if he continued to attack like this, then Ye Xiwen would end up consuming all his energy and wouldn't be able to defend anymore, while the enemy would still have sufficient energy to kill him.

"I just need to inflict severe damage on him at least once, but I don't know how to do it." Ye Xiwen wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth and said, "He's too powerful, I don't know how to do it. But, if I don't injure him even once, he will definitely chase me down to the ends of the earth. The only way to make him quit is to cause heavy losses to this guy."

Ye Xiwen felt helpless. If there was a way, then, not even the Gods could have stopped him from using it!

Jiang Hua's divine beam transformed into a large sierra of light and directly pressed down towards Ye Xiwen. It seemed as if the sky itself was caving down, like the end of the world.

Ye Xiwen stood up, stimulated gilded tyrant form to its peak, summoned the coiling dragon and flew upwards to greet the incoming attack.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen and his coiling dragon routed the great sierra of divine light, but as a result of the collision, he spat out blood and was sent flying down and crashed into the ground, resulting into a large crater.



Jiang Hua immediately chased down and shot his palm, which turned into a mountain and pressed down upon fallen Ye Xiwen as if to crush him once and forever.

Ye Xiwen was injured and the blood had begun to seep out of his whole body, and was causing immense pain.

"Aaaah!" Ye Xiwen looked up towards the sky and gave out a long and loud cry. His whole body was instantly covered with Zhen Yuan, dispersing his black hair. A domineering radiance immediately exuded from his body.

"Boom!" as the great mountain of divine light descended upon Ye Xiwen, he felt a surge of horror in his heart.

"Peng!" Ye Xiwen was sent flying far away.

Jiang Hua laughed and said: "Ye Xiwen, you can be considered a top genius of our younger generation, but just so you know, not all geniuses manage to fully mature to show the extent of their true potential. And you have also reached a dead-end, now die!"

Jiang Hua laughed loudly, saw an opening in Ye Xiwen's defenses and rushed towards him.

"Go die!" Ye Xiwen suddenly opened his eyes. A golden light flashed in his eyes along with the traces of golden threads floating in his eyes. A long golden sword instantly appeared in his hand and released dreadful godly aura which swept across in all directions.

The surrounding vegetation bowed, as if it were in the presence of God. No living being had the guts to lift their head before the absolute might of the Gods. It was said that the Gods were the noblest existences in all of the ten thousand worlds and no other life form could be placed on par with them.

As soon as the godly aura swept off everywhere, a terrifying sword intention was shot up into the sky. It seemed as if it minced the air and clouds and was about to cut the world itself, bringing about the birth of chaos.

"What is this?!" Jiang Hua was startled. He never expected that Ye Xiwen was actually hiding such a killer move and was enduring all this time to reveal an opening and lure him into attacking. And he actually fell into Ye Xiwen's trap.

"Boom!" there was an earth-shattering noise and everything was annihilated in the area, even the surrounding space was disrupted from the explosion. The sword intention was actually composed of divinity and directly pierced into Jiang Hua's right hand when he tried to block it.

"Ah!" Jiang Hua screamed as his arm was destroyed by the golden sword intention and literally turned into atoms. He quickly retreated almost a kilometer but only after losing most of his arm. There was a look of terror in his eyes because this was beyond the scope of his imagination. The sword intention actually cut through the protective layer of Zhen Yuan as if cutting through plastic foam.

This Golden sword intention was too terrible.

He did not know that more than a month's worth of collected divinity was present in that single attack. So many gods' descendants had been slaughtered by Ye Xiwen for their divinity and he spent it all at once.

Although Jiang Hua was powerful, how could he possibly be compared with the noblest creatures between heaven and earth? Ye Xiwen had collected only a little bit of divinity but this amount was enough for one effective sneak attack.

Ye Xiwen spouted a mouthful of blood, but this time, there was no trace of golden divinity in the blood. It had been completely consumed in the last attack.

Ye Xiwen could no longer suppress his injuries and spat blood from his mouth. Then, he clenched his teeth and instantly opened the black devil wings and flew towards the depths of the Demon Island like a black lightning. He knew that although he had caused a serious injury to Jiang Hua and compelled him to retreat, but this was not enough to make him give up, instead it backfired and made him even angrier. Ye Xiwen was quite satisfied to see that using golden divinity in one go could make it so powerful and disastrous.

Now, Ye Xiwen couldn't afford to hide his devil wings and only focused on escaping from there as a matter of first priority.

Jiang Hua noticed that Ye Xiwen turned around to flee and immediately understood that this sneak attack was possibly his

trump card and could only be used once; otherwise, there was no need to escape.

In other words, he was played, not to mention his arm was also blown up. And since he was not a devil, he couldn't possibly have the strong ability of regeneration. In other words, he lost his right arm forever and this made his heart burn with anger and hatred.

"You cannot run away from me! Today, you shall die!" Jiang Hua roared and his voice like a sonic boom swept in all directions.

## Chapter 230: Griffin Valley

---

This battle was very difficult and Ye Xiwen did not know for how long it would continue. It had continued all day and all night. Even the devil wings behind Ye Xiwen had begun to slowly fade away. In fact, his body was covered in wounds and some of the bones were broken despite having a supreme tyrant body.

But on the other side, Jiang Hua was also not in a good condition. His complexion looked pale because of excessive bleeding and he had suffered severe trauma, not to mention his arm was also destroyed by Ye Xiwen. However, since he was on a higher level, his situation was comparatively better than Ye Xiwen.

"F\*\*k this psycho!" Ye Xiwen secretly cursed him while being chased all the way for one whole day and night and not knowing where to run. There was a possibility of bumping into tyrannical demon beasts, but the good thing was that he was particularly sensitive to the aura and hence was able to avoid those terrifying demon beasts; otherwise, surviving this long would have been impossible.

Jiang Hua was definitely insane and Ye Xiwen was continuously flapping the devil wings, doing his best to escape from this madman.

"Ye Xiwen, you cannot run away, I will kill you!" Jiang Hua gritted his teeth. Although he was furious because he lost his arm and was hell bent on taking revenge in order to settle the anger in his heart, he also knew that he could not afford to let Ye Xiwen live. If he didn't kill Ye Xiwen today, he would certainly turn into a

major threat in the future.

"Only by dying can you wash away your sins!"

Only Ye Xiwen's death could cleanse the anger and hatred from his heart.

"Shut up, you lunatic! First, you tell me to join your alliance as your fellow brother, and now you are trying to kill me?" Ye Xiwen was extremely frustrated and shouted, "If you don't leave me alone, I will definitely destroy you and your shitty Wan True Union!"

Ye Xiwen knew that after hearing this, Jiang Hua would certainly not let him off, but he was in a rage and couldn't help but threatened him. After all, he had never been hunted down so badly before and that too for a shitty reason like this.

"I swear, I will come back for your Wan True Union and make you all regret the decision of messing with me. You and your master should not have f\*\*\*ed with me!" Ye Xiwen could not control his rage and shouted in an angry voice.

Jiang Hua was disinclined to speak, he just shot his palm which turned into an endless sierra of light and advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

The devil wings flapped incredibly fast and Ye Xiwen's body suddenly sped up like a black lightning and vanished in the

direction of a nearby mountain range.

"Boom!" the sierra of light crashed on the ground and a huge crater appeared there.

Jiang Hua was breathing heavily and it was obvious that he must have used up a lot of energy in this attack. After a non-stop pursuit of day and night, for him, it must have been difficult to use this attack.

However, his hatred for Ye Xiwen was driving him to go this far. This resentment was supporting him all the way and motivated him to pursue Ye Xiwen for so long.

The two sides were now involved in a competition of willpower and no one was willing to give up. They were already extremely tired, although Jiang Hua's level was much higher than Ye Xiwen, Ye Xiwen possessed supreme tyrant body, not to mention, he was an extremely skilled fighter and a peerless genius.

Ye Xiwen had almost used up the reserves of Zhen Yuan in his body during the chase and was constantly replenishing the consumed energy by swallowing Ling Dans and converting them into Zhen Yuan, otherwise, how could he possibly keep the devil wings activated for one whole day?

But Jiang Hua's situation was no better. A single attack had left him breathless and he longer looked calm like earlier.

Each time he attacked, his complexion would turn pale for a minute and that was why he was unable to attack continuously. He was attacking only once in a while.

This also allowed Ye Xiwen to catch breath and the interval between two attacks became the best time for resting.

A distant valley appeared in front of Ye Xiwen and countless beastly roars were originating from there in a chorus. It seemed like there was a group of demon beasts in the valley.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen felt intermittent waves of terrible coercion spreading out of there. Most probably, a legendary level demon beast was present in the valley.

Ye Xiwen clenched his teeth and exclaimed in his heart: "Must risk it all!"

The devil wings instantly flapped at a lightning speed and Ye Xiwen rushed into the valley like black lightning.

At this time, Ye Xiwen finally got a good view of this valley. It was a very large valley, and spread over a stretch of several hundred miles, countless huge demon beasts were flying in flocks above the valley.

Each of these demon beasts was almost four meters tall, had an eagle's head, lion's body, and four ominous claws that were exuding dark coldness.



Griffin!

This mythical creature was rumored to be a very fierce beast and appeared in several myths throughout the Zhen Wu Jie. In the ancient ages, they were used as a mount to fly in the sky but then slowly disappeared and were later labeled as extinct creatures. He never expected to actually see a large flock of griffins.

Moreover, Ye Xiwen was more surprised to find out that almost every beast on this demon island possessed divinity, though some contained more and some less, but so far, he didn't see a single exception.

In other words, a griffin's body was most likely to contain divinity and this meant that griffins were also among the so-called God's descendants. Without exception, all of the demon beast species he encountered so far on this island possessed divinity in their bodies.

Ye Xiwen was sometimes terrified to think that so many species of God's descendants were living on this island, and some of them were considered extinct or only appeared in myths. In the end, what kind of secret was hidden on the Demon Island?

Considering the presence of God's descendants on this island, it seemed like Ye Mo was right about this island being an immortal's tomb.

Could it be that innumerable immortals were buried on this

island?

Moreover, these griffins were very frightening, each being at truth seventh stage or truth eighth stage. Ye Xiwen could also sense the aura of some griffins of half-step legendary realm coming from the deeper parts of the valley, as well as some legendary level griffin elders.

Before Ye Xiwen could relax, Jiang Hua's voice sounded from behind and he arrived in the valley but was immediately speechless when he saw the flock of griffins. He knew that if griffins heard his voice, he would surely be killed.

Ye Xiwen sneered since it didn't seem like this bastard would give up on chasing him, so Jiang Hua better not blame Ye Xiwen for what he was going to do next.

Ye Xiwen stretched out his hand and curled his fingers as if to grasp something, condensed an air ball and threw it towards the flock of griffins in the sky.

Ye Xiwen then immediately rushed into a gap in a nearby cliff and vanished from the scene.

Jiang Hua saw what Ye Xiwen did and froze for a moment, he then suddenly understood what Ye Xiwen was trying to do and cursed in his heart. This Ye Xiwen was such a sly guy, to think that he would actually use such a dirty trick.

Before he could think of countermeasures, he saw a flock of hundreds of enraged griffins flying towards him. These griffins were enormous and looked just like dive bombers as they dived towards Jiang Hua.

Because they only saw Jiang Hua on the scene, they assumed he was the culprit and the sole intruder in their area. They were oblivious about the real instigator, Ye Xiwen, and focused their rage on Jiang Hua. Not to mention, Ye Xiwen had used 'restraining breath technique' to hide his presence, including his aura and smell of blood, so the griffins couldn't sense him at all.

Ye Xiwen had practiced 'restraining breath technique' to its peak level and it once again played a big role.

"Ye Xiwen, you bastard!" Jiang Hua cursed loudly and immediately turned back to escape with hundreds of griffins chasing from behind.

Dealing with one griffin could be disastrous, and he was being chased by so many. He couldn't possibly dare to stay in the valley after becoming the sole target of these blood-thirsty beasts.

If he was caught, he would surely be torn to pieces.

Jiang Hua was chased all the way and eventually disappeared into the horizon.

Ye Xiwen was relieved, he finally got rid of that psycho.

Suddenly, the sense of pain crawled all over his whole body and attacked his brain. He was gasping and his face contorted, showing immense pain and agony.

During the long pursuit, Ye Xiwen lost track of the number of times he was attacked. He was alive right now thanks to his incredibly formidable tyrant body. An ordinary person would have died in the beginning itself.

But even with such a tyrant body, he didn't know how many bones were broken in his body or layers of skin that were peeled off. He was in a horrible condition right now.

However, the good news was that he finally got rid of that lunatic. As far as the injuries were concerned, he could slowly recuperate and nurse himself back to health.

Although recuperating right under the noses of these demon beasts was a very dangerous thing to do, right now, he was seriously injured and had no strength to fly. There was also a possibility that the enemy might be lurking outside and waiting for him to come out of the valley. So, he had no choice but to stay there.

## Chapter 231: Power-Up

---

Zhen Yuan was continuously circulating in Ye Xiwen's body and healing the injuries. He took out a lot of healing drugs and medicinal pills from the storage space in Tianyuan mirror and used them all to increase the healing pace. Finally, the bleeding stopped and his wounds no longer looked serious. Now, he appeared much better when compared to his earlier blood-drenched image.

Ye Xiwen felt relieved but knew that this was just the beginning. Perhaps, his body sustained his worst injuries ever and that too after practicing gilded tyrant form; which again proved the extent of his injuries.

While thinking of this, unbearable hatred welled up in Ye Xiwen's heart as he gritted his teeth. For him, this was simply an unexpected misfortune that he somehow ended up provoking a megalomaniac.

However, Ye Xiwen was not a nice guy and would certainly not forget this incident!

He was literally pushed to his limits and couldn't control the rage building up in his heart. He was normally a good-hearted person, but once provoked, he would neither forgive nor forget!

If someone dared to f\*\*k with him, he would make sure to obliterate the very existence of his enemy from the face of the earth without the slightest grievance. After all, forgiveness and mercy never worked in this brutal world where strength and pride

ruled all.

"I pledge to teach the whole Wan True Union a lesson. I will teach them thoroughly that they should never have f\*\*ed with me!" Ye Xiwen said and clenched his teeth, and right then, the broken bones sent waves of intense pain into his brain and his face contorted.

He began to breathe heavily!

"Rather than wasting time on such ruthless words, why not focus on recuperating first?" Ye Mo shook his head and said.

Jiang Hua's relentless attacks had done some serious damage to his body and it was going to take a long time to reach full recovery.

Ye Xiwen estimated that it would take at least three months to fully recuperate, but he couldn't afford to waste three months, after all, only a year's time was available to explore this vast island.

"Now, if you slowly recuperate then it will take too long and may actually affect your vitality. You have to find a way to supplement your vitality as soon as possible." Ye Mo said, "These griffins are God's descendants, though certainly not as terrifying as a phoenix, we should certainly not overlook their sheer population. There are at least 4000-5000 griffins in this valley, which means there are enough eggs to help you in restoring your lost vitality and energy."

"En!" Ye Xiwen nodded. Even he had come up with the same plan

as it was undoubtedly the best way to get out of this mess.

Ye Xiwen had completely used up the reserves of divinity in his body in the battle.

Days passed and in a blink of an eye, a month elapsed.

Ye Xiwen was crawling forward while 'restraining breath technique' was working at its best to cover his presence completely. There was a large rock in front of him and there was a griffin's nest right on top of it. Ten palm-sized griffin eggs were lying down in the nest and a griffin was guarding them. After a while, it spread its wings and flew away in search of food.

Ye Xiwen finally climbed up, casually picked up one egg then quietly left that place and left towards the crevice which was acting as his hiding place in this valley.

Although there were thousands of griffin's eggs in the valley, he took only one egg from a nest. So even if a griffin noticed that one of its eggs was missing, it assumed that it must have rolled out of the nest and did not bother much. Of course, griffins were wise creatures but not comparable to humans. They would never expect someone to sneak into their nest and steal just one egg.

Certainly, Ye Xiwen did not dare to sneak into the nests of formidable griffins, for example, he would not even think about going close to the nest of a half-step legendary level griffin. Ye Xiwen's skill was too low so even after relying on 'restraining breath technique', it was impossible for him to hide his presence

from higher level griffins at all times. If an ordinary truth level griffin was not vigilant then he was sure to succeed, but half-step legendary level griffins could easily see through his concealment.

Due to the lack of level, Ye Xiwen's concealment was not perfect because a part of his breath was not concealed, and if he wanted to steal the eggs, he must hide his presence completely, especially in front of a half-step legendary level griffin.

Not to mention, there were some legendary level griffins in the depths of the valley and he never thought of approaching them. Ye Xiwen didn't stand a chance against a legendary level existence, whether it was a human, a devil or a demon beast. The legendary realm really deserved its title because those in this realm could definitely be called legendary characters, irrespective of the species they belonged to. Just by stepping into this realm, the lifespan increased up to a 1000 years.

And if the understanding of world laws was taken into consideration then it was on a whole other level, and, there were realms above it as well.

Ye Xiwen still remembered how those legendary experts were killed by Golden-Winged Eagle, not to mention the entire group of formidable experts sent on an expedition to this island by Heavenly Rock faction was massacred. According to what Wu Shaoqun said, the influence of this faction in Great Yue State was apparently comparable to that of Yi Yuan School in Great Yue State.

It could be said that the combined strength of all of the griffins in



this valley was more tyrannical than Yi Yuan School's total strength.

This place could only be compared to the sacred space located in the depths of Yi Yuan School. Ye Xiwen didn't even dare to be presumptuous and was quietly going through this area, although his speed was slow, prevention was better than cure and safety always won. He didn't want to disturb those terrifying half-step legendary or legendary level demon beasts.

Ye Xiwen returned to his hiding place. He had slightly rearranged the structure of this crevice during the period of one month he spent here, and it no longer looked like a crevice but a large dark cave.

One could see broken egg shells in the corners of the cave, thought well hidden. Ye Xiwen had been absorbing the essence from all these griffin eggs for the whole of month.

Ye Xiwen carefully put down the griffin egg and began to absorb its essence. The egg cracked and a very pure essence flew out of it. This essence was bound to contain large amounts of condensed energy; after all, unlike deepwater black snakes that took birth in Xiantian realm, griffins took birth in truth realm.

In other words, this essence was equivalent to the vitality of a truth level expert. Not to forget, Ye Xiwen absorbed the essence from so many griffin eggs.

Ye Xiwen's current level was not high so these griffin eggs were

quite nourishing for him.

Not to mention, the divinity contained in a griffin egg was much stronger when compared to general demon beasts.

This essence was gradually absorbed by Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen's skin instantly turned golden as he activated 'tyrant body technique'. The numerous golden threads all crawled over his body. And this time, his whole body was covered with golden threads of divinity.

In other words, after resting for a month, he not only managed to completely restore his original strength but also he surpassed his previous strength. Now, he wouldn't need to fight with Xiao Zhen for so long. At his current strength, Ye Xiwen could just slap him to death!

Ye Xiwen knew for sure that Xiao Zhen was the reason why Wan True Union was looking for him. Since Wan True Union came looking for trouble right after Xiao Zhen joined it.

## Chapter 232: The Yellow River

---

The unreasonable overbearing arrogance of Wan True Union became quite apparent when they came looking for trouble for no reason, after all, from Jiang Hua's tone, Ye Xiwen could make out that they were not giving much importance to the crushed law fragment, in fact they used it as a topic for negotiation for roping him into their alliance.

Since they did not come for the law fragment or at least they did not come mainly for it, their sudden interest in Ye Xiwen was very strange. The only way to explain this was Xiao Zhen's presence in Wan True Union. He must have said something or might have provoked them against Ye Xiwen, so they came after him.

However, now it did not matter anymore because Ye Xiwen already credited this account on Wan True Union's head. Now, they had no choice but to suffer because he would neither forgive, nor forget.

Although Ye Xiwen had a recent power up and could easily beat the experts of truth sixth stage, he would still have a tough time dealing with the experts of truth seventh stage. So, it seemed necessary for him to wait until stepping into the truth sixth stage.

Moreover, he was quite wary of Wan True Union's chief. He could not help but fear the tyrannical strength of this chief who actually tamed a psycho like Jiang Hua, a super genius of truth seventh stage.

Right now, he couldn't launch an attack on the Wan True Union, at least not until he had sufficient strength.

After fully recovering and simultaneously gaining a power up, Ye Xiwen decided to leave the griffin valley. Basically, it could be said that in this valley, he was constantly surrounded by danger, not to mention he had to be cautious at all times in order to not get found out by half-step legendary or legendary level griffins. He was tired of this non-stop 'hide and seek' game.

After carefully exiting the griffin valley, Ye Xiwen felt relieved but when he observed the surroundings, he didn't know where he was. On the day he was being chased down, he was mostly focusing on dealing with the enemy and didn't pay attention to where he was going.

Now he was basically lost, but at least knew that he was probably already out of the outermost regions of the Demon Island because the demon beasts here were significantly stronger than those in the outermost regions, for example, the griffins.

But anyway, Ye Xiwen had been planning to explore the depths of the island, and as long as he would continue to march towards the huge mountain of Dead qi, located at the centre of the demon island, he would eventually reach his destination.

Night gradually deepened and endless stars appeared in the sky. It seemed like a gigantic Zhen formation in the sky, projected directly onto the demon island.

As he continued advancing towards the depth of the demon island, he discovered something strange. In the night, the starlight projected onto the demon island was being absorbed by all types of demon beasts, making their bodies glow with faint silver light. Yes, they were absorbing the energy of the stars.

"They are absorbing the quintessence of the stars!"

An idea suddenly cropped up in his mind as he remembered reading about this in the ancient legends. The ancient myths mentioned about the so-called evil spirits, could be plants, beasts or human beings, who were capable of absorbing the quintessence from the heavenly bodies, including the sun and moon.

So in this case, it was the quintessence of the stars?

Ye Xiwen tried before but could not absorb the so-called quintessence of the sun and the moon. Later, he found out that it was nothing but a crappy concept since that little touch of energy was only enough to survive and nothing more, a concept filled with utter nonsense.

But now he discovered that this legend was not nonsense, but a mistake on his part since he used ordinary irradiation laws for absorbing the quintessence of the heavenly bodies. So, there was actually a need of special methods, or perhaps a special type of gene in the body, in order to absorb and harness the quintessence of heavenly bodies.

Without these necessary things, one could not harness the energy

of heavenly bodies. Otherwise, it would basically turn into an alternate source of energy, enough to sustain life at the most.

"It really is a vast method, just look at the power of these stars, infinite!" Ye Mo pointed towards the sky and said, "This mysterious huge Zhen array is restraining the rich energy of a total of 1800 most luminous stars, and then this massive energy is being projected on the island. No wonder this island's demon beasts are so tyrannical. After showering in the illumination of these stars for so long, even the most ignorant and weakest demon beasts will eventually power up to become extraordinary!"

"Moreover, look at the ominous Dead qi erupting from that huge mountain and forming a dense cloud in the sky. The dense cloud spreads throughout the island and envelops the entire island in the night, thereby blocking all the stars, and not just that, these clouds also block the outward diffusion of energy by forming a large diaphragm of Dead qi. Although the clouds of Dead qi are not as thick on the rest of the island as above that huge mountain, there is no doubt, these clouds block most of the starlight. And this is a good thing because considering the massive energy present in the starlight originating from so many stars, if it fully illuminated the entire island then the demon beasts on this island will be on a whole other level. And then you and those other experts won't be able to survive on this island." Ye Mo said, "Plus we saw the ruins of an ancient civilization, on top of that, all of the demon beasts on this island are God's descendants. Now I can affirm that this island is an encampment of a terrifying influence, possibly at the level of ten thousand world's community. Moreover, it's most probably a demon race encampment and all the demon beasts here are the descendants of that demon race. Obviously, several members of that demon race must have been immortals, perhaps belonging to a big organization."

Ye Mo speculated and his whole body actually shivered. A legendary immortal organization was only heard of in fables. One must know that immortals were frightening existences and worked like a deterrent community.

If so, then everything could be explained. This large Zhen array with its mysterious power of trapping starlight was actually planted by a mighty demon race. It also explained the origins of the ominous Dead qi on the mountain.

So this was the reason why the demon beasts of this island were more powerful!

This was indeed a reasonable explanation!

However, Ye Xiwen had a cold feeling about this organization, after all, such an organization was far more formidable than the combined influence of the ten countries of the southeast region; in fact, even the might of the whole Zhen Wu Jie was nothing in comparison!

However, such a formidable influence actually became dilapidated like this and finally became a practice field for the young geniuses of the southeast region!

What was going on!?

Yes, Ye Xiwen always found this island very strange and

shrouded in mysteries, but now he felt somewhat dismal about it.

Perhaps, millions of years had passed since its original glory, which gradually submerged in the sandstorm of time and would continue to do so, retelling the tales of its lost civilization which couldn't escape destruction despite being so formidable!

Ye Xiwen lightly asked: "Ye Mo, you tell me what in the world is this so-called immortality is?"

"Even great masters like me or magnificent forces such as this immortal demon race ultimately find it difficult to escape death." Ye Mo said in a low voice, "Maybe the so-called immortality exists, but peerless geniuses still ascend the road to heaven singing and dancing along the way ....."

"Well, anyway, these things are still far away from me." Ye Xiwen shook his head and decided to throw away these distractions. In fact, he could hear about these things just because Ye Mo was at his side, otherwise, he wouldn't even bother knowing about them!

The more he knew about these things, the more he became aware of his tiny existence!

Then, abruptly, Ye Xiwen discovered something underfoot. He immediately looked down and saw a yellow-green river which was exuding yellowish light and it was actually corroding the Zhen Yuan around his feet.



Ye Xiwen was immediately startled and quickly retreated all the way back and went out of the scope of this yellow river and asked in a surprised voice: "What is this yellow water?"

"This yellow water is actually dead people flowing down the so-called river of dead." Ye Mo explained.

"River of the dead? How many people must have died to give rise to this river of dead!" Ye Xiwen looked at the yellow river flowing all the way into the distance.

Ye Xiwen observed that the source of this yellow river was none other than that ominous mountain. And in the night, it looked even more strange and ominous.

"It is really a big fortune that we get to see it! Countless people must have suffered unjust deaths, giving rise to such rich Dead qi." Ye Mo said, "And their souls and resentment have coagulated into this yellow river."

"The fables about hell talk about a river that has been flowing from the beginning of time and will flow till the end of time. It flows across time and space and is well-known among mortals as River Styx." Ye Mo said, "It is also called river of the dead or the yellow river. Although the titles are different, the river contains the essence of the dead and they must spend a long time flowing in River Styx before entering the hell. But we are actually able to see a part of the river here, such good luck!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

Terrible cries of terror were sounding from the river and echoing everywhere.

In his past life, Ye Xiwen had also heard of this legend but never took it seriously until now when he finally saw the River Styx with his own eyes.

## Chapter 233: The Six Samsara

---

However, Ye Xiwen soon discovered the real horror behind that scene and heard intermittent battle cries arising straight from the yellow river. An unknown form of energy coagulated and took form of countless soldiers in a large battle arrangement as they were shouting 'kill' again and again and their expedition was marching towards hell.

These were the resentments of the dead that had condensed at this time. But they were the dead members of which force?

It looked like an expedition marching on the ninth heaven!

Boundless killing intention was rolling down the yellow river and dense Dead qi was proliferating in the air and appeared like ominous clouds, concealing the presence awe-inspiring evil spirits.

"Ha!" Suddenly, there came a loud battle cry and Ye Xiwen saw an array of soldiers, who had congealed from Dead qi and resentment and flowing down the yellow river stream, being directly slaughtered. But he didn't care about those soldiers because his attention was caught by a khaki-colored figure who was shuttling back and forth in the river and his long sword was sweeping endless Swordlight in all directions, killing several soldiers with each strike.

He appeared like a twenty-year-old young guy clad in a khaki-colored robe, with a slightly pale face but carrying an extremely cold expression, and the sword in his hand was actually releasing

terrifying Swordlight, capable of slaughtering those soldiers. In fact, the soldiers were unable to encircle him no matter how much they tried.

Ye Xiwen clearly saw that after dying, the soldiers transformed back into their original Dead qi form, and afterwards, this Dead qi was actually absorbed by the tip of his sword, making the Swordlight seem even brighter and more formidable than before.

Ye Xiwen was shocked by this. This guy was actually absorbing the Dead qi as a means of cultivation, and although those soldiers were not conscious, they still held killing instinct, almost every one of them was no less than an expert of truth fifth stage, and some were at sixth or even seventh stage. In their lifetime, they must have been much more tyrannical, but at present, they were merely shadows of their real selves, just a collection of resentments arising from the yellow river of the dead. Perhaps, they used to be on legendary realm when they were alive? Maybe even above that.

Thinking of this, Ye Xiwen had a kind of a scalp tingling sensation. This world really had so many fearful forces with countless peerless experts. The real strength of even one of these dead experts was simply hard to imagine.

And this man was shuttling back and forth in the battalions of these soldiers and killing endlessly. In a blink of an eye, he killed several soldiers of truth fifth stage and their Dead qi was absorbed by him, thereby increasing the intensity of his Swordlight once again.

Even the soldiers of truth sixth stage didn't seem worthy to be his opponent, which clearly showed that he was at the peak of truth sixth stage. Moreover, he was not like ordinary experts of truth sixth stage.

The strength of the peerless geniuses on the Demon Island could not be measured on the same scale as other ordinary geniuses, because even on the same level they possessed varying powers, some having tyrannical strength while some having ordinary strength on the same level. This guy was similar to Ye Xiwen, a genius among geniuses. He was certainly a peak level existence of truth sixth stage.

Then, abruptly, the man in khaki robe saw Ye Xiwen and a sharp look flashed in his eyes. He immediately shot a dazzling Swordlight which rushed towards Ye Xiwen and completely enveloped him.

Ye Xiwen raised his hand and instantly crushed the Swordlight then looked coldly at him and said: "Why would you suddenly attack for no reason?"

With yellow water dripping from his feet, he slowly walked towards Ye Xiwen.

"You are very strong, but this is not the place for you!" The man said.

"That is none of your business!" Ye Xiwen was very unhappy, after all, he was attacked a moment ago for no reason, so how could he just let this go?

Although he was wary of this man, but was certainly not afraid of him.

"Boom!" the man didn't reply and immediately swept an incredibly potent Swordlight. It suddenly surrounded Ye Xiwen from all sides, leaving no scope for escape. Ye Xiwen was unable to breathe properly while facing the huge oppression from this attack.

This man was intrepid and very tyrannical but Ye Xiwen wasn't scared the least.

"Humph!" Ye Xiwen's whole body seemed like it transformed into a bronze statue when he activated 'tyrant body technique'. He now looked just like a reincarnation of an ancient overlord. A long blade instantly appeared in his hand and chopped out a hundred feet long Bladelight. As the Bladelight advanced forward, it vaporized everything in its path and even the space began to fluctuate in its presence. This was the result of Ye Xiwen's perception and understanding of the world laws.

There was an incredibly fierce look on Ye Xiwen's face, making him appear very cold and ominous.

"Boom!" suddenly, Bladelight and Swordlight collided and the severe explosion resulted in an endless sea of light sweeping across in all directions.

As the two attacks mutually annihilated each other, Ye Xiwen

directly rushed forward and his long blade suddenly released endless Bladeqi which transformed into a white dragon and roared towards that man as if to swallow him whole.

'Shua!'

The man also released a rolling Swordqi across the sky and it collided fiercely with the dragon and led to a malicious collision.

An incredible look appeared in the man's eyes because he never expected that Ye Xiwen would be so formidable. He had always been confident about his own strength and thought that he had no rival on the same level, but he never expected to find a tough guy like Ye Xiwen.

This was a showdown between two peak level experts of truth sixth stage. Perhaps in the entire Zhen Wu Jie, there wasn't a single expert stronger than these two, there might be equally powerful experts but definitely not stronger ones.

Immediately, a competitive look flashed in his eyes as he sized up Ye Xiwen. This was the first time he found a challenging opponent on the same level.

"Boom!" the ground collapsed, the tide of destruction swept everything away and the surrounding trees were instantly bulldozed.

Both of them were like peerless killing Gods, maliciously

attacking each other.

There was an equally competitive look in Ye Xiwen's eyes because even he was excited to find a worthy opponent. It was generally not easy to bump into a well-matched opponent. Each and every one of their attacks was mutually cancelling each other. This made them even more excited and motivated towards defeating the opponent with the next shot.

Ye Xiwen could feel that this man didn't bear any killing intention in his heart. It seemed like he was just trying to defend his territory and treating Ye Xiwen as an intruder.

So, Ye Xiwen's killing intention also vanished, but his fighting intention did not reduce.

A majestic aura burst out of Ye Xiwen's body and he continued to attack again and again. His blade was thundering and releasing the finest concepts of world laws with each blade attack.

Even Ye Xiwen could feel that his blade was screaming with excitement. This was the first time he felt such a thing from this long blade, as if the blade's soul had come back to life to bring ruin to this world.

The souls of several heroes were concentrated on the tip of that man's sword. Suddenly, Ye Xiwen saw a giant wheel congealing near the tip of the sword.



Human way!

Beast way!

Heaven way!

Asura way!

Ghost way!

Hell's way!

These six samsara were constantly turning on the wheel!

According to legends, all living beings had to go through 6 different reincarnations. These six reincarnations, also called the six samsara, could be divided into three good ways and three evil ways. The three good ways were called Heaven, Human and Asura; the other three evil ways were Beast, Ghost and Hell. However, although Asura was a good way, when compared to Heaven, it was relatively more inclined towards the evil way, so sometimes it was also considered an evil way. In that case, there were two good ways and four evil ways.

Only in hell could one see these six reincarnations together. And this man had been constantly absorbing the essence and resentment of these so-called dead creatures from River Styx, plus he was actually able to kill them. Something like this was possible only when he had practiced some kind of technique, possibly

related to hell.

"This is my sect's unique skill, six samsara, you have been warned." The man warned Ye Xiwen.

Six samsara was just like a grinding disc as it dropped from the clouds. An ear piercing sound resounded through the sky and its rotation speed was so fast that it was giving rise to storms everywhere, as if the whole world was going to perish any moment.

Ye Xiwen also did not show any weakness. The long blade danced in his hands and summoned a huge diagram of a full moon in the sky!

The massive full moon diagram swept across the sky and pressed down towards the six samsara attack.

It seemed as if the ninth heaven itself had descended in this world.

"Boom!" a horrifying explosion occurred with the collision of the two tyrannical attacks, destroying everything within the radius of several miles.

The dust and smoke dispersed, revealing a scene where Ye Xiwen's long blade was put across the man's neck. So, Ye Xiwen's full moon diagram had annihilated the six samsara.

"I lost!" The man seemed somewhat frustrated as he said this but he looked somewhat relaxed as well.

Although he did not have any card to use against Ye Xiwen, even Ye Xiwen was in the same situation. Yes, they did not carry on a life and death battle, but their attacks were earth shattering from the beginning and were meant to kill the opponent. But in the end, he realized that he was not Ye Xiwen's opponent.

"Initially, I thought that since we both are on the same level, I will have enough strength to defeat you, but it looks like my practice is not enough." The man said in a somewhat self-ridiculing manner, but there wasn't a shred of discouragement in his tone.

## Chapter 234: Truth Sixth Stage

---

"Initially, I thought that since we both are on the same level, I will have enough strength to defeat you, but it looks like my practice is not enough." The man said in a somewhat self-ridiculing manner, but there wasn't a shred of discouragement in his tone.

The God's favored ones like him, he must have experienced many tribulations and sufferings. How could one or two failures discourage such a person? Unless he was some pampered prince, but judging from his appearance, he didn't seem like one. He didn't seem like the arrogant type rather, he seemed like someone who would never betray a friend.

"I must say, you are truly super strong for someone on truth sixth stage." Ye Xiwen smiled and praised him.

This was not nonsense after all Ye Xiwen had always been super strong when compared to other experts on the same level so it was really hard to find a rival on the same level. It could be said that the future prospects of such a person was basically immeasurable.

"Why didn't you kill me? I was the one who started this." The man asked.

"Because you do not have the intention to kill, and I am not the type of guy who involves himself in needless indiscriminate slaughter." Ye Xiwen said. He always respected other fighters and didn't believe in killing for fun. Of course, if someone intended to kill him, he wouldn't hesitate to kill either.

"Well, that's good." The man smiled. "I am Mu Ling, Yellow river sect's disciple."

Ye Xiwen gawked for a moment because he had never heard of this sect, although there was nothing strange about it, after all, there were innumerable sects in this world and he was not an encyclopedia.

"Ye Xiwen, I am a disciple from Yi Yuan School." Ye Xiwen said and realized that Mu Ling must have been practicing in the depths of the demon island for a long time otherwise he should have definitely heard recent rumors about him.

Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling chatted for a while and got to know each other. Ye Xiwen discovered that he had practiced a special martial technique and was able to use the yellow water for cultivation. Particularly, a yellow spring was simply a godsend gift for such practitioners. Since the seniors from his sect had also been summoned before, he knew that the yellow river appeared every night in the depths of this island.

Mu Ling had been practicing here for some time and didn't want Ye Xiwen to discover his secret, so he used the scare tactic on Ye Xiwen.

When Mu Ling heard that Ye Xiwen planned to go further deep into the forest, he frowned and said: "I urge you to not go too close to that ominous mountain. The people of Yellow river sect are most sensitive to Dead qi and that mountain is probably hiding a

terrible secret, something that you shouldn't involve yourself with."

"I thank you for the heads up, I will stay cautious." Ye Xiwen said.

At this time, the currents in yellow river got stronger all of a sudden and even the new influx of soldiers, appearing in the river, were getting stronger than before with extremely high-level soldiers. Some demon beasts and human soldiers appeared to be of half-step legendary realm, arranged in neat ranks and marching towards an unknown destination.

According to what Mu Ling said, the souls and resentments in River Styx from 6 pm onward till midnight weren't usually too strong, but for the rest of the night, incomparably fearful monsters would appear in large numbers.

Two giant teams of soldiers were fighting in the yellow river and their strength was also getting more and more intrepid. All night, Ye Xiwen continued to look at this mighty expedition of the dead.

This scene was simply like the legendary fable of demon soldiers.

Horrifying monsters continued to appear for the rest of the night. Just from one look, one would feel their soul being sucked into an infinite ice pit, feeling a kind of an inexplicable chill throughout the body, as if simply crawling out from hell.

Ye Xiwen watched until sunrise when the yellow river gradually

disappeared without a trace.

Fortunately however, as Mu Ling said, these armies of dead soldiers would not attack unless attacked by the living. It was like they were immersed in their own lives, in a mighty campaign which seemed like an undecided battle from when they were alive, and did not care about Ye Xiwen who watched their battle whole night from the sidelines.

Ye Xiwen did not stay there for long. This type of practice style was suitable for Mu Ling, not for him.

Ye Xiwen decided to indulge in absorbing divinities and strengthen 'gilded tyrant form'. He was waiting for his golden body to reach the peak level because then even at his current level he would be able to kill that psycho Jiang Hua in one hit.

It would immediately pick him from the weak spot and place him on the strong spot, making him strong enough for the job.....

As this island had been divided up by the major forces among themselves, and gradually, all of the treasures were seized, after a tangled warfare, the leaders of various forces also determined that it was time to explore the depths of the Demon Island.

They did not come here to fight but to explore this island for its treasures.

In less than a month, various strong alliances had already

explored up to the spot where Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling met.

And at this time, a big rumor broke out which made everyone boil up with excitement. A complete immortal palace was found in a sierra.

Finding a fully intact immortal palace was really a huge achievement. This immediately stirred all of the experts.

In fact just like Ye Xiwen, others also speculated that this island was possibly the residence of a tyrannical influence. In fact, Ye Xiwen had discovered the ruins of a large palace earlier and guessed correctly.

This also indicated the remains of a big adventure, immortal soldiers, ancient martial arts, a variety of immortality pills, all kinds of adventures, all kinds of treasures were likely to occur among these ruins. Moreover, according to their observations, the ancient civilization that resided here was very powerful and terrifying and left behind a magnificent palace. Not to mention, it was an unguarded Immortal palace and several sects must have attacked it in order to obtain the treasures hidden inside but couldn't succeed. For so many years, so many sects and so many experts tried to capture this Immortal palace for its treasures but no one was successful in achieving that. In the end, several factions and sects faced destruction, such as Heavenly Rock faction.

There were countless formidable forces scattered in this vast sea, but this Demon Island was probably far beyond their imagination.



One simply couldn't comprehend the scope of the treasures left behind by an ancient immortal civilization and neither was it easy to make a guess about the vastness of the treasure trove hidden in this Immortal palace.

After obtaining the news, suddenly, numerous experts flew towards the Immortal palace.....

Inside a cave, Ye Xiwen had planted 'Breath Isolation' matrix method and was indulged in closed-door training. He had been like this for full five days.

Ye Xiwen's golden body was glowing and the dark-golden light was illuminating the entire cave.

More and more golden threads were crawling on his bronze flesh, indicating that he had accumulated a large amount of divinity.

During the whole of this month, he had killed countless demon beasts, and finally, the upper half of his body was completely covered with divinity. Gilded tyrant form was half-complete and his cultivation had also reached the point of breakthrough.

His body reached the limit of withstanding the accumulated Zhen Yuan and he needed to step into next stage as soon as possible.

It was always tough for him to have a breakthrough, but at the same time, after the breakthrough, his inner state would be much

stronger than other experts of the same level.

'Mysterious space' was crazily devouring Ling Dans and absorbing Lingqi from them, and under his control, information regarding various martial arts and world laws was being projected in his mind, making all the necessary preparations for stepping into the seventh stage.

It was just like the last-minute cramming up for an exam. He was quickly grasping the knowledge and information required for stepping into the next level, and was able to do so thanks to the presence of mysterious space in his mind.

Zhen Yuan was crazily surging in his body and there was a fast increase in aura. It was always very difficult to control the sudden eruption of aura during a breakthrough.

Therefore, experts generally chose a calm and steady place for having a breakthrough because of the turbulence it created in the surroundings and attracted the attention of people. No one would want to face an enemy during the breakthrough.

However, Ye Xiwen had no other choice since he was on the Demon Island and couldn't possibly expect to find a completely safe place. So, he planted a 'Breath Isolation' matrix method outside the cave with a protective curtain released by Tianyuan mirror on the inside. The motive was to not attract the attention of tyrannical demon beasts.

Ye Xiwen's breath continued to rise bit by bit and quickly reached

the peak of truth fifth stage, followed by reaching the stage barrier.

Ye Xiwen let go of his control on Zhen Yuan and fully mobilized it within his body.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's breath suddenly rose and directly reached truth sixth stage in one fell swoop. There was no ordinary gap between fifth and sixth stage and he finally crossed this gap. Before this breakthrough, he was able to beat a peak level expert of the sixth stage. So, now his battle strength would certainly have an enormous growth.

Ye Xiwen opened his eyes and a smile appeared on his face. Now, he could easily beat the experts of truth seventh stage which placed him among the few top experts on this island.

Ye Xiwen stood up, withdrew the matrix method and Tianyuan mirror, instantly turned into a streamer of light and vanished into the horizon. Yes, he was going towards the rumored Immortal palace.

# Chapter 235: Gathering Outside The Immortal Palace

---

This was an Immortal palace, magnificent, simply beyond the imagination of mortals. It was perfectly conceivable that the status of this palace's master would also be beyond anyone's comprehension.

But at this time, this palace was actually home to ghostly figures shutting back and forth and patrolling the palace.

From time to time, frightening howls could be heard coming from the palace.

Ye Xiwen as if treading a rainbow arrived near the palace and frowned. One must know that this was not the only palace on the Demon Island. Although all the other palaces were in the form of ruins, from the wreckage, one could still find some clues.

However, this was the first time he saw a perfectly preserved palace on this island, indicating that it was definitely an extraordinary place; after all, it managed to survive through endless time.

Ye Xiwen was not the first expert to come here. Many experts had already arrived here, almost 200-300 experts were gathered outside the Immortal palace and it seemed like they did not belong to any of the existing alliances.

"I am still not sure whether we will find stunning treasures inside this palace."

"Treasures, humph, I think there is something ominous lurking inside. You see, this terrain has nine large dragon signs wrapped up in one package. It seems this has contained the Yinqi in the palace for millions of years. Deducing from my geomancy concepts, I can clearly say that this so-called Immortal palace is actually the finest dragon tomb. Do you actually think that mere Yinqi can give birth to such vicious ghost soldiers? Perhaps, the king of ghosts is buried in this tomb!" A disciple put forward his theory based on geomancy.

"Then, we may actually find some super precious stuff in there."

"God knows, this Demon Island is too weird. The civilization that lived here seemed to have faced annihilation in the past; God knows what happened to them."

"Anyway, seeking treasures and wealth is always risky. There is no such thing as a safe adventure and rewards are always attainable at the end of a risky adventure." A disciple said with disdain.

Ye Xiwen looked at those ghost soldiers and noticed that almost all of them were experts of truth third and fourth stage. Although they did not have the mass, they must have used some kind of unique cultivation method for souls. This was the reason why they possessed such terrifying strength.

In a while, the major alliances finally started to come one by one.

The first to come was the famous Eagle Union. Several mighty experts were flying across the sky, led by a man of strong build like a young dragon, with a resolute face and an aquiline nose like an eagle. He was the chief of Eagle Union named Warhawk.

Warhawk was aggressive and competitive, just like a peerless barbarian god, blazing with anger and fierceness in his eyes. No one dared to look straight into his eyes.

Ye Xiwen glanced towards Warhawk, the man who firmly held his status as the chief of Eagle Union even after the great reshuffle a few months ago. His strength was simply unimaginable.

So the rumor about him being an expert of truth eighth stage was not false, and even if he recently stepped into the eighth stage, he was still a fearful expert. Moreover, he would most likely step into ninth stage before leaving this island. This was the limit of truth realm that true disciples needed to reach before stepping into half-step legendary realm. Not to mention, even in a major force like Yi Yuan School, there used to be only four pro-disciples of half-step legendary realm and they were basically not considered true disciples.

It was really hard to imagine that Warhawk was not even 50 years old but still possessed such a tyrannical strength.

"Isn't that Eagle Union's chief, Warhawk? He is so young but still has profound strength!"

"Yes, during the reshuffle, several tyrannical chiefs were kicked out from their own alliances. Only the Eagle Union was an exception."

"Perhaps, Warhawk's strength can be counted among the topmost hidden powerhouses of this island. He really deserves the title of Eagle Union's chief."

Then, there was another commotion and a group of young women arrived there. Under the bright moonlight, they looked just like a group of fairies flying in the sky.

They were led by a beautiful woman, roughly 17-18 years old, clad in a white long skirt. She basically looked like an ice-woman with curved black eyebrows and her big eyes were twinkling and keeping an eye on everyone on the scene. She gave off the feel of an aloof woman who wouldn't allow a man near her.

She was Ji Moon, the chief of Goddess Union.

"Goddess Union has arrived, gee, all of them are reigning beauties and probably the strongest and most beautiful women throughout the southeast region are centralized in this alliance." A disciple said with an amazed expression on his face.

Even these so-called peerless geniuses had no alternative but to gaze upon the beauties of Goddess Union from afar.

"Especially Goddess Union's chief, Ji Moon. She is so beautiful, enough to cause the downfall of an entire nation. If I can get intimate with her, this life will not be in vain."

"Stop dreaming man, although we are the so-called outstanding geniuses of our respective sects, how can we be on par with Ji Moon? She belongs to a very influential clan from Central Plains, not to mention she is very talented and has already stepped into truth seventh stage. She is basically unattainable even for men like us."

The Goddess Union basically included only female experts. When compared to male experts, female experts generally had vulnerable Xiantian states such as physical strength and what not.

Irrespective of levels, female experts were not dominant in quantity or quality. For example, among the pro-four disciples of Yi Yuan School, there was only one female disciple, Shui Yanluo, and she was not the strongest either.

But there were always some exceptions who managed to break this general trend.

These women were undoubtedly one of the best.

No one would dare to look down on them!

"Purple Union has also arrived!" At this time, a group of people dressed in purple robes were seen flying in the sky and rushing



towards the Immortal palace.

A young guy with dignified appearance was leading them. He was as if walking in the sky and with each step he took, he crossed several hundred meters, showing a fearful agility skill level. He was named Wang Purple, the chief of Purple Union.

Outsiders might not know but he was a star disciple of his sect and would one day become the emperor of his kingdom. So, his ambitious nature and courage could be imagined.

"Three of the four great alliances have already arrived here, leaving only the Wan True Union. I don't know whether their chief will make an appearance or not. It is said that he is a mysterious guy and possesses extraordinary strength, but no one has actually seen him."

"It doesn't matter whether he comes or not. His two deputy chiefs are more than enough for the job."

The great reshuffle had given rise to four major alliances on the Demon Island namely Eagle Union, Goddess Union, Purple Union and the Wan True Union. The strength of each of these four great alliances was far more than other alliances. Hence, they were known as the four super alliances.

Eagle Alliance was an established alliance and had existed from the start. It even survived through the reshuffle, but the most mystical alliance among the super alliances was the Wan True Union. No one had seen its chief and only by relying on its two

deputy chiefs, it was ranked among the super alliances.

As the experts were discussing among themselves, suddenly, there was a mighty burst of imposing aura and the Wan True Union finally made an appearance. A line of dozens of mighty experts quickly rushed to the scene.

But, the one leading them was none other than that psycho, Jiang Hua. Ye Xiwen noticed that after resting for two months, Jiang Hua seemed to have fully recovered except the empty sleeve hanging in the place of his hand that was blown up by Ye Xiwen.

After the four super alliances had arrived here in full, everyone was excited, because now they could finally start the real raid on the Immortal palace. At this time, those ghost soldiers patrolling the palace were the biggest problem.

Although Ye Xiwen was keeping a close eye on Jiang Hua, he was not in a rush and knew that now was not the right time to take revenge.

Not just Jiang Hua but the entire Wan True Union would feel his wrath one day!

Ye Xiwen was still furious about what happened, about their unreasonable behavior and would certainly teach them a very simple concept; when you try to be overbearing to someone, you must first check who you are dealing with.

"Ye Xiwen, this palace is very ominous and is certainly not an ordinary palace, perhaps it really is an Immortal palace as the rumors say!" Ye Mo said, "The waves of energy leaking from the palace seem different, nothing like the ominous aura attached with ordinary Dead qi. There is definitely something extraordinary hidden inside."

However, at this time, other warriors could not bear the waiting and immediately wanted to go inside to seize the treasures which would surely shock the world.

But soon, they got over the temptation of treasures and began to worry about the dangers that might arise inside the Immortal palace. Though in their view, even if there was danger inside, they were not afraid to take the risks since there were so many of them.

Perhaps, this courage was the so-called effect of 'unity is strength'!

However, the crowd did not rush inside for a very simple reason, because it was still night. They all knew that Yinqi and resentment grew stronger during the night and these ghost soldiers might actually display 120% of their daytime strength!

In the end, they decided to wait till dawn!

## Chapter 236: Ghost Soldiers Cavalry

---

At sunrise, the ghost soldiers would begin to lose strength and would be considerably weakened.

Night time passed quickly while everyone was quietly waiting for sunrise. The experts knew that they could go all out as soon as the sun rose in the eastern sky.

As expected, the ghost soldiers were really weakened a lot.

"Attack!"

At this time, no one knew who shouted but hundreds of experts instantly rushed towards the Immortal palace like a mighty force advancing to pillage a nation.

As soon as the ghost soldiers saw the human experts rushing towards the palace, the billowing Yinqi soared to the sky and formed endless clouds, sealing it.

Grand explosions occurred one after another, again and again.

The mighty force galloped, the ground trembled vigorously, and immediately in the next quarter, battalions of ghost soldiers began to emerge one after another with their imposing aura soaring to the sky.

These ghost soldiers were clad in ancient iron armors and grasping iron lances in their hands. All of them were riding various types of dead demon beasts and rushing straight towards the group of experts.

"How can these ghost soldiers be so formidable? Damn, there are so many of them!" Several experts exclaimed.

However, in just a moment, a cavalry of several thousand ghost soldiers had already appeared, each having considerably high level and terrifying aura. Moreover, more and more ghost soldiers kept on appearing as if there was no end to this.

"There are too many of them, also, why are these ghost soldiers so formidable? How do we deal with them?" Their complexions suddenly changed.

"Why are so many of these ghost soldiers in this immortal palace, don't tell me, the King of Ghosts is also among them?" An expert shouted.

At this time, the complexions of other experts suddenly changed. They knew well what kind of existence the King of Ghosts actually was.

The so-called ghosts in this world were not the same as the ghosts in Ye Xiwen's past life. The ghosts in this world were more evil and smart, congealed from lingering resentments and Yinqi and were capable of having cultivation.

But the Ghost King was the scariest being among them all. It was a dreadful existence and also the commander of the ghost troops. If the Ghost King was really commanding this ghost cavalry, the experts were really in danger, in fact, there was a possibility of facing complete annihilation.

"We have come all the way to this immortal palace. Should we really withdraw at the first sign of danger? Do you all think withdrawing now is useful?" At this time, someone from the crowd shouted.

Greed suddenly took over the major part of their hearts, giving rise to a desire to win this battle. Indeed, withdrawing now was simply a waste of time, effort, and such a rare opportunity.

At this time, Ye Xiwen thought that they made a blunder by waiting till dawn thinking that the ghost soldiers would be weakened during the day. Indeed, they were weakened but the sudden emergence of thousands of ghost soldiers cavalry was really beyond their calculations.

The Yinqi was soaring in the sky and dense ink-like black clouds were spread in it, blocking the sunlight thoroughly and invoking terror in the hearts of the people present there. Ye Xiwen felt as if he was standing on the set of a horror movie.

The ghost cavalry comprising of thousands of ghost soldiers was rushing towards the experts. The soldiers were shouting and looked glorious in their shining black armors. There was a flood of killing intentions in the sky and it seemed as if the whole world was shaking in the presence of this mighty cavalry.

This scene was very shocking. Thousands of ghost soldiers were galloping and radiating large mass of dark Yinqi towards the sky. It seemed as if a mighty tide of iron and steel was coming towards the experts destroying and crushing anything in its way.

The cold wind howled, the towering old trees were uprooted and disintegrated into bits while the leaves as if performed a chaotic dance in the air and scattered in all directions.

This was a mighty force that swept everything in its way. In fact, even the heavy boulders that came in the way of this cavalry couldn't withstand the impact and simply turned into dust.

Nothing could stop this cavalry as they were advancing with the spears to the front, fully prepared to destroy all visible matter in their path.

But even such a terrifying scene was unable to suppress the excitement and greed towards immortal treasures and the experts also rushed forward.

However, they wouldn't dare to underestimate the enemy.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Several experts on the forefront were instantly blasted away with the first impact of the ghost cavalry and died on the spot.

Several experts were injured and were spewing out blood from their mouths while several others were torn to shreds and instantly lost their lives.

The ghost soldiers were roaring again and again. The ghost soldiers condensed Dead qi in their hands, then seized several experts and directly crushed them to death.

It seemed as if a terrible force swept past like a surging black tide.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

After some time, the cavalry finally slowed down and the experts also got a chance to display their best attacks.

A cavalry's biggest advantage is its running speed, and once slowed down, it is almost similar to being trampled on by the opposite side.



These experts were not ordinary people but a group of peerless geniuses. Each and every one of them possessed secret martial arts. Once they began the slaughter, the scenario suddenly changed on the battlefield.

Several ghost soldiers were immediately killed by the experts and directly turned into mist, changing back into resentments.

"Let's go, brothers!" Warhawk shouted loudly, and leading the members of Eagle Union, he flew towards the palace. The ghost soldiers who tried to come in their way were instantly slaughtered, and within seconds, hundreds of ghost soldiers had been annihilated.

The experts of Goddess Union also started to catch up, not to mention their battle efficiency was truly intrepid and simply unimaginable. The ghost soldiers didn't stand a chance in front of these beauties.

The ghost cavalry was caught off guard and the human experts took this opportunity to run past them in the direction of the Immortal Palace.

"Bang!"

But at this time, endless thundering sounds transmitted throughout the surroundings and the experts saw thousands of ghost soldiers rushing out from the Immortal palace

"My turn!" Wang Purple waved his hand and there suddenly appeared a large imperial ghost-like figure behind him. It instantly threw an imperial jade seal that maliciously fell towards the ghost cavalry.

"Boom!" with a loud noise, the imperial jade seal fell down like a heavy mountain and caused a massive explosion.

This led to the annihilation of hundreds of ghost soldiers.

The ghost soldiers simply did not stand a chance in front of such a potent attack.

Ye Xiwen recognized the technique that Wang Purple used just now. It was called 'Martial Emperor' and the practitioners used this method to release mighty Dragon qi. Not to mention, Dragon qi was basically positive energy, hence the natural nemesis of ghost soldiers. Just like Ye Xiwen's 'Coiling Dragon palm'.

Jiang Hua also shot his palm and released a huge divine beam of light which fell down upon the ghost cavalry and killed many.

His tyrannical strength had not decreased even after losing a hand. On the contrary, there was a slight improvement in his strength.

And at this time, Ji Moon also attacked by shooting waves of divine beams towards the ghost cavalry and killing many in one fell swoop.

Under the leadership of these four leaders, the human expert party swept all the way inside.

The experts didn't have time to waste on exclaiming in bewilderment and quickly rushed towards the palace door.

After storming all the way to the Immortal palace, the experts saw that the palace door was tightly closed. Earlier, the ghost cavalry had directly passed through this door, but humans could not go inside like this.

"Let's go!" At this time, a long spear appeared in Warhawk's hands.

An eagle's cry resounded everywhere and a golden eagle came out of the spear fluttering its golden wings and flew straight towards the palace door at an incredible speed.

"Boom!"

The golden eagle directly crashed on the palace door and cracks began to surface on the seemingly indestructible door. Its supernatural power was simply comparable to the demon beasts.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Loud explosions reverberated everywhere and the main door of Immortal palace quickly collapsed. Everyone was dumbfounded and gaped at Warhawk in astonishment. His attack was incredible and could easily kill the experts of truth seventh stage. Having such power and cultivation was difficult to imagine.

"Boom!" with a loud rumble, the main door of Immortal palace directly collapsed into pieces.

However, no one got a chance to celebrate because all of a sudden, a mighty current of innumerable ghost soldiers swept towards them from the inside.

Warhawk didn't show the slightest hint of fear and his long spear instantly released countless golden eagles towards the ghost soldiers. The attack was very effective and annihilated large numbers of ghost soldiers.

"This Warhawk is really incredible, damn, no wonder he has maintained his status as the chief of Eagle Union. No one here can beat this guy!"

"He is far more than an ordinary expert. Just at look at how he is single-handedly sweeping through the enemy lines. Such a person is simply a born evildoer/monster."

"Kill, yes, all we need is to kill some ghost soldiers and make a way through the cavalry then we can obtain immortal treasures!"

The hidden treasures of Immortal Palace once again induced greed in everyone's heart giving rise to infinite power and courage in their hearts and they suddenly rushed inside the palace.

Ye Xiwen also swept all the way inside while his whole body was wrapped around by a coiling dragon and those ghost soldiers simply couldn't get close to him. But since he was flying behind the other human experts, no one noticed that there was one more peerless killer God among them who was actually a natural nemesis of these ghost soldiers.

# Chapter 237: Hairy Zombies

---

Ye Xiwen swept all the way inside following the group of other experts while simultaneously killing the ghost soldiers that were coming from behind. Although other experts were enticed by the immortal treasures, Ye Xiwen was not like them and was maintaining his calm!

In his opinion, one can be excited while doing something, but too much of anything is not good. One must never be irrational and always act with reason.

"Kill!" Battle cries echoed everywhere inside the palace and ghost soldiers rushed forward to stop the intruders.

"These ghost soldiers are strange, but there are still some differences between them and the ones we saw in the yellow river." Ye Xiwen calmly analyzed without losing his head like the other experts.

The ghost soldiers kept on coming like endless tides. No matter how many of them were killed by the experts, there was no end to them. This was normal since these soldiers did not have mass and were formed out of Yinqi and killing intentions.

Yinqi was abundant inside the Immortal Palace and it was endlessly producing ghost soldiers.

Human experts rushed towards the depths of the Immortal Palace and slaughtered countless ghost soldiers along the way. Ye

Xiwen was not far behind them and suddenly saw a large pool of blood on the floor. According to his estimate, at least several dozen experts had been seriously injured by the ghost soldiers.

While advancing towards the palace depths, it took half a day's worth of effort to finally get rid of those ghost soldiers. The experts' team had serious losses, with each super alliance losing several members, not to mention a lot of the dead experts belonged to unknown sects.

They finally arrived in the inner chambers of the palace. The palace looked enormous from the outside but was even more enormous and very spacious on the inside. Some kind of space matrix method was used to increase the size of the palace from the inside by expanding the space itself.

Ye Xiwen was not in a hurry and was slowly advancing while keeping a nominal distance from the team of experts. He was like a grown up looking at some kids as they were rushing in excitement to get candies.

Then, abruptly, there came intermittent waves of terrible screams, resembling shrill cries of a fighter. It caught Ye Xiwen's attention all of a sudden and he was surprised to see several hairy zombies running amuck everywhere.

These zombies had thin physiques and were holding lances and long spears in their hands. They were clad in iron armors and their whole bodies were covered with long black hair. They looked grim and horrifying with their glowing fangs and were continuously releasing ominous Yinqi from their bodies. Whenever soldiers died

in this immortal palace, they would rise again as zombie soldiers and would forever stay in the control of this palace all the while unable to reincarnate.

Ye Xiwen held his breath when he saw this scene. These hairy zombies were incapable of thinking, had no self-control or reasoning ability, and only lived as walking dead in the endless desire for blood. They didn't age, didn't extinguish, couldn't die, and were basically abandoned by the 3 realms. Not to mention, they weren't allowed into the 6 reincarnations cycle, making them destitute, helpless and homeless for eternity. Their bodies were stiff and they instinctively blamed the entire world. Living as dead in endless solitude, they loathed all living creatures and only longed for blood.

The zombies had practiced 'Copper skin iron bone' cultivation method and the long hair on their bodies was acting like an incredibly tough protective layer. The toughness of their hair armor was higher than that of a copper-steel frame. Not to mention, all of them had high cultivation levels. When all these attributes were taken into consideration, no wonder even the strongest attacks from the human experts didn't injure the zombies.

These zombies were not just a collection of Yinqi like the ghost soldiers. Instead, they were originally mere corpses that soaked Yinqi for countless years to grow the impenetrable hair armor.

In addition to that, they moved on killing instincts and felt endless hatred towards the living. But the good news was that they were all lower level zombies and didn't possess wisdom or



consciousness, otherwise, they could easily massacre the entire team of experts in one fell swoop.

Even so, the human expert party faced severe losses.

More than a dozen experts were directly stabbed by the lances and nailed to the ground.

Although there were many cut wounds on the bodies of the zombies, they simply did not feel pain or fear, making them very terrifying.

Ye Xiwen was carefully observing the zombies and noticed that although their armors and helmets were damaged, there was no damage to the hair armor.

Ye Xiwen shot his palm, a huge dragon flew towards a zombie and tore it into two halves, then, crushed its core. It happened so quickly that the zombie didn't even get a chance to struggle.

When other experts saw how Ye Xiwen killed a zombie, they finally got to know how to deal with the them. It was unusually hard to kill them, but now they knew that they were heading in the wrong direction altogether. They just needed to crush the zombie core to kill a zombie. Zombie core was similar to demon core.

Thanks to Ye Xiwen, the experts now knew how to deal with this situation after all, they had never dealt with zombies before.

"Ye Xiwen, something is off here." Ye Mo said, "The concentration of Yinqi is really strong. Look at this, so many zombies have gathered here, now just imagine the amount of Yinqi required for producing so many zombies."

In general, it was very difficult to produce zombies and the production method simply went against the heaven's will. A zombie was not allowed in any of the realms, including heaven, so one could imagine the tragedy they must face in their eternal lifespan.

However, the zombies could not just breed out of Yinqi. And in the presence of sunlight, this process was simply impossible.

Only in a tomb with its own spiritual pulse for gathering Yinqi, the mass production of zombies was possible.

Emperors often chose such a feature in their tombs to protect their tombs from raiders.

Ancient legends said that emperors of ancient times would dig their own tombs in advance. They would choose a valuable land with good geomantic design, having an endless amount of Lingqi being supplied from the dragon veins. These were necessary conditions to breed ferocious zombies in a period of hundreds of years. Jin officers knew the means to avoid the traps and mechanisms inside the tombs, but even they could not escape from the zombies. The zombies never discriminated when it came to killing and were extremely brutal. Once the tomb was dug open,

they would come out to cause havoc. And in the troubled times, when the authorities did not act in time, the area of several hundred miles around the tomb would become desolate in the zombie apocalypse.

Therefore, ordinary people despised the very work-line of Jin officers, who usually died without an heir!

The ordinary tombs on Earth were nothing like the Yin tombs of this world. Perhaps, even the original tomb of the First Emperor did not have such a frightening presence when it was unearthed.

Very harsh conditions were required to give birth to the zombies, but the presence of so many zombies here was a result from the availability of bodies of dead soldiers. Not to mention, a massive amount of Yinqi was present here that could easily breed countless zombies.

"This palace is not really a peerless dragon tomb as we thought." Ye Mo said in a somewhat doubtful manner because the palace interiors did not look like a tomb. "A great master has most likely died here, and after his death, a tomb spontaneously formed at his resting place."

"The death of a great master will immediately promulgate a law that will automatically give rise to a tomb at the place where he fell." Ye Mo said.

The blood from the bodies of wounded zombies and killed experts mixed thoroughly to form a river of blood.

Ye Xiwen was walking in this river of dark red blood, constantly killing zombies and fiercely fighting with many of them at once.

Suddenly, the commander of the hairy zombies appeared. His strength was quite tyrannical, though far worse than his real strength when he used to be alive, but after becoming a zombie, he now possessed tyrannical flesh and it was very difficult to deal with him.

Warhawk immediately stepped forward to deal with him.

His mighty roar echoed as he rushed towards the zombie commander.

"Roar!" a formidable zombie roared and leaped towards Ye Xiwen.

It suddenly brandished its lance and a dreadful cold and poisonous Dead qi, in the form of a gorgeous beam of light, flew towards Ye Xiwen.

This zombie was very strong and was actually at the peak of truth sixth stage.

Ye Xiwen bellowed and stretched out his hand, releasing rays of golden light as if flooding towards that zombie. At this time, Ye Xiwen looked just like the reincarnation of an ancient Sun God.

Ye Xiwen caught the poisonous Dead qi in his hand and crushed it. Then he jumped forward, arrived in front of the zombie in a flash and directly kicked on its stiff chest.

"Boom!" its sternum was directly shattered by this kick and its whole body was sent flying, crashing into a pillar and falling heavily to the ground.

"Roar!" however, it obviously was not willing to give up. It again discharged poisonous Dead qi towards Ye Xiwen.

But this poisonous Dead qi couldn't possibly break through the protective layer of Zhen Yuan on Ye Xiwen's body. Right now, his battle strength was at the peak of truth seventh stage so the zombie simply didn't stand a chance.

"Ye Xiwen, kill it!" Ye Mo said. These zombies were nothing but corpses filled with hatred for all living beings. They were banned from stepping into 6 samsara cycle and were basically tired of living on like this. Ye Xiwen was doing the right thing by killing them and freeing their souls in the process.

Ye Xiwen lifted his foot and stamped on the zombie's head. Its head instantly exploded along with the disintegration of its core.

Ye Xiwen did not stop and proceeded to slay other zombies.

## Chapter 238: Contest For A Dao Book

---

The situation got intense and far beyond the imagination of the experts. They never expected to find so many ghost soldiers and terrifying hairy zombies inside the immortal palace.

“Damn it, this is simply a peerless tomb. Where is that son of a bi\*\*h who said this palace has a peerless treasure trove?” An expert could not control his anger and cursed out loud.

Now they were at their limits and basically frustrated, after all, they were considered peerless geniuses and still faced so much difficulty in dealing with the dead, not to mention several experts were not even able to enter the immortal palace.

A total of more than one thousand experts broke into the palace but only after experiencing so many casualties, they came to realize why the Demon Island was called genius meat grinder.

However, although these zombies were very powerful, they were not as violent as these experts. Although there were hundreds of casualties in the human expert team, the zombies and ghost soldiers had more casualties.

As they continued to go all the way inside, more and more ghost soldiers and zombies appeared in large numbers because of the entanglement of resentment and Lingqi, raising corpses of the soldiers back from the dead.

Ye Xiwen and the others finally arrived in a hall, only to see

corpses lying everywhere on the floor. These corpses had not yet transformed into zombies but it could be seen that they were rotting for a long time. Several corpses had already decayed to the point of leaving behind piles of bones.

Many bones were actually corroded as if swept by the aftermath of a large attack, crushing several bones to dust.

The experts encountered several skeleton monsters on the way but nothing could stop them from advancing.

Working together as a team, they continued to rush all the way inside.

Ye Xiwen had a kind of a bad feeling in his heart because the soldiers who died in this palace either turned into ghost soldiers, skeletons or zombies. If the ruler of this immortal palace was preserved in this tomb and his corpse turned out to be fully intact, then what if he suddenly rose back from the dead? Then they would be in huge trouble!

But they were already here so they did not have an alternative but to advance further.

Fortunately however, before his doubts evolved any further, they finally arrived in an open hall, and in the center of this spacious hall, a dignified looking man was sitting cross-legged and calmly looking into the distance as if disdainfully looking down on all the living beings.

Everyone suddenly stopped and did not dare to approach. Being cautious was essential since there were really too many strange things on this island and they had gotten used to being wary all the time.

After a long time of observation, Warhawk suddenly said: “He is already dead!”

At this time, everyone relaxed and they felt that although this man looked kind of invincible, had no aura or presence. He was not even releasing ice-cold breath like the zombies.

Everyone was finally relieved at this moment.

A cold wind blew out of nowhere and the whole body of this man suddenly turned into a pile of sand and flew together with the wind.

He died in a [seated posture](#)!

zuò huà: to die in a seated posture [Buddhism]

Everyone was astonished and could not believe their eyes.

This was something only legendary beings with good fortune could achieve. It was said that as long as the corpses of mighty experts were left behind, there was a possibility that they might rise from the dead; therefore, using the seated posture method was a way out.



And so there was a myth about the powerhouses that they would always be considered a legend in life and in death. Even if they died, they would not decay or disappear like ordinary people. It was said that since they possess formidable strength, even the experts of truth realm could directly evolve into zombies if their corpses were left intact. Although the possibility was very less and would be close to zero if placed under the sun, after all, these were just myths and recognition from the world principles was also necessary. But, once they turned into zombies, the whole world would face a big disaster. The seniors would refuse to acknowledge their families and some sects suffered heavy losses because of this, finally leading to their complete decline. Moreover, letting the corpse of a senior turn into a zombie was undoubtedly equivalent to causing great disrespect!

Therefore, some people chose to die in a sitting posture but this occurred only in the myths and only legendary level characters could perform it. Now that the experts saw this with their eyes, they could not help but feel excited.

Because when someone died in a sitting posture, the world principles comprehended by him would be blown off in a massive explosion. If at that time, someone stood by their side and came in contact with these principles, they would obtain enormous benefits.

Of course, this man should have died countless years ago so what they saw was only a wisp of what could have been his real corpse. But this scene was still enough to shock them.

After the man's figure faded in the wind, everyone saw a book

made of unknown metal lying on the ground. It had only a few thin pages but it was exuding fluctuating Dao patterns. They immediately understood that this book definitely contained an earth-shattering martial power technique, and it was not just recorded, it was still emitting waves of Dao patterns. From this itself, one could imagine the level of martial technique recorded in this book.

But everyone was standing calm, no one dared to go forward, fearing that they would end up in a dispute and someone else might benefit as the third party.

“This Dao book is mine!” Suddenly, Warhawk stepped forward grasping his eagle spear and instantly rushed towards the Dao book to seize it.

“Give up the idea!”

“How dare you!”

“Dream on!”

Suddenly, several experts shouted and various martial attacks were aimed at Warhawk from behind.

“Bi!” the loud cry of a giant golden eagle resounded in the hall. It extended its wings to block the incoming attacks and protect Warhawk and then flew towards the Dao book to clutch it in its claws.

But at this time, the experts who attacked Warhawk were unable to control themselves and rushed forward. If they did not act now, the book would fall into the hands of Warhawk.

“Bold, how dare you claim this book as if it belongs to you? This book belongs to me!” At this time, Wang Purple instantly shot his jade seal towards Warhawk to suppress him.

“Boom!” Warhawk instantly drew back to dodge and the jade seal fiercely crashed into the floor and opened a huge hole.

“Bastard, you really want to become Wan True Union’s enemy?” At this time, Jiang Hua also jumped into the skirmish and congealed a big hand that instantly went forward to grasp the book.

“Whoosh!” yhe sound of an arrow echoed when Ji Moon shot an arrow and it instantly punctured into that big hand and made it explode.

Now everyone was involved in this so-called contest for the Dao book without even knowing its contents or what kind of secret technique was described in it. Was it really a Dao book or something else?

Perhaps there were not many of such type of Dao books in Zhen Wu Jie. Dao books were generally used to record marvelous techniques; otherwise, just recording the technique would not cause such fluctuating patterns. In fact, a legendary book like this

had never been seen before even by the higher ups of their sects.

They would certainly not let go of such an item.

“Clang!”

“Zheng!”

“Bang!”

Various terrifying explosive sounds echoed throughout the hall.

No need to mention, Warhawk and the other super experts were the fastest and strongest.

Ye Xiwen was watching from a distance and was not in a hurry. He did not want to get involved and was silently observing them like a poisonous snake in the dark, ready to attack anytime and anywhere.

This was the first time the leaders of the four alliances fought and were going all out at this moment. Earlier, they used to have a tacit understanding and did not get involved in meaningless fights, but now, the situation was entirely different.

The leaders of the strongest alliances were bound to participate in this kind of a contest to see who was the strongest and it finally occurred.

Hundreds of experts had initially jumped into the skirmish but this only reached a deadlock. In the end, other than the four super experts, everyone else backed down and no longer dared to come in their way.

Taking advantage of the confusion, an expert of truth third stage rushed forward and extended his hand to grab the Dao book, but suddenly, a huge enchantment barrier appeared around the book and sent him flying. His blood splattered and he fell unconscious.

“Go away, this Dao book is mine!” Warhawk was in a rage and roared again, blue veins appeared on his muscular hands as he threw his eagle spear towards the Dao book.

“Whoosh!” there came a loud and shrill piercing sound as the eagle spear flew towards the Dao book.

“Bang!” the spear fiercely stuck on the book’s enchantment barrier.

“Boom!” a huge explosion took place when the enchantment was abruptly punctured by the eagle spear. Then, it fell down and nailed to the top of a high tower.

This stirred up everyone because they knew that right when the enchantment was broken, the contest would finally arrive to its final stage.

Warhawk suddenly transformed into a golden eagle, flew up and dived towards the Dao book.

“Shua!” everyone watched as he directly grabbed the book in his hands, but at this time, a slender hand caught one page of the book.

## Chapter 239: Showdown With Jiang Hua

---

"Brother Warhawk, I have heard you come from a famous and prestigious clan. I am sure you don't lack such Dao books, might as well give it to me." The sweet voice of Ji Moon sounded in Warhawk's ears.

"Get lost!" Warhawk shouted, his golden Zhen Yuan burst out of his body and rushed towards her. He did not show even a shred of tender affection towards this lovely girl, rather there was decisive killing intention hidden in this attack.

"This book must be handed over to our Wan True Union." A big hand clutched down towards the book.

"I will see who dares to stop me!" Wang Purple shot a divine beam towards the others.

All attacks hit simultaneously on the Dao book.

"Boom!" the terrifying explosion tore the book open and four pages fluttered out in the air. There were only four pages in this Dao book.

At this time, Jiang Hua and others no longer entangled themselves in battle and rushed towards the four pages, each aiming for one page of the Dao book.

Once they were done seizing the Dao book's pages, they saw the

recorded secret technique and could not help but get excited all of a sudden.

Although Jiang Hua was a step slower than the other three super experts, that fact did not prevent him from seizing a page, however, before he could see the secret technique recorded in it, there came a loud dragon roar and a huge shadow dived towards him.

"Bold, who dares to mess with Wan True Union!" Jiang Hua suddenly got furious and turned around to slap his palm towards that huge shadow.

It was actually a coiling dragon. His palm collided with the huge coiling dragon and instantly destroyed it. At this time, he finally looked at the page in his other hand only to find out that it was no longer there. The Dao book's page had already been snatched by a blue figure, yes, by Ye Xiwen.

Jiang Hua's pupils suddenly contracted and he shouted crazily: "It's you!"

"I have been here all along, but it seems deputy-chief Jiang did not notice me." Ye Xiwen indifferently said.

At this time, the other three super experts stopped fighting because they knew that continuing to fight did not make sense. Each person won a page of the Dao book, so it was a win-win situation for all.



If you are too greedy and want to monopolize all the benefits, you end up ruining everything.

As for the others, they simply did not stand a chance against these super experts and could only accept this outcome bitterly.

Actually, right now, everyone was curiously looking at Ye Xiwen. This guy was really courageous, he actually dared to challenge Jiang Hua and the Wan True Union.

"I am surprised to see that you actually dare to appear in front of me." Jiang Hua's eyes instantly revealed signs of extreme hatred. The usual indifferent expression on his face was now replaced by a vicious crazed expression.

The culprit who destroyed his hand was standing right in front of his eyes, so how could he possibly stay calm?

"Why should I not dare to appear in front of you?" Ye Xiwen looked coldly at Jiang Hua and said, "Have you forgotten what I said back then? I shall teach you and your Wan True Union a valuable lesson about why you shouldn't have f\*\*\*ed with me."

The anger could be seen burning intensely in Ye Xiwen's eyes as he stared at Jiang Hua.

Both sides were equally burning with hatred. Some experts remembered hearing rumors about Jiang Hua chasing down an expert and losing an arm in the fight. Could this guy be the one

who blasted Jiang Hua's arm?

Such a vicious enmity was far more than ordinary!

"Quickly hand over the page! Do you actually think that someone like you can have it?" A member of Wan True Union stepped forward and said.

"It seems that deputy-chief Jiang needs a man like you to do his bidding, and do you really think that it's just a matter of one page of a Dao book?" Ye Xiwen grinned and said.

"Shut up and hand over the page, otherwise, killing you won't be a tough task!" Another member of Wan True Union said.

"No need to waste your breath on a dead man. He has dared to provoke our alliance, so he is already a done for." A master of the truth sixth stage said in an authoritative manner. Although he was just an ordinary member of Wan True Union, he used to be the leader of an alliance before the reshuffling and held enough influence.

He immediately rushed forward and his hand transformed into a big hand and stretched out to arrest Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen just flicked his finger.

"Puff!"

In an instant, everyone saw that disciple screaming pitifully and his entire arm was torn off, leaving behind a pool of blood on the floor. He was squealing loudly like a pig.

Ye Xiwen took one step and instantly disappeared in front of everyone. He instantly dashed into the crowd of Wan True Union and had already recognized the faces of those who were mocking and insulting him a while ago.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Almost in a flash, several disciples of Wan True Union were attacked by Ye Xiwen and were chopped into pieces.

They never saw him coming and were suddenly overawed. It took some time to realize that they messed with the wrong guy. However, it was too late because now they had no choice but to stand there like pigs and obediently wait to be butchered by this peerlessly ruthless man!

Moreover, this scene acted as a deterrent for several other experts who were planning on stealing the page from Ye Xiwen later on. After witnessing this carnage, they would never dare to even dream about messing with him.

One must know that Wan True Union mostly consisted of experts of truth fifth stage and sixth stage, but in the face of this death reaper, they certainly did not stand a chance. In fact, there was no room for anyone fight back.

Warhawk and the other super experts were also earnestly watching the whole scene and suddenly frowned. They never knew that a formidable expert like Ye Xiwen was present among them. In their eyes, Ye Xiwen became a reckless guy who was decisive, brave and formidable. These few moments were enough to make them consider him as an equal.

In this world, strength was not only the ultimate law, but also the ultimate justice. In this world, only the strong were revered.

Jiang Hua was stunned for a moment, and within this one moment, Ye Xiwen had already butchered several of his subordinates. His face turned blue with anger as he shouted: "You are courting death! You don't understand what you have done. From now on, you won't have a place to hide on the entire Demon Island!"

As his voice fell, his big hands stretched out and shot a huge mountain of divine light aimed at Ye Xiwen. Compared to two months ago, he was now much more tyrannical and his practice speed was far beyond the imagination of ordinary experts.

However, how could he ever compare to Ye Xiwen? Ye Xiwen shot his palm and released a coiling dragon that roared and flew

directly towards the mountain of divine light and tore it to pieces.

Ye Xiwen jumped towards Jiang Hua, while at the same time, his skin turned golden in color making him appear just like an ancient Overlord reborn.

His power completely burst out and paled the complexions of all the experts present on the scene. How could this guy have such extraordinary strength! His strength was not one bit inferior to that of Warhawk and the other super experts.

Even Jiang Hua was surprised to no limit, after all, in just two months, Ye Xiwen actually managed to grow so powerful. His own practice speed simply could not rival with Ye Xiwen's.

Last time, it had been so difficult for Jiang Hua to deal with Ye Xiwen and he also lost an arm when there was a difference of two levels between the two. But now, Ye Xiwen was clearly much stronger than before, although he himself progressed a lot in the last two months and was on the verge of breaking through to the truth eighth stage.

If he managed to step into the eighth stage then he wouldn't be afraid of anyone on this island. Then, he would have sufficient power to run amuck like those super experts.

But before he could have a breakthrough, he once again clashed with Ye Xiwen; moreover, Ye Xiwen was now much more tyrannical than two months ago.

Thinking of this, an intense killing intention flashed in his bloodshot eyes.

Jiang Hua shouted and congealed a sierra of divine light, so big that there literally was no escape route for Ye Xiwen. This was a battle of life and death and both of them were aware of that.

Under Jiang Hua's command, the huge sierra of divine light descended towards Ye Xiwen. This was the same attack he used last time, but this time, it was more powerful and frightening.

Ye Xiwen also displayed the progress he made in the last two months and sent his coiling dragon towards the descending sierra.

The coiling dragon seemingly devoured the sierra of divine light almost instantly and this caused a massive explosion in the hall.

Last time, Jiang Hua had an overwhelming superiority in the battle, but this time, the tables had turned in Ye Xiwen's favor and Jiang Hua was completely suppressed.

"Boom!" the killing intention spread in all directions and Ye Xiwen went all out, displaying various martial art techniques one after another without restraint.

Jiang Hua also felt the crisis and went all out, displaying various martial techniques. He lifted his hand and a mountain of divine light transformed into a sword and instantly swept towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen did not dodge, just stood there like a mountain. Jiang Hua had clearly been completely suppressed by him, but he did not relax even a bit. He did not want to give any chance to Jiang Hua and decided to end this as fast as possible.

Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant form was working at its best. He just stretched out his palm and effortlessly caught the sword of divine light.

# Chapter 240: Heavenly Phoenix Regeneration Technique

---

"Boom!"

The sword of divine light was directly crushed by Ye Xiwen. He just stood there as if nothing happened. Then, he suddenly rushed forward.

Both sides attacked maliciously and engaged in a fearsome battle.

"Not good!" Jiang Hua noticed that Ye Xiwen's tyrant body had also leveled up in the last two months and now he did not stand a chance against it.

Ye Xiwen arrived in front of Jiang Hua and thrust his palm.

"Bang!" his palm pounded on Jiang Hua's chest and shattered his sternum. He screamed pitifully and spat a mouthful of blood, while simultaneously retreating several dozen meters to escape from Ye Xiwen's next attack.

Jiang Hua was literally shocked to death. He never thought that there would be such a huge disparity between their strengths. Last time, he was the one who completely suppressed Ye Xiwen, and this time, the exact opposite was happening.

He was depressed and felt like vomiting blood.



But at this time, Ye Xiwen's attacks became more and more intense. His hands transformed into a dragon sword and stabbed towards Jiang Hua.

Ye Xiwen's command over the skills he had practiced was so profound that it left everyone stunned.

"Poof!" Jiang Hua couldn't dodge and failed to block Ye Xiwen's sword attack, as a result of which, his other arm was also chopped off by Ye Xiwen.

After practicing gilded tyrant form up to 50%, Ye Xiwen's flesh had become so formidable that his punches and kicks were enough to explode his opponents.

Jiang Hua was enduring severe pain but he still somehow congealed a massive sierra of divine light and shot towards Ye Xiwen.

"Ha!"

Ye Xiwen used his hands to tear this sierra to shreds and immediately rushed towards Jiang Hua.

Ye Xiwen was not sticking to his moves or usual fighting style. He began to understand his own path and felt the blood boiling in his body. He heard the roars of a vicious dragon as if it was coming from his own body.

Ye Xiwen sneered: "Today, you die!"

Ye Xiwen's hands moved slightly and two coiling dragons suddenly soared up, entangled together, and dived towards Jiang Hua.

"Boom!" the two dragons bulldozed Jiang Hua as he severely fell to the ground and the entire palace trembled, stone fragments were sent flying in all directions. A huge crater appeared in the floor and Jiang Hua could not endure anymore when all the bones in his body shattered into pieces and punctured his flesh internally.

Everyone was stunned watching this scene. Ye Xiwen was ridiculously powerful! They originally felt that he was very strong but probably not as strong as the super experts, but after witnessing this battle, they were forced to change their opinions.

Within moments, he crushed a tyrannical expert like Jiang Hua.

Jiang Hua screamed as blood oozed out of the numerous tiny holes in his body. Suddenly, his whole body was enveloped in some kind of scarlet light. He apparently used a secret technique to escape.

At this time, Ye Xiwen stretched out his hand and directly grasped the ball of scarlet light.

"Poof!" Jiang Hua was directly caught by Ye Xiwen and crushed to death.

Everyone froze and their faces revealed dumbfounded expressions. Jiang Hua, a deputy-chief of Wan True Union, was crushed to death by Ye Xiwen. This was a huge loss for Wan True Union, because they not only lost face by losing their deputy-chief and several elite experts, but they also lost an opportunity to obtain the Dao book's page.

A high-level expert was effortlessly killed by Ye Xiwen.

Now they knew that Jiang Hua was never a match of Ye Xiwen.

This was going to stir up the entire Wan True Union and it would make things difficult for Ye Xiwen, after all, Jiang Hua was one of the two deputy-chiefs, not to mention their mysterious leader was still around. When Jiang Hua was strong enough to stand side by side with the other super experts, then one could imagine the strength of this mysterious leader.

So it could be said that although Wan True Union faced a big loss, it was not big enough to cripple them. However, this incident was enough to prove the ruthlessness of Ye Xiwen. Now, no one would dare to mess with him.

At this time, Ye Xiwen appeared extremely horrifying to everyone and his imposing aura was also monstrous.

Ye Xiwen was not in a rush, he just crossed hands behind his back and stood there like a mountain. His very presence was overbearing and unparalleled.

This Dao book was the most precious item in the Immortal Palace, but now that it was divided among four tyrannical experts, no one wished to stay here and dispersed to search the others parts of this enormous palace.

Warhawk and Wang Purple soon left. Only Ji Moon arrived in front of Ye Xiwen, smiled gracefully and said: "Considering what we saw today, I am afraid the news about Brother Ye's invincible strength will soon spread throughout the demon island."

"Fairy maiden is flattering me." Ye Xiwen politely said. He was such a person, kind for kind, ruthless for ruthless. It is easy to be disrespectful to others but takes a big heart to respect them. A person who doesn't know compassion can only respond with arrogance to the politeness shown to them.

"I have come to know that there are some misgivings between our deputy-chief Liu Yueru and Brother Ye. I hope Brother Ye can spare her and not punish her too severely." Ji Moon said.

Ye Xiwen suddenly understood why she had suddenly come to him. He did not know that Liu Yueru actually joined Goddess Union, but he did not care. Nothing big happened between him and her, his direct enmity was with Xiao Zhen, not her.

"She and I have no enmity, just some misunderstanding, nothing

more." Ye Xiwen said.

"That's good! If you have free time later, our Goddess Union will gladly welcome you."

Ji Moon said respectfully, and elegantly flew away.

Ye Xiwen did not follow the experts to the other parts of the Immortal Palace. He sat cross-legged on the spot and began to examine the page.

There were ancient scriptures written all over the page. Since he only got one page, some of the information was divided but he figured that the Dao book definitely belonged to a peerless ancient influence. Stunning Daoist skills were recorded in the book; and on the page seized by Ye Xiwen, the skill recorded was called 'Phoenix Regeneration Technique'. It was a technique born out of phoenix comprehension and granted the magical ability of repairing any injury to the practitioner. For example, he could heal all the injuries he got two months ago within a few breaths with the help of this technique, in fact, he could also re-grow cut off body parts.

Of course, this was going to be possible only after perfecting it, but he had the 'mysterious space' so it shouldn't be a problem. It would just require consumption of many Ling Dans.

Ye Xiwen suddenly held his breath. How was it possible for such a Daoist skill to exist? If he had this skill two months ago then he would not have the need to escape from Jiang Hua.

It could be described as the supreme divine technique of life insurance.

This divine technique was most appropriate for 'Gilded tyrant form'. Once Ye Xiwen would perfect both of these techniques, a trivial attack wouldn't work on him, and even if he was tragically injured in a tyrannical battle, he would use Phoenix Regeneration Technique to regenerate any or all injuries.

It could be estimated that the other three secret techniques were also rare masterpieces of Taoism. Now that they obtained great benefits, they would certainly become his rivals.

However, Ye Xiwen did not want to think much about other people's possessions. For now, the most important task was to master the Phoenix Regeneration Technique. Once perfected, even if he desired death, it would be difficult to die.

Ye Mo saw this secret technique and could not help but jump with excitement: "This secret technique probably comes from the ancient race of Mystical Phoenix, passed down from generation to generation, but the Phoenix race vanished from the Ten Thousand Worlds Community countless years ago. I must say, this technique could be a supreme secret of the ancient Phoenix clan, and only the direct blood descendants would have been allowed to practice it. How can it be here?"

Ye Xiwen frowned, this influence was far more terrifying and powerful than he initially imagined. It was hard to digest the fact that they actually possessed the secret technique of the ancient phoenix race that was said to have disappeared countless

millenniums ago.

He came to know from Ye Mo that Dragon, Phoenix and the so-called other ancient beings had disappeared countless eras ago. It seemed like there occurred a terrible war in the Ten Thousand Worlds community and led to their disappearance. One must note that all this happened long before the beginning of the era of Ye Mo's previous owner, the Great Devil King.

There were dragon legends everywhere, but no one alive had actually seen one.

This influence was ancient and huge, perhaps far beyond the imagination of Ye Mo as well.

Not only could they get an access to the Ancient Phoenix technique, but might have also obtained secret techniques of other races which simply went against the heaven's will.

He continued to read and found some explanations about Phoenix Regeneration, recorded in order to help increase the understanding of the practitioners!

After studying the Phoenix Regeneration Technique all day, he had to admit that its effects simply defied the heaven's will. When used in coordination with the gilded tyrant form, his battle efficiency and resilience would have no limits, rising dramatically all the way to an entirely new and profound level.

But the secret techniques, now in the possession of the other three individuals, were not going to be ordinary either!



## Chapter 241: War With Wan True Union

---

Immortal Palace became the source of a sensation that spread throughout the Demon Island. Four ancient Daoist skills had been divided among four tyrannical experts. However, the last one wasn't seized by Jiang Hua but a rather little-known expert, the same guy who became famous a few months ago when he crushed a law fragment.

Ye Xiwen had become famous when the law fragment incident occurred, but for the next few months, he remained low-key and everyone was busy in reshuffling and completely forgot about him!

Moreover, later, the rumors spread that deputy-chief of Wan True Union chased down and killed Ye Xiwen.

However, no one thought that he would actually appear once again and that too with such a blast. The emergence of Ye Xiwen occurred side by side with the annihilation of Jiang Hua and several other elites of Wan True Union.

Ye Xiwen stunned everyone on the Demon Island and soared all the way up, gaining a spot among the handful of super experts.

So many experts saw how the elite members of Wan True Union were butchered by Ye Xiwen. Now, there remained only one deputy-chief in their alliance.

The loss of a deputy-chief was a matter of far more concern when compared to the loss of several elites. To put it bluntly, it could be

said that the elites had grouped together on the Demon Island in various alliances only to seek greater benefits in a relatively safer way. The loss of a few elites shouldn't matter much to them because it was not like they shared some kind of bond.

However, the loss of deputy-chief was a bigger issue because it put a big question mark on the reputation of the alliance and affected everyone associated with it.

Everyone was waiting to see what kind of response would come from Wan True Union.

And Wan True Union did not really let them down. They spread the news that within the remaining time on the Demon Island, they would continue to look for Ye Xiwen and kill him once they found him. The informants would be rewarded with ten Ling Dans, and if someone managed to kill Ye Xiwen then they would be awarded the vacant position of deputy-chief of Wan True Union.

This was like the calm before a storm! One could see that this war was going to last for a long time.

Many people guessed that this would continue until the arrival of the Demon Island's opening time!

When Wan True Union issued the 'search and destroy' command, a lot of experts began to help them in the search.

At this time, Ye Xiwen was in a cave and practicing Phoenix

Regeneration Technique. He was unceasingly circulating Zhen Yuan throughout his body and following the process as recorded in that page.

Lingqi was being constantly injected in his brain and helping him in slowly grasping all the secrets of 'Phoenix Regeneration Technique' inside the 'mysterious space'. He was not at all bothered about what all things happened on the island during his absence. He was just one man and it was not all difficult for him to hide from the pursuers on such a vast island, not to mention his 'restraining breath technique' was active all the time, so experts of fifth or even sixth stage weren't able to sense his presence.

So no matter how much they searched, Ye Xiwen was not afraid, after all, the Demon Island was too big and, so long as he ran a little farther towards the depths, it would be impossible to find him.

Right now, he was very confident.

Days passed and a month later, Ye Xiwen finally completely grasped the 'Phoenix Regeneration Technique', moreover, he was also getting stronger and stronger all the while. Now, he was much stronger than he used to be before he started the practice.

Now, even if he was split in half, he would be able to regenerate and reorganize the cut off parts of his body. This was the mind blowing fact about this technique because it was actually impossible even for the demon race to regenerate after being cut into two halves.

However, such a magical ability was inherent to the Phoenix race.

After perfecting this divine technique, his close-combat efficiency progressed by leaps and bounds. He could now compete with the experts of truth eighth stage and experts of truth seventh stage could not even dream of putting even a single scratch on him.

Ye Xiwen was now confident about dealing with much higher level opponents with ease.

And it was not like he didn't know what was happening on the island while he was busy practicing this technique. Wu Shaoqun was constantly collecting news and transmitting important information to Ye Xiwen.

They had started a full-fledged search and destroy operation against him but he simply did not care. In fact, this in itself was an indication of the damage done to their own practical significance and was no different than strangulation of their beliefs at the hands of Ye Xiwen, but the significance of beliefs was one matter and the possession of strength was another matter.

At present, Wan True Union or its second deputy chief did not scare Ye Xiwen. He was only concerned about their mysterious leader. Ye Xiwen was guessing that he was certainly a powerhouse of truth eighth stage or probably ninth stage, otherwise, it would have been impossible to tame a psycho like Jiang Hua.

And experts like that possess unmatched arrogance and are never satisfied. They don't stop until they have completely subdued any or all possible rivals around them. Else, they get rid of the obstacles permanently.

As long as he didn't bump into this mysterious chief, he was not afraid of the rest of the alliance.

Now, with the help of 'Phoenix Regeneration Technique', even the experts of truth eighth stage wouldn't be able to kill him, so what was there to be afraid of? So what if they were going to continue the search and destroy operation for the rest of the year? Phoenix regeneration not only helped in fast regeneration of injuries but also increased the production speed of Zhen Yuan within the body. Hence, unless he was fighting with an expert of half-step legendary realm or legendary realm, it would be impossible to exhaust him to death!

And now that the enemy had made its move, he would not just sit passively and wait for the enemy to find him.

He got the information that Wan True Union had sent its strongest members to find him. And considering that no one had seen their leader, perhaps only the second deputy-chief was guarding their encampment. One must know that the two deputy-chiefs of Wan True Union were strong enough to place this alliance in the ranks of the four strongest alliances.

Although the deaths of Jiang Hua and the elite members was not enough to cause severe losses to Wan True Union, these deaths could not be ignored either, after all, Jiang Hua's strength used to

be only slightly inferior to other super experts.

And since their chief had almost never been seen before, it could be said that the other deputy chief was very powerful.

Perhaps his strength was comparable to Warhawk and the others. Ye Xiwen did not know and neither did he want to waste time thinking about all that. According to the information he got from Wu Shaoqun, the main forces of Wan True Union were not present in their encampment. Only the deputy chief was present to guard it along with the average members, indicating that now was the best time to attack their encampment.

And most importantly, there were a variety of reasons that urged him to plan a trip to the encampment of Wan True Union.

There was an irrevocable hatred between him and Wan True Union, reaching the point of kill or be killed. Ye Xiwen still hadn't forgotten the pledge he made to himself.

Such being the case, he had nothing to say and neither did he plan to wait!

"They are looking for me, so I think I should give them a chance and see if they can kill me." Ye Xiwen smirked and said in a strange manner.

Wan True Union was one of the four major alliances so it shouldn't be a problem to find its headquarters.

Soon, Ye Xiwen arrived near its encampment.

Wan True Union's encampment was located in a true oasis, a big place and, all of the demon beasts in the surrounding area had already been beheaded by its members.

At this time, a large number of experts had gone out to find the whereabouts of Ye Xiwen, but security here was still fairly tight.

Ye Xiwen took out his long blade and walked towards the encampment. This was going to be the battlefield of a man versus an entire alliance, and perhaps only Ye Xiwen could do such a thing so calmly and fearlessly. Forget the entire force of an alliance, he wouldn't even think twice before clashing with that mysterious leader.

Experts of truth fifth and sixth stage were stationed at a fairly small gate. Ye Xiwen did not hide his presence and allowed them to spread the warning about an intruder. They immediately pulled out their weapons and coldly looked at him. Ye Xiwen's image was already carved into their minds since the day the 'search and destroy' command was issued by their alliance. And as soon as they saw him coming, they immediately set out to cut him into pieces.

# Chapter 242: Tramples The Wan True Union

---

Spearqi, Swordqi, Bladeqi, a variety of martial arts swept towards Ye Xiwen. They noticed that Ye Xiwen did not budge in the face of the so many attacks and they themselves rushed forward to kill him.

Ye Xiwen waved his long blade and shot a fluctuating Bladeqi so massive that it instantly crushed all the incoming attacks in one fell swoop.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Blood spattered everywhere and all of the guards were instantly chopped into pieces.

They were never a match of Ye Xiwen and simply overestimated themselves thinking they could take him on. Although they were called geniuses and attacked in numbers, they still did not stand a chance against him.

The noise suddenly alarmed many experts resting inside the encampment. Wan True Union was really worthy of being one of



the four major alliances. Even if the main force was sent out on a mission to find Ye Xiwen, a lot of experts had stayed back.

And many of them were at the peak of truth sixth stage at such a young age, which was a clear declaration of their exceptional talent.

"Ye Xiwen, you are really something. You even dare to barge into our encampment? It seems you have become suicidal!" An expert of truth sixth stage came out and said. There was a disdainful expression on his face.

"Puchi!" Ye Xiwen flicked his finger and shot a laser-like concentrated energy that instantly pierced into that expert's body and tore him apart from the inside.

At this time, several experts simultaneously attacked him.

"Die!" An expert waved his spear and released an enormous Spearqi that rushed towards Ye Xiwen, and it seemed as if it was going to puncture the world itself.

Ye Xiwen instantly shot an endless stream of Bladelight from his long blade. This mass of brilliant energy looked like a section cut off from the Milky Way descended in this world. It instantly routed the Spearqi attack.

"Boom!" a loud explosion occurred and the Bladelight swept towards that expert, and his body was split in half.

He did not even get a chance to react and was instantly killed.

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

Various types of martial arts and weapon attacks were swept towards him. It seemed as if Ye Xiwen was standing in front of a huge wave of martial attacks, coming layer after layer.

Although these members of Wan True Union were not good in coordinating their attacks, their inherent talent and power was more than enough to compensate for the lack of teamwork.

Ye Xiwen's facial expression was callous, but just by looking at him, one could see that he did not consider them as equals, rather he was chopping them like vegetables. The peerless geniuses of the ten countries of Southeast Region had become time pass, nothing more than a warm-up for Ye Xiwen. He used celestial step and marched forward without stopping, and suddenly shot a tyrannical Bladelight towards the team of experts.

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

The Bladelight rendered all of the incoming attacks useless; Ye Xiwen then took advantage of the opportunity to attack the experts.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Some experts were blasted away in the sky, while some were cut in half. The ones who managed to dodge the attack were personally chopped into pieces by Ye Xiwen.

Wan True Union had placed several scouts in the nearby areas to keep a lookout for spies from other major alliances. It was needless to say that these scouts were extremely powerful, much stronger than the experts guarding the encampment.

However, even those scouts had been completely wiped out by Ye Xiwen before he arrived here. They did not even get a chance to react or alert their comrades.

Everyone present on the scene felt chills down their spines. When Ye Xiwen disappeared for almost a month, no one knew

where he went. A lot of people said that he was afraid of Wan True Union and ran away like a scaredy-cat. Whereas, a lot of people thought that Ye Xiwen was certainly tyrannical but how could he possibly fight against an entire alliance?

When they could not find him, they began to clamor that Ye Xiwen was a timid guy, a coward who was afraid to come out and face them. This was a tactic to provoke Ye Xiwen and compel him to come out, but a month passed and he didn't appear.

But now that he finally appeared, he made an appearance like a terrifying storm. Ye Xiwen came alone and single-handedly killed so many members of Wan True Union and this was just the beginning. This was like a big slap to those who called him a coward.

One man versus an alliance, no one would dare to do such a thing!

Although most experts were not present in the encampment, the remaining experts were still enough to make Wan True Union a tyrannical force.

The deputy-chief was a tyrannical expert and he had personally taken command of Wan True Union in the absence of their leader.

But even his presence was not enough to deter Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen was extremely arrogant and no one really knew the extent of his strength.

Ye Xiwen kicked the main gate and shattered it into pieces, then strode all the way towards the central station when he suddenly sensed a powerful expert coming towards him.

"Ye Xiwen, I admire you for your courage. But this is a dead end for you!" A loud voice like a sonic boom resounded and an expert of truth seventh stage, who was standing far away from Ye Xiwen, suddenly shot towards him like a bullet while bringing an endless amount of Lingqi along with him. He congealed a huge hand made up of Lingqi and pounded it on Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen just casually waved his long blade and shot an inexhaustible Bladelight that instantly obscured the entire area and crashed into that huge hand of Lingqi.

"Poof!" Ye Xiwen's Bladelight effortlessly annihilated that huge hand of Lingqi and advanced towards the expert.

This expert of truth seventh stage was supposed to be the secret weapon of Wan True Union and was only slightly weaker than the two deputy-chiefs. Other elite members of the alliance who went out to find Ye Xiwen were relieved that an expert like him was there to guard their encampment.

His confidence was understandable but he never thought that Ye Xiwen would actually be so tyrannical. His huge hand of Lingqi was instantly routed by Ye Xiwen's Bladelight and it advanced toward him. It seemed as if the Big Bang itself had escaped from the river of time and congealed in front of him.

"Puchi!" he was instantly chopped into two halves.

"Ye Xiwen, you really want to die so badly, huh?" There came a loud shout and echoed in the surroundings, "I'll make sure to fulfill your wish!"

A blazing red figure suddenly appeared out of nowhere and stared at Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen saw that this expert was quite young, had fiery red hair, was tall and had a strong build.

Ye Xiwen immediately figured that this guy was none other than the deputy-chief of Wan True Union named Xia Wuchang. He was the second strongest member of this alliance after the mysterious leader.

There was a cold look on his face but he did not say anything else and immediately fired a punch, releasing a blossoming burning flower of flames towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen sneered and used 'Azure Dragon rises from the Abyss' move of 'Coiling Dragon Palm' to summon a black coiling dragon that immediately coiled around him. At this time, Ye Xiwen looked like a god of war with his tamed black dragon and as soon as the flaming flower approached him, the black coiling dragon directly tore it apart with its claws.

"Boom!" this resulted into such a vast explosion that it wreaked havoc in all directions, reaching all the way into the sky and the whole encampment began to burn violently.

Xia Wuchang's complexion suddenly changed because he never imagined that Ye Xiwen would be so strong. Now, he got serious all of a sudden as he clearly understood that he could no longer afford to underestimate Ye Xiwen.

The flames reached all the way to the nearby pond and instantly vaporized it, forming a thick layer of mist and smoke screen, making it difficult for the spectators to see clearly.

Xia Wuchang was about to attack once more but heard an extremely sharp piercing sound and suddenly saw a horrifying Bladeqi coming towards him at an incredible speed.

He quickly retreated several dozen feet and somehow managed to dodge it, but he immediately saw that Ye Xiwen, grasping a long blade, had already arrived in front of him.

At this time, he naturally did not dare to block Ye Xiwen's blade and repeatedly blasted waves of fire springing towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen instantly waved his long blade and released innumerable blade shadows. He displayed missing moon beheader, a Xiantian level martial technique, but he had already taken it to a whole another level, surpassing even the creator of this technique.

Although the name was still the same and the displayed picture was also the same, Ye Xiwen had already revised it numerous times, transforming countless times to find the best suitable compatibility with the endless amount of Lingqi present in the air, since he could now manipulate Lingqi after stepping into truth

realm. And with the integration of Lingqi into the basic concept of this technique, its overall might reached a whole other level. Now, even truth level experts would find it difficult to block it.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Ye Xiwen's Bladeqi cut through the waves of fire and extinguished the flames thoroughly. The blade shadows were dancing around Ye Xiwen and formed a protective layer so that the blazing fire was no longer able to approach his body.

"I will send you on the journey to hell, but before that, I will cut off your head and keep it as a trophy." Xia Wuchang said with a deadpan look on his face. Now that he was aware of Ye Xiwen's strength, he became much more determined to kill him.

Jiang Hua's death indeed made him angry, but he did not mind it too much, after all, Jiang Hua was powerful but there was still some gap between his strength and the strength of experts at the pinnacle of truth seventh stage.

He used to think that Ye Xiwen's strength was enough to deal with the average experts of truth seventh stage, but today he discovered the tragic error in his own assumption. Ye Xiwen was far stronger than he imagined.



Xia Wuchang knew that he must go all out and gathered all his power to congeal a giant fire dragon and it suddenly sprang towards Ye Xiwen.

## Chapter 243: Source Of Yellow River

---

"Ye Xiwen, you are dead, you are so dead!" Xia Wuchang sneered again and again as his fire dragon's burning flames instantly enveloped Ye Xiwen.

"Xiu!"

"Xiu!"

"Xiu!"

Suddenly, endless divinities emerged from Ye Xiwen's body and completely wrapped him up. His body turned golden yellow, making him appear just like a golden God of war. There was no way that a fire dragon could burn his gilded tyrant body.

Moreover, by using phoenix regeneration, a damage of this level, if it occurred, could be restored in an instant.

Of course, the phoenix regeneration was not universal and consumed lots of Zhen Yuan, or even consumed life essence to regenerate severe injuries. But, Xia Wuchang's attack was not potent enough to force Ye Xiwen to use phoenix regeneration.

The moment divinities burst out of Ye Xiwen's body, it seemed as if a God had descended on Earth. The fire dragon was unable to burn his body but was directly annihilated instead.

Ye Xiwen sneered and used the celestial step to suddenly appear in front of Xia Wuchang.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen was so fast that Xia Wuchang did not get enough time to dodge.

Ye Xiwen rotated once and pounded a kick on his chest.

"Bang!" Xia Wuchang felt as if a mountain landed on his chest. He was sent flying and the blood sprayed out of his body and seemingly stained the blue sky. His body fell upside down to the ground and rolled few times before stopping.

"Ye Xiwen, you have thoroughly enraged me. I will burn you to ashes!" Xia Wuchang suddenly got angry.

In his hands appeared a whip of fire and he swept it towards Ye Xiwen. The blazing whip burned all things in its path, and even the air seemed to be burning in its flames. This attack was so fearsome that everything in the surroundings turned to ashes.

Ye Xiwen's stature shot forward like an arrow, his hands transformed into dragon claws, flashing endlessly with divine glory and directly grabbed the whip.

"Boom!"

Both of them severely collided in midair, and suddenly, the air exploded under the pressure, setting off shock waves in all

directions.

The terrible shock wave crushed everything in its path. Even the towering ancient trees in the surrounding area were completely disintegrated.

"Today, no one can save you from my wrath!" Xia Wuchang coldly stared at Ye Xiwen.

"You are free to try, that is if you think you have the skill." Ye Xiwen smirked and shot an inexhaustible Bladeqi that cut through the hot waves of fire.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Both experts were going all out, and with each collision, Ye Xiwen's imposing aura would increase bit by bit. This was an invincible imposing aura when considering the general trend where most experts would find their imposing aura and battle efficiency decreasing in a protracted fight. They not only faced a decrease in physical strength but also the weakening of their mental state.

The so-called overbearing characters were not used to losing in a fight and always enjoyed being on the winning side, but this

general trend crashed down whenever Ye Xiwen came into the picture. Because irrespective of whether he was losing or winning, Ye Xiwen's battle efficiency would always continue to rise dramatically.

Ye Xiwen bravely rushed forward without showing any hesitation or restriction of any kind!

"Bang!" Xia Wuchang was once again sent flying for several dozen meters before finally dropping to the ground. Although his whole body was covered in flames, he was still not a match of Ye Xiwen. His bones were shattered and his chest had caved in. The broken ribs directly punctured his heart and he spat out blood.

This was a battle of life and death and Xia Wuchang ended up on the losing side. He had an impressive start but was soon tragically suppressed by Ye Xiwen.

This battle would act like a spark to ignite a rumor about the rise of a truly intrepid expert on the Demon Island. Xia Wuchang was a prestigious expert but was literally crushed like an ant.

Ye Xiwen gradually stepped towards Xia Wuchang, arrived near his body, then lifted his foot and stamped on his chest.

"Bang!" Xia Wuchang's chest region along with his heart and other internal organs were thoroughly crushed and turned into minced meat.

The experts, who were observing this battle from afar, were stunned. Xia Wuchang was dead and the whole Wan True Union was trampled, all this mess caused by just one man. Even the mysterious leader of Wan True Union would never have thought that this could happen to his alliance.

The whole of Demon Island was going to fall into chaos.

After killing Xia Wuchang, Ye Xiwen did not stay and turned around to leave, leaving the encampment in fire and ashes.

The Next day, the whole island was in an uproar when they heard the rumors about how Ye Xiwen single-handedly routed the Wan True Union and their encampment was now in ruins.

Many people did not pay much attention to Ye Xiwen earlier, but now they had to admit that he was extremely astonishing. Single-handedly crushing an entire alliance was no joke; in fact, no one else on the Demon Island had achieved such a feat.

There were several 'lone experts' who were usually at a disadvantage while dealing with the experts affiliated to some alliance, but an alliance facing heavy losses at the hands of a lone expert was simply unheard of.

The loss of two deputy chiefs was certainly a great loss for an alliance, especially when only one man was responsible for killing both.

Many experts wanted to join the Wan True Union before, but now they chose to give up the idea, after all, they wanted to join this alliance for stability, not for getting massacred by an infamous tyrannical expert.

From the past incidents, it was clear to everyone that Ye Xiwen was not done yet and would surely come back again.

And now that the two deputy chiefs were out of the picture, Wan True Union was drowned in chaos and the return of the mysterious leader would make it fall into deeper turmoil.

This incident also acted as a warning for other alliances. Now all of the experts knew that they must not provoke Ye Xiwen at any cost, otherwise, they might end up risking not only their own lives but the fate of their alliance as well.

Ye Xiwen proved a simple point to everyone on the Demon Island, that their so-called alliances and tyrannical leaders could not save them from his wrath if they messed with him, after all, even a major alliance was stripped naked by him.

The Wan True Union faced heavy losses but it was still not completely out of business. It still had a lot of experts who could act as its backbone.

After wreaking havoc as he had initially planned, Ye Xiwen went towards the depths of the Demon Island.

"I cannot come with you because today I am going to look at the source of this yellow river. Why don't you join me?" Mu Ling said. In the last two months, his cultivation level rose up to the peak of truth seventh stage. It seemed like he continued to cultivate in the yellow river by unceasingly killing the ghost soldiers for the entire two months' period. The non-stop digestion and absorption helped in an extremely quick progression of his cultivation.

This time, when he saw Ye Xiwen, he thought of him as a trusted companion.

Ye Xiwen also thought that since he did not have any other major objective right now, he might as well accompany Mu Ling. Besides, he was also very curious about the source of this yellow river.

The two men went along the trail of the river all the way towards the huge ominous mountain. Although there was no trace of ghost soldiers or the yellow river right now, Mu Ling was very sensitive to the aura of the dead and would not go astray.

At nightfall, they finally reached the source of the yellow river.

Ye Xiwen's gaze fell upon an open space with numerous mounds of earth neatly arranged on the ground, Ye Xiwen easily recognized that this piece of land was home to at least hundreds of thousands of graves, and none of these graves were marked with gravestones, it was as if buried in a hurry.

Suddenly, a cold feeling arose in his heart. It was too strange for such a vast cemetery to exist on this island.



And right after he entered the range of the cemetery, he felt his body stagnating right away. It seemed as if his strength was being completely suppressed. Even though he could move, but right then, he was nothing more than an average human being.

Ye Xiwen immediately turned towards Mu Ling and found him in a similar state.

## Chapter 244: Tomb Slave

---

Ye Xiwen, I think this place is really strange." Mu Ling frowned and said. Encountering a mass grave in a place like this was unusual. It was easy to guess that something horrible must have happened to these people since this entire graveyard was filled with resentment and [Yinqi](#).

Yinqi = Negative energy

There were hundreds of thousands of graves without tombstones and indicated the existence of an ancient battlefield. In fact, this scale was way too large for an ordinary battlefield. And considering the fact that it was located on the Demon Island which was suspected to be the residence of a tyrannical influence from ancient times; Ye Xiwen was disinclined to believe that this was an ordinary cemetery, not to mention, the trace of yellow river also vanished here, indicating that this cemetery was actually located at the terminus of the yellow river and was possibly its source.....

Ye Xiwen suddenly felt a chill running down his spine.

"I think this is an ancient battlefield." Ye Xiwen said.

"I guess you are right." Mu Ling said, "Otherwise, how can so many people die and leave behind so much resentment?"

The two men did not know when the clouds were quietly torn open and the starlight from countless stars shone brightly on the graves as if covering the entire cemetery with a pure white cloth.

Ye Xiwen took two steps forward and felt like he should not stay here for too long and quickly turned back to leave.

Ye Xiwen just stepped near a grave, and suddenly, there erupted an imposing aura from the grave and pounced upon him in the form of a hollow shadow.

Ye Xiwen was firmly nailed to the ground by a ghastly aura and he actually saw a tall figure clad in armor. The ghostly figure looked strong and was giving off the aura of a worthy opponent that possessed a brave heart.

Ye Xiwen felt his own spirit being locked down and this made him unable to think properly, but at this time, the golden divinity instantly burst out of his body and freed his mind and soul.

Ye Xiwen quickly got up and jumped to the side.

But at this time, both Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling saw a kind of strange yellow liquid emerging from the ground. They could sense the aura associated with it and realized that it was flowing out of hell!

Their eyes caught a strange scene where, in the dim light of the starry night, the yellow liquid slowly began to overflow from the graves and the endless streams joined together to create the yellow river that galloped towards the horizon, making its way through the initial trace of yellow river.

The yellow river also packed the lingering resentments and Yinqi along with it as it flowed away from the cemetery and these resentments slowly took the forms of ghost soldiers. The ghost soldiers roared and marched in the river as if living their lives once again.

Ye Xiwen could not help but feel somewhat uncomfortable in the face of the terrifying auras of Yinqi and Deadqi that shot up to the sky.

The Yinqi and Deadqi were extremely terrible; moreover, they intertwined in the sky and began a tangled warfare. This swept a dreadful aura in all directions as if to subjugate anyone in its path.

Perhaps, it could sweep away the entire Zhen Wu Jie if this island's space was not sealed!

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen sensed something and turned his head to see a trembling old man coming out from the woods.

Both Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling were immediately startled, after all, they had already lost their battle efficiencies in this cemetery and the sudden emergence of this uncanny old man could be a sign of danger.

Even in his past life, Ye Xiwen would not call such a shady old man harmless, not to mention, in this world, one simply could not judge a person by their appearance.

"Well, well, well, 50 years, 50 years have passed!" The old man sighed loudly and slowly arrived in front of the two men. He walked through the yellow river but was strangely not at all affected.

This old man was giving them goose bumps, after all, he just crossed the yellow river like it was nothing. He did not even wrap his feet with Zhen Yuan like Mu Ling, for preventing the corrosion.

This old man was giving off an immeasurably deep aura and simply disregarded Deadqi and the yellow water while walking towards Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling. In fact, even the ghost soldiers directly made way and did not dare to approach him.

"Who are you?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"You ask my name ..... it's been too long, already forgotten. You can call me tomb slave." The old man said slowly.

Tomb Slave!

"Another fifty years have passed I presume, just hope that this time, someone can do it." The tomb slave said with a sigh, "Heaven can be unfair sometimes!"

Ye Xiwen was confused, but he felt that this was somehow related to the bell that rang only once in fifty years.

The old man looked at Ye Xiwen and said: "You, I want to ask you. Can you do a task for me?"

"Please tell." Ye Xiwen said respectfully but felt somewhat weird. This old man's cultivation was simply unfathomable but he wanted him to do something for him? Was there really a task that he could not accomplish?

"Due to some special reasons, I cannot leave this place and want you two to do a task for me. Naturally, you two will receive great rewards." The tomb slave said in a monotonous manner.

"May I know what this task is all about?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"See that holy mountain over there? There is a sacred immortal palace named Peak Palace above that mountain and there is a seal affixed at its peak. If you can bring over that seal to me, you will receive my legacy." The old man said.

"Legacy ....." Ye Xiwen did not know what the old man meant by that, but this tomb slave's heritage was bound to be incredible.

"It is good that you know Phoenix regeneration technique." After a moment of silence, the old man said again and shocked Ye Xiwen all of a sudden.

The old man actually saw through Ye Xiwen and his secrets. The cultivation level of this old man was simply beyond the imagination of this mortal world.

However, Ye Xiwen somewhat hesitated to take up this mission because according to what the tomb slave said, this immortal palace was apparently located atop that ominous mountain from where he had heard terrifying shrieks when he first stepped on this island. What if this so-called seal was placed to imprison those terrifying creatures?

If those things were allowed to go out of this island, then it would be a huge disaster for Zhen Wu Jie.

The old man looked at Ye Xiwen and understood what he was thinking, but he did not get mad, rather commendably, he smiled at him and said: "Rest assured kid. It is true that I want to fulfill my tens of thousands of years old wish of getting that seal but you do not need to worry because that seal is not placed to bind them. I am not cruel enough to endanger the fate of the entire world for the sake of selfish desires. Indeed, it's true that the heaven has played tricks with me, but everything occurs for some reason."

The old man said and Ye Xiwen sensed that there was endless sadness in his voice!

"Such being the case, I'm willing to do this task." Ye Xiwen said, "But the point is that I may not be able to deal with those creatures."

Mu Ling nodded as he was also aware of the risk involved in this mission since the creatures on that ominous mountain were really too fearful, not to mention, even the experts of legendary realm

might not be able to deal with them.

"Since I chose you two, I will naturally not send you to your deaths."

"Soon, there comes a short span of time that appears once in a millennium when all of the souls on that holy mountain will be in their most weakened state; then you will have the opportunity to get that seal. Remember, you will have only one hour's time to retrieve that seal. If you are unable to get out of there in time then....." The tomb slave did not say further but Ye Xiwen knew what he meant.

"It's something dangerous so it is up to you whether you want to go or not." The tomb slave said.

Ye Xiwen's brain began to think crazily. He had a powerful technique like Phoenix regeneration and if he succeeded then he would receive some formidable reward from the old man. And it should not be inferior to Phoenix regeneration, so the temptation was naturally immense.

But the danger involved was also immense, needless to say, the old man did not hide the risk involved in this mission, but there was still a chance of success, after all, it was an opportunity that appeared only once in a millennium!

Ye Xiwen did not feel any malice from this old man.



At this time, Mu Ling asked: "Why doesn't the senior go himself to retrieve the seal? It should be an easy task for you!"

"No, I cannot go." The old man shook his head and said, "I have made a pledge to defend this cemetery for eternity. As long as I am alive, I cannot leave this place, and perhaps not even after death."

Ye Xiwen was shocked when he heard this. What could force an expert of such profound level to stay here as a grave keeper?

"It's something that you can do, but whether you want to do it or not is something you have to decide." The old man said, "Otherwise, I don't mind waiting for another fifty years."

Ye Xiwen immediately made a speculation: "A bell rings once in every fifty years on the Demon Island to summon young geniuses. Are these two matters somehow related?"

And if this old man had continued to choose people each time the island opened for a new group of young geniuses, generation after generations, then how many people had already set foot on this island. Certainly, many of them must have accepted this task, but that seal had still not been retrieved by anyone. This explained that all those who tried to retrieve it were dead.

## Chapter 245: Weak Mentality

---

After making this inference, Ye Xiwen could not help but feel horror in his heart. Super geniuses like Qi Feifan must have been summoned to the Demon Island, and countless peerless geniuses might have accepted this mission but no one was successful.

Moreover, just the mention of Peak Palace's name was enough to shock him. Last time he went to an immortal palace, he got a mighty technique like Phoenix regeneration that simply defied the heavens. Each time he went to such places, he felt as if he was venturing into a prehistoric era, making him feel like he was in a mythical age.

He was getting similar vibes when he set foot on this island, and now, he was discovering weird places all over the island.

When he was on Earth, although he was not a big man of mythology, he was still quite familiar with this stuff.

However, before, those were all just myths and he did not need to find sense in any of them, but now the situation was different. Ye Xiwen knew that there were many formidable forces in this world. The heavenly sector, the devil world, the hell, the dragon clan, and recently he found out about the existence of the phoenix clan, and so on.

Ye Xiwen was quite surprised to hear familiar legends in this world as they used to be in his past life. The similarities were enough to sometimes scare him and now he found several clues

regarding those myths on this island.

"I do not force you to do this task for me. Before leaving the island, you can come here to find me." The old man said and slowly walked towards the depths of the cemetery.

Ye Xiwen looked at this elderly figure while it slowly disappeared.

-----

The rumor about how Ye Xiwen slaughtered the two deputy chiefs of Wan True Union set off a storm on the entire island and shook everyone.

Wan True Union's mysterious leader finally made an appearance and the members of the alliance began to clamor.

"Ye Xiwen is simply nothing. As long as our chief goes into action, he can kill him instantly by raising just one hand."

To verify whether the rumor about the demise of the two deputy chiefs was true, an alliance dared to provoke the mysterious leader by attacking the Wan True Union's members in his absence. This alliance made the biggest mistake of thinking that there was actually no mysterious leader of Wan True Union.

However, as a result of that, the mysterious leader personally went to the encampment of that alliance and killed each and every

member. This worked to deter the entire Dmon Island and remind everyone about the true status of Wan True Union.

Eagle Union's chief Warhawk once commented that Wan Cheng Yao was an expert of truth eighth stage, moreover the most outstanding among the experts of the same level.

And, he was strong enough to kill any disciple on the Demon Island if he desired.

In this case, both Ye Xiwen and merciless Wan Cheng Yao became the subject of gossip throughout the Demon Island. Many people were talking about the collision between these two and how fearful that duel would be.

Wan Cheng Yao's sudden appearance was not contrary to everyone's expectations. In fact, now they were waiting for Ye Xiwen's death which would end this entire ruckus.

However, how to kill Ye Xiwen? Even an idiot would know that finding Ye Xiwen on such a vast island was extremely difficult.

When everyone thought that Wan Cheng Yao would soon give up, he finally made his move.

"On this island, all the forces related to Ye Xiwen shall be destroyed!" Wan Cheng Yao's indifferent announcement spread throughout the Demon Island.

That day, he led his forces to the encampment of Great Yue State's Tianfeng Union. There were more than two dozen disciples in the encampment. Not all of them belonged to the Tianfeng Hall; some belonged to relatively unknown sects of Great Yue State who had also joined Tianfeng Union. But in the end, Tianfeng Union was not very strong.

The powerhouses of various alliances also arrived there to see what would happen to the Tianfeng Union.

"My God, Wan True Union is really going to attack the Tianfeng Union."

"Even if a lot of powerhouses have been killed by Ye Xiwen, the Wan True Union is still very formidable."

"Is this the end of Tianfeng Union?"

Many experts were observing from afar and saw a man clad in a black robe, standing high in the air and coldly looking at Tianfeng Union's encampment.

"This Wan True Union really plans to destroy an entire alliance? What do they think of us weak alliances? Do they think we are like the meat on a chopping board?" A disciple said. There was anger in his voice along with dissatisfaction. They were supposed to be peerless geniuses of the younger generation and now they were going to be killed for no reason whatsoever.

"Rumors are that this is Wan Cheng Yao's decision and he is at truth eighth stage. Although his cultivation is not extraordinary in the outside world where there are tens of thousands of experts at his level, but now on the Demon Island, who can be his match?"

"The Tianfeng Union and Ye Xiwen are not at all related. Wan Cheng Yao is planning to destroy them just because they come from the same state as Ye Xiwen. Soon, he will come for us because we are also the experts from the southeast region like Ye Xiwen." An expert said in a frustrated tone, "His men are human beings and we are not? Why is he treating us like livestock?"

Now they truly felt that strength was the ultimate justice in this world. Just because Wan Cheng Yao was a tyrannical expert, he could do anything on a whim and others would have no choice but to suffer. In the end, he could do things that they could not do.

"Is he not scared that Tianfeng Hall will take revenge for this?" Someone asked.

"Things that happen on the Demon Island cannot involve the outside world. This rule has been handed down since ancient times, otherwise, why would Ye Xiwen dare to recklessly kill experts from various sects? And we should not forget that Wan Cheng Yao is actually a very ruthless man."

"Moreover, the strength of Wan Cheng Yao's sect is far above that of the Tianfeng Hall."

"Today, Tianfeng Hall is going to face heavy losses. Do you think

Ye Xiwen will appear?"

"Certainly not, his strength is comparable to truth seventh stage. How can he be a match of Wan Cheng Yao who is presently at the peak of truth eighth peak? Moreover, Wan Cheng Yao is using this method to compel him to appear."

"Today, I'm going to destroy Tianfeng Union of Great Yue State. If Ye Xiwen does not appear then as the days pass, more and more people, related to him, shall die!" Wan Cheng Yao said in an overbearing manner and his imposing aura spread out in all directions. The members of Tianfeng Union did not pretend not to see and immediately rushed out in abundance.

"Let's fight with them, they are going too far!"

"Kill!"

The bloody carnage began, though it should be called a one-sided slaughter. The disciples of Tianfeng Union did not get a chance to either resist or escape and were thoroughly crushed by the Wan True Union. Only a few powerful members of Tianfeng Union along with their leader were able to escape with serious injuries.

The Tianfeng Union simply did not get a chance to fight back and its members were directly massacred.

This time, Wan True Union finally managed to restore their prestige that was initially trampled by Ye Xiwen. Although

someone else's blood had to flow for this, the Wan True Union still got admiration for their might and ruthlessness.

This was truly a sinister method of slaughtering people who were not at all personally related to Ye Xiwen.

----

"They are using a vicious method." Ye Xiwen sighed with emotion and said.

Ye Xiwen received the news, and already after three days, he had been in the depths of the Demon Island and was practicing gilded tyrant form. His upper body was fully covered with a golden protective layer and once he would perfect the gilded tyrant form, his new battle efficiency would be enough to deal with an expert of truth eighth stage, even without himself stepping into the truth seventh stage.

"It seems you cannot reason with this mysterious leader. He is actually pushing everyone against you." Ye Mo's voice appeared in his mind.

"Wan Cheng Yao is very formidable." Ye Xiwen said because he truly was not a match of that guy.

Wan Cheng Yao's threat was understandable after all Ye Xiwen destroyed his alliance's encampment, killed his men and also killed his two deputy chiefs! His hate for Ye Xiwen was inevitable.



This way of thinking was abnormal and certainly not how a weak person would think. A weak person would try to find a reason behind Ye Xiwen's actions, but Wan Cheng Yao did not want to waste time on that. Ye Xiwen was already his target and nothing would stop him from destroying him!

In Ye Xiwen's past life, some people would steadily make concessions while facing enemy provocations because they thought that just because the other side was being aggressive, there was no need for them to behave similarly. However, they never thought that just because they stepped back, their actions worked towards encouraging the aggressor to continue using this method on others as well.

Just because Ye Xiwen had come from that kind of environment, he understood how to deal with this man. Perhaps not all people would agree with Ye Xiwen's way of doing things.

"Because Wan Cheng Yao is too strong, in the end, I am the one at fault for not being able to protect others." Ye Xiwen said since it was a fact that all those people died because of him.

"You must not go out or you will simply be falling into his trap. You are not his match!" Ye Mo said, "This is exactly what he wants, he wants you to act rashly."

----

## Chapter 246: Approaching War

---

"You must not go out or you will simply be falling into his trap. You are not his match!" Ye Mo said, "This is exactly what he wants, he wants you to act rashly."

Wan Cheng Yao was much stronger than Jiang Hua and Xia Wuchang. And, he was much smarter as well. Ye Xiwen planned to stay low and appear only when he was strong enough to deal with the enemy.

But now, Wan Cheng Yao's tactic was to force Ye Xiwen to come out, and if he did, he would fall under the wind. Ye Xiwen was most disgusted by people like Wan Cheng Yao who used their own potential to oppress and manipulate others and could go to any extent to achieve their goals.

When Wan Cheng Yao noticed that Ye Xiwen was not coming out no matter how much he waited, he used this seemingly innocuous method to bully and kill unrelated people and turn everyone against Ye Xiwen.

Wan Cheng Yao had long sacrificed his moral values and no longer valued human life. That was the reason why he could come up with such a vicious method.

"I know!" Ye Xiwen nodded and said, "And I'm more afraid that if he alone can do so much damage, what if someone else joined him in his plans, then the whole situation will become even worse."

"For example, the eighth prince!"

Ye Xiwen's fears soon became reality. Only a month later, the eighth finally made his first appearance on the Demon Island. Moreover, using his identity as the eighth prince of Great Yue State, he was leading an alliance of young geniuses of the royal clan and from Yuncheng city. The Imperial Union announced a joint hunt with the Wan True Union to capture Ye Xiwen.

Moreover, Ye Xiwen heard a rumor that Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen had fallen into the hands of the eighth prince.

Ye Xiwen did not care much about the destruction of Tianfeng Union, but he cared about Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen because they were his comrades, not to mention, he was repeatedly helped by Hua Menghan. He must save them at any cost.

Ye Xiwen still remained missing for another month. Wan True Union and Imperial Union finally made their move and openly declared that their next target would be Xueling Sect. If Ye Xiwen did not appear then they would start the raid three days later.

The people who were familiar with the internal affairs of Great Yue State immediately understood that the eighth prince was using Wan True Union to eradicate the younger generation of Xueling Sect. Then, he would be one step closer to his plan of dominating the Great Yue State. Everyone knew that Yi Yuan School had not produced peerless geniuses after Qi Feifan, in fact; only three were summoned this time. And among them, only Ye Xiwen could be considered a threat to the eighth prince's plans.

The younger generation of Tianfeng Hall had already been destroyed, leaving only a few who escaped with serious injuries. Yuncheng city was always a supporter of the royal clan. Now one major force was out of the picture and this meant that the power balance of Great Yue State was now in the hands of remaining four major forces.

The remaining two sects standing in the way of the eighth prince were Yi Yuan School and Xueling Sect. He just needed to destroy the younger generation of these two sects to fulfill his goals.

But even if people knew about this, there was no way to stop Wan True Union and Imperial Union; after all, their leaders were tyrannical experts of truth eighth stage.

Facing one expert of truth eighth stage was asking too much, and now there were two of them looking to kill Ye Xiwen!

The rumors were that after three days, they would not only crush Xueling Union but also perform the public execution of Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. If this really happened and Ye Xiwen did not show up then one could imagine the kind of reputation he would have in the future.

Moreover, this might leave a permanent scar on Ye Xiwen's mind and hinder his further development. Even if he did not die, the lack of development potential would turn him into an average expert without courage and ambition. Afterward, he would be called a dedicated invincible expert that was wounded forever.

The cold moonlight was spread over a mountain peak.

"A few months gone, I would have never thought that the eighth prince would reach the peak of truth eighth stage, indeed fearful." Ye Xiwen was standing on the mountain peak and looking into the distance.

He once defeated the eighth prince but in a same level fight.

If the battle did not take place in front of Yi Yuan School then the eighth prince would have never agreed to have a seal placed on his level.

The eighth prince was indeed a formidable opponent and it could be said that his strength was almost comparable to that of Wan Cheng Yao.

Ye Xiwen did not have a shred of fear, only a bit of excitement before the war.

"Is this eighth prince very strong?" Mu Ling's voice sounded from the side. Ye Xiwen was going to face two major alliances and told Mu Ling who immediately put down the practice to help his friend.

"Very strong!" Ye Xiwen nodded.

Mu Ling was surprised as he looked at Ye Xiwen. Although he did

not know Ye Xiwen for a long time, but knew that he never talked irresponsibly. If Ye Xiwen said that the eighth prince was very strong then he had to be very strong.

"If given the chance, I want to fight him." Mu Ling's face flashed with excitement.

"You won't get a chance because this time, I am going to kill him!" Ye Xiwen said and a trace of firm and resolute look appeared on his face. Last time, Ye Xiwen was unable to kill him but he wouldn't be so lucky this time!

"It is really a pity." Mu Ling was aware of his own strength and knew that he would not lose to anyone on the same level but both Wan Cheng Yao and eighth prince were one level above him. He really regretted that he was not at the truth eighth stage because he wanted to fight with those two tyrannical experts.

"But can you really beat them?" Mu Ling asked. He knew that Ye Xiwen was strong but he could not ignore the capability of those two.

Moreover, if Ye Xiwen was at truth eighth stage then the whole thing would have been a lot easier. But he was still at the peak of truth sixth stage and there was a difference of two levels between him and his enemies.

"I do not have another choice." Ye Xiwen said and spread out his hand. His whole body was instantly covered with a golden protective layer, making him look like a golden God of war. In this

moment, even the moon and the stars lost their color in front of his shining golden body, as if he was the incarnation of the sun itself.

He had perfected the gilded tyrant form!

This whole month, Ye Xiwen naturally did not do anything else but continued to kill demon beasts and absorbed their divinities to strengthen the gilded tyrant form.

The most important thing he did to complete the gilded tyrant form was to take a big risk of stealing the egg of supreme tyrannosaurus. He was chased for five days and nights by this monster of legendary realm and was almost killed several times. He was also split in half and dismembered a few times, but fortunately, he had Phoenix regeneration, otherwise, he would have died back then.

But the risk was worth it since after digesting the divinity contained in the egg, he finally perfected the gilded tyrant form.

After perfecting the gilded tyrant form, his battle efficiency was only slightly less than that of an expert of truth eighth stage.

At least now he would not need to retreat, though he could only expect a desperate fight!

"Your task is to pin down the experts of the two alliances. Leave Wan Cheng Yao and that eighth prince to me." Ye Xiwen said.

"As long as those two men do not interfere, even the experts of Xueling Union can take care of the other experts. I will prefer to lend you a hand." Mu Ling said and was willing to remain at his friend's side no matter where the path would take them.

"No!" Ye Xiwen shook his head, "Now on the Demon Island, perhaps only I can kill them both. If I cannot do it then no one can."

Ye Xiwen was so confident because he could feel the sudden power surge within his body after perfecting the gilded tyrant form!

He did not suspect Mu Ling's ability. If he was an expert of truth eighth stage then he would not be inferior to them.

"Now we must prepare for the upcoming war." Ye Xiwen said. He wanted to cultivate Zhen Yuan for the next three days to restore his strength. The supreme tyrannosaurus was too fearful and injured him so badly and so many times that his vitality was hurt in the process. Even with Phoenix regeneration, it would take time to regenerate his lost vitality. Although his battle efficiency would not suffer with the loss of vitality, his endurance would suffer considerably.

Thankfully, three days were enough to cultivate vitality with the help of phoenix regeneration.

The three days passed quickly and the raid finally began on the



Xueling Union.

# Chapter 247: Battle With The Two Tyrants

---

In the early morning, the Imperial Union and the Wan True Union arrived at the encampment of Xueling Union to begin the punitive expedition. In addition, almost a thousand other disciples also came to observe the battle.

The eighth prince was standing in midair. Clad in a royal robe, he looked like an absolute tyrant who seemed all prepared to dominate the entire world. Right now, he was looking indifferently towards the members of Xueling Union. In his opinion, these people were actually rebels and he must either tame them or eradicate them.

Wan Cheng Yao was standing at his side and looked even more vicious as if he was not looking at humans but ants.

"Ye Xiwen, come out to die." The eighth prince coldly said and glanced towards the crowd of experts that had come to observe, as if to recognize Ye Xiwen's face.

At this time, Wan Cheng Yao said: "Let's begin. If he doesn't want to come out, we will compel him to come out!"

"Attack!"

The eighth prince issued the command and disciples of the two alliances rushed towards the disciples of Xueling Union to exterminate them.

The disciples of Imperial Union mostly consisted of imperial guards who were trained to eradicate any and all obstacles from the path of the eighth prince.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Suddenly, there came noise of intermittent fearful explosions and those disciples who crashed in the encampment found themselves trapped inside a scarlet colored Zhen array. They were now firmly surrounded from all sides.

Some disciples screamed pitifully and their bodies disintegrated on the spot. The spilled blood was directly absorbed by the array and it took the shape of an evil blood God. It curled up the corners of its mouth to reveal an evil grin and a blood-red spear appeared in its hand. The evil blood God threw the spear that branched out into numerous spears and instantly nailed several disciples to the ground.

"Not good, we fell into their trap!" A disciple shouted in panic.

At this time, the eighth prince's complexion slightly changed as he said: "Damn, this is Xueling Union's trap."

"Mu Youran!" the eighth prince clenched his teeth.

"Did you think that the Xueling Union will just sit back and do nothing?" A strange voice sounded from the direction of Xueling Union's encampment and a blood-red figure flew out of there.

"I will terminate your followers. Your dream of world domination can go to hell." The young man in a blood-red robe with somewhat pale complexion said in a cold voice as he viciously stared at the enemy.

It was Mu Youran, the super geniuses from the younger generation of Xueling Sect.

"You are courting death; you must blame Ye Xiwen for this. You are suffering because he did not show up!" The eighth prince gritted his teeth and shouted.

"You think you can deceive me?" Mu Youran said disdainfully, "This low-level trick doesn't fool me. Give up on your whole brainwash plan and don't even bother acting friendly."

"No need to talk nonsense with him, I will break this array right away." Wan Cheng Yao could not see his men getting killed in front of his eyes.

"I am already here. Are you blind or something, can you not see me?" A cold voice resounded throughout the sky and a huge Bladelight suddenly swept towards Wan Cheng Yao.

Wan Cheng Yao sneered and his hands spread out to form a layer of divine light that instantly annihilated the Bladelight.

"Ye Xiwen, you finally came to meet your death?" The eighth prince said and a crazed look appeared in his eyes.

"I give him to you." Wan Cheng Yao looked at the eighth prince and said, then advanced toward the Xueling array.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen shot his palm. A giant golden dragon flew towards Wan Cheng Yao and blocked his path.

"Did I say you can go?" Ye Xiwen indifferently said.

At this time, Mu Ling vanished from the side of Ye Xiwen and appeared in front of Yuncheng city's top genius named Jian Wuchen.

"You showed up today and made the biggest mistake of your life. I'll never let you run away again!" The eighth prince ferociously said.

"You are quite the tactician aren't you?" Ye Xiwen smirked and said, "You used me as a reason to eradicate your competitors. That's really a good plan."

"So long as I can kill you, I don't mind going to any limits." The

eighth prince's face revealed an evil smile.

"Kill me? You really do like to joke around, don't you? Did you forget how I nailed you to the ground like a dead dog? If that old guy hadn't come to save your sorry ass, I would have tortured you to death. Well, I'd like to see who is going to save you today." Ye Xiwen smiled but each and every word that came out of his mouth hit the bull's-eye.

"Your elder sealed my power; otherwise, I would have defeated you easily. But today, I will use my full power to kill you." The eighth prince's heart was instantly filled with monstrous rage and ferocity. He was confident because today he could display his full power and after obtaining the heritage of Four Sacred Beasts Sect, his power and skill had progressed by leaps and bounds!

He completely forgot the fact that in the last duel, Ye Xiwen used was at the peak of truth fourth stage and even after his own level was sealed, he was still at Small Truth level.

"I wanted the eighth prince to deal with you, but since you are so eager to die, I will kill you first." Wan Cheng Yao coldly glared at the man who slaughtered his two deputy chiefs.

An invincible imposing aura burst out of his body as if he was the true supreme existence in this world.

The eighth prince's imposing aura also broke out. He was truly worthy of his reputation. And from the wretched expression on his face, one could see that he would resort to all means as long as they

served his purpose. Not to mention, he planned to team up with Wan Cheng Yao to slaughter Ye Xiwen.

"If you think you can stop us and allow Xueling guys to kill our men, you're too na?ve. I can easily kill you with a flick of my hand." Wan Cheng Yao sneered.

"Then why don't you try?" Ye Xiwen was not in a hurry because this was the time for the enemy to be anxious. With the passing of time, their men were getting slaughtered inside the Xueling array.

The spectators were shocked because they clearly saw that Ye Xiwen had little to no chance of winning. Battling two experts of truth eighth peak simultaneously was simply insane.

"Is he insane? How does he plan to fight those two?"

"I think he is trying to stall for time so that the large array of Xueling Union can sweep clean the disciples of the two major alliances."

Everyone was aware of the fearfulness of those two tyrants and one would need boundless courage and willpower to face both of them simultaneously.

"I don't think so." At this time, Warhawk crossed his hands behind the back and solemnly said, "I sense heavy murderous aura from Ye Xiwen. He actually plans to kill them."

The surrounding disciples were left stunned when they heard this. According to them, fighting even one was insane, but according to Warhawk, Ye Xiwen was all set to kill both? Was such a thing really possible?

These two tyrants were existences of truth eighth peak. The news about Ye Xiwen's battle with those two was enough to attract the island's celebrities like Warhawk, Ji moon and Wang Purple to come here to watch the battle.

Wan Cheng Yao waved his blade and a dazzling long Bladelight went across the sky towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen did not reveal any expression on his face; he just instantly covered his whole body with a layer of Zhen Yuan and golden divinity.

Then, the long blade danced in his hand and shot a fluctuating Bladelight to welcome the incoming attack.

"Zizi!"

"Zizi!"

"Boom!"

Two Bladelights collided and mutually devoured each other, setting off endless blast waves in all directions. The surrounding forest was directly wiped out by the aftermath of this blast.



A grim smile appeared on the eighth prince's face as he took out his spear and shot terrifying spear shadows towards Ye Xiwen.

"Shua!" Ye Xiwen waved his long blade horizontally and blocked this peerless spear attack.

"The battle has started!" Some people exclaimed.

Ye Xiwen was showing no signs of falling under the wind, even if he was facing attacks from the two tyrant experts. This made people feel as if their heads would explode with bafflement. What the hell was going on?

However, there were many people who thought that Ye Xiwen should not fall under the wind from the beginning, after all, if that happened, there would be no point in coming to observe this battle.

Although people thought that Ye Xiwen was audacious, no one thought of him as an idiot.

Right when the eighth prince's spear attack was blocked by Ye Xiwen, Wan Cheng Yao instantly released a much larger Bladelight than before.

As Ye Xiwen expected, these two tyrants seemed to be in a hurry and wanted to finish this fight as quickly as possible. After all, if their elite men were exterminated inside the Xueling array, what

would happen to their aggressive dominance? The two tyrants would end up being loners on this island.

"Boom!" after a terrifying collision, both sides continually withdrew several steps. Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant body was vibrating right now. Its defense was truly tyrannical, but Ye Xiwen's level was not enough to simultaneously deal with two experts from two levels above.

In fact, the two tyrants were shocked to no limit, especially the eighth prince. His eyes were full of disbelief because he never expected that Ye Xiwen would display such a progress. He got the heritage of Four Sacred Beasts and managed to reach the peak of truth eighth stage so quickly, but what kind of heritage did Ye Xiwen obtain to progress so fast and that too at such a young age? It was obvious that Ye Xiwen really defeated him when it came to cultivation progress speed.

"Die!"

Thinking of this, an endless killing intention spread in the eighth prince's blood-shot eyes.

## Chapter 248: Fight With Fate

---

Mu Ling was facing Jian Wuchang. Jian Wuchang had a dignified appearance, although he was clad in simple attire and his face had an indifferent expression, no one would dare to underestimate him.

He had an absolute heroic aura!

"Get out of the way." Jian Wuchen was a man of few words and did not have any favorable impression of the eighth prince, but being a disciple of Yuncheng city, he had no other choice.

He received the order from an elder of his sect to follow the eighth prince's commands.

Ye Xiwen also glanced at his opponents and did not give the slightest indication of losing this battle. If he was defeated then who would save the disciples of Xueling Union? After all, they were using up their entire strength in maintaining such a massive array.

"Impossible!" Mu Ling said and shot a glance at Ye Xiwen. But he was relieved to see that Ye Xiwen had not fallen under the wind.

Jian Wuchen did not want to fight, but since Mu Ling was not ready to step aside, he had no choice but to engage in battle.

He instantly waved his sword and released a rippling Swordqi

that went across the sky, churning the clouds all the way, and descended upon Mu Ling.

Jian Wuchen did not hesitate from using one of his best attacks on Mu Ling.

Meanwhile, Mu Ling also did not hold back and displayed his best sword skill. Since his practice was based on consumption of Deadqi, his sword attack was bound to be gloomy and ghastly. The whole sky seemed to tremble when these two sword attacks collided and set off storms in all directions.

The spectators trembled when the strong auras of these two sword geniuses spread everywhere. Though their battle was not as outstanding as the battle between Ye Xiwen and the two tyrants, there was not much difference either; after all, they were just one stage below. There were only a few experts of truth seventh stage on the Demon Island so no one would dare to look down on them.

"Boom!" the two massive streams of Swordqi severely collided and set off waves of a hellish aura all over the surroundings.

Jian Wuchen was a rare sword genius that appeared once in a century, but Mu Ling was also an unusual expert and his powers were derived directly from hell.

Suddenly, there appeared two diagrams in the sky, each representing the practiced sword intention of the two sword geniuses.

It could be seen that both sword intentions were at the acme level and as soon as they collided, they began to devour each other and resulted in a fearful competition between their respective ideal conditions.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The intensity of this battle was obviously inferior to the battle going on between Ye Xiwen and the two tyrants.

Jian Wuchen's main motive was to save his fellow disciples of Yuncheng city who were trapped inside the Xueling array, but Mu Ling promised Ye Xiwen that he would absolutely not allow anyone to pass.

"Aaaaaa!"

"Aaaaaa!"

"Aaaaaa!"

Inside the Xueling array, the evil blood god's spears were nailing the experts on the ground one by one.

Mu Youran was smiling and seemed very happy. He felt proud and elated while the disciples of the Imperial Union and the Wan True Union were crying pitifully.

Almost everyone thought that this was going to be the end of Xueling Sect's younger generation, after all, why would Ye Xiwen show up and risk his life for the sake of some strangers? And even if he did, the eighth prince would not put a hold on his plan of getting rid of Xueling Sect's younger generation.

There was an evil smile on Mu Youran's face, because after this battle, who would dare to underestimate the Xueling Union?

"Boom!"

The eighth prince shot a glorious Spearqi which seemed to pierce through the sky and was firmly locked on Ye Xiwen.

"Clang!" Wan Cheng Yao's blade instantly released a dazzling Bladelight that went howling towards Ye Xiwen.

Two scary attacks were rushing towards Ye Xiwen and everyone thought that he could certainly not withstand them. In fact, withstanding even one would be a miracle, let alone two.

The earth-shattering attacks bulldozed numerous trees and set off air explosions everywhere.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's long blade congealed a huge dragon that

immediately rushed out.

A terrible blast swept off after the collision, but Ye Xiwen did not move one bit. The aftermath and complementary waves of this world-shattering collision did not affect him at all. His incomparably tyrannical golden body was simply not budged by anything and he continued to stand right where he was, with peerless self-confidence.

"Get out of the way!" Compared to the eighth prince, Wan Cheng Yao was much more concerned about his men and did not want them to die.

There was a surge of dreadful energy that completely erupted from his body all of a sudden and rushed towards Ye Xiwen like a sea of moving mountains of light.

The Bladeqi was rushing towards Ye Xiwen like surging waves of the sea, and at this time, the eighth prince also shot a deadly spear attack that released a dragon. It seemed as if a dragon was lurking in the waves, sometimes soaring up, sometimes diving in the waves. This scene was exceptionally awe-inspiring.

Ye Xiwen's eyes revealed intense killing intention, aimed at both of these tyrants.

If Wan Cheng Yao's Bladeqi was like waves of the sea, then Ye Xiwen's Bladeqi was sharp enough to cleave those waves. Ye Xiwen was able to sweep away any attack aimed at him, regardless of how vast and massive those attacks might be.

At this time, the tyrannical might of 'gilded tyrant form' fully manifested and golden Zhen Yuan started to boil within Ye Xiwen's body. He appeared like a golden God of war, standing motionless in the raging waves of Bladeqi like an iron mountain. No matter how mighty those waves might be, they were unable to move him even a step back.

Ye Xiwen knew that this was not yet the toughest phase of the battle. But his gilded tyrant form had also not been fully released either.

"He is really fighting with two tyrannical experts and is not pressed under the wind!"

"Indeed, how is he able to block their joint attacks? This Ye Xiwen is too weird."

"Even if he dies today, he will still become a legend."

"It's still early to make such speculations." Warhawk said while observing the battle from sidelines, "This is just the beginning, and it's hard to say which side will come out as victorious."

Ji Moon and Wang Purple nodded. Their visions were naturally not like ordinary people.

"The Great Yue State has given a lot of elites to this world. The eighth prince, Ye Xiwen and Mu Youran are all peerless elites."



Warhawk said because it was not hidden from him that almost one hundred experts were summoned from Great Yue State. Yi Yuan School was famous for the shortage of elites in their younger generation, but Ye Xiwen alone was more than enough to compensate.

The battle suddenly entered into the most intense phase.

Ye Xiwen's long blade released a sword intention that was faintly glowing with fluctuating world laws. Ye Xiwen was slowly revealing his cards.

Now, each and every one of his blade attacks transformed into ruthless sword intention and also contained the ideal condition practiced by him to the acme level.

"Clang!"

"Boom!"

An enormous sword intention rushed across the sky and advanced towards the two tyrants.

The eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao also resorted to their strongest attacks. Wan Cheng Yao's blade released endless waves of Bladeqi that seemed to be burdening the entire world.

The eighth prince's spear also released an endless barrage of Spearqi.

"Boom!"

The blast swept out in all directions. Even the atoms cracked open in this terrible collision that formed a blossoming mushroom cloud rising into the sky.

Ye Xiwen's hair was flying crazily in the wind. He did not stop even for a second and immediately waved his long blade, releasing a fearful Bladelight that went across the sky and collided with the enemy's joint attack.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The aftermath of the explosion crushed everything in the surroundings, sweeping away mountain peaks and the forest. Even the universe seemed to be collapsing in its wake.

The two sides once again indulged in a superheated battle.

Everyone's eyes were dazzled by this scene. They never expected to see such an intense battle; in fact, even the experts of truth eighth stage would call the level of this battle extremely tyrannical.

This was a rare opportunity to witness such a battle, and if it was lost, they might not get another one.

The battle was finally arriving at its toughest phase.

"Shua!" Ye Xiwen's long blade clashed with the eighth prince's spear and the terrifying rippling energy waves swept towards a mountain peak and smashed it to pieces.

But, at this time, the suppression world law attached at the tip of the spear swept forward and pierced into Ye Xiwen's body.

"Puchi!" his golden blood splashed out and he quickly went several steps back to avoid the next section of this attack.

"He is finally injured! Is this it? Is this the end of his fight with the fate?" A disciple shouted excitedly.

The eighth prince roared and his tall body pressed down towards Ye Xiwen like a boundless mountain.

This was the right moment to end this battle. He saw an opening in Ye Xiwen's defenses and decided that he must make the final strike immediately to finish him off once and forever.

"You will die. No one is going to save you today!" The eighth prince sneered and swept his spear, setting off a terrible storm that

transformed into a mass of light and rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

# Chapter 249: The Eighth Prince Nailed To The Ground

---

"You will die. No one is going to save you today!" The eighth prince sneered and swept his spear, setting off a terrible storm that transformed into a mass of light and rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

If gilded tyrant form's defense was not truly tyrannical, Ye Xiwen would have already been defeated a long time ago.

The spear thrust forward like a dragon, directly towards Ye Xiwen.

"Puchi!" the eighth prince's spear accurately pieced through the belly of Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen spat a mouthful of blood and blood also oozed out of the wound on his belly.

This battle had already resulted in the destruction of the surrounding forest.

Ye Xiwen immediately grabbed the spear with his hands and the gilded tyrant form activated to its extreme. Ye Xiwen's might was so greatly strengthened that the eighth prince never expected that he would not be able to pull out the spear from his body.

While still clutching the spear with his hands, a spiraling golden energy surged out of his body and transformed into a huge dragon. It soared into the sky and instantly crashed into the eighth prince's body.

"Bang!" the eighth prince was instantly sent flying. This attack was so terrifying that some of the bones in his body were broken and he suddenly spouted a mouthful of blood.

This was the so-called method of getting mutually wounded where both of them were injured almost at the same time.

But, there appeared a look of terror in the eyes of the eighth prince when he saw Ye Xiwen's injuries healing at an unimaginable speed. In a flash, Ye Xiwen's body was restored to its original state and there were no traces of wounds anywhere on his body.

Not just the eighth prince, everyone present on the scene was dumbfounded. They saw that Ye Xiwen's battle efficiency was also restored to its peak level.

The gilded tyrant form was not the only thing to give him confidence that he could kill those two simultaneously. The main source of his confidence was the phoenix regeneration technique. Ye Xiwen's combat effectiveness was not inferior to them, and so long as he continued to recover unceasingly, he would be able to kill both of them sooner or later.

This was the only method capable of beheading both of them at the same time. If Ye Xiwen did not succeed this time, then it would be even more difficult the next time.

Ye Xiwen did not want to fall short, and his present tactic was trading wound for wound. The fast regeneration ability of the

phoenix regeneration technique gave him such confidence.

This was another way to exhaust them to death, although it would possibly hurt Ye Xiwen's vitality and shorten his lifespan, but right now, he had no choice. He must get rid of the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao otherwise it would be disastrous if Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen fell into their hands. Earlier, he had heard a false rumor of them falling into the hands of the enemy, but it might become a tragic reality.

This needed to be done today. Ye Xiwen did not have the luxury of trying the next time. Not to mention, he was aware of Wan Cheng Yao's mentality. He was even worse than the eighth prince since no moral barriers could stop him from sinning if he felt offended. He would continue to wreak havoc throughout the island and must be exterminated today.

Saving the world from these two psychos was worth losing some of his lifespan!

If he was at truth seventh stage then killing these tyrants would have been a lot easier.

Ye Xiwen showed no hesitation and rushed straight towards Wan Cheng Yao.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's long blade went towards Wan Cheng Yao's body.

The Bladelight released from the long blade invoked suppression law of the world and moved forward as if to crush the universe. Ye Xiwen had added divinity to the Bladeqi and that was the reason why the whole world shook in the presence of this divine attack.

"Shatter!" Wan Cheng Yao's blade released a large stream of Bladelight towards the incoming attack.

"Shua!"

The horrifying collision turned numerous trees into ashes and Wan Cheng Yao's felt his hands go numb all of a sudden. He cursed in his heart and did not know what kind of strange power was being used by Ye Xiwen, but his attacks contained extreme might, the force of hundreds of millions of Jin, as if released to chop down the stars in the sky.

Missing moon beheader!

Ye Xiwen's first blade attack had not even stagnated when he made the second blade attack the very next moment!

"Boom!"

Another blade attack fiercely pounded Wan Cheng Yao's blade and the terrifying force contained in it shook him thoroughly.

"Boom!"



The third blade attack instantly changed its direction and sliced its way into Wan Cheng Yao's body. He suddenly spat a mouthful of blood and was extremely depressed in his heart. Ye Xiwen's blade skill was too weird because he caught the opportunity and made three blade attacks one after another and each attack was mightier than the previous one.

This blade skill was called missing moon beheader and its key point was to find an opening in the opponent's defenses. As soon as there was an opening, the practitioner could use his strongest blade attack. And while waiting for an opening, the practitioner could continue to use blade attacks one after another to keep the opponent busy while constantly increasing the might of the attacks to confuse the opponent, going all the way up to the ninth blade attack. Of course, the ninth blade attack would contain an earth-shattering might, much more than the might of the previous blade attacks.

However, Wan Cheng Yao was a skilled fighter and he immediately dodged the next blade attack to get out the barrage of blade attacks coming one after another. He dodged the fourth blade attack and did not know that the sixth blade attack might have ended his life. Ordinary experts were unable to display the full might of Missing moon beheader, but in the hands of Ye Xiwen who was a peerless blade master and had comprehended the ideal condition of this technique, it was truly frightening.

Wan Cheng Yao quickly retreated far away from Ye Xiwen, but at this time, the eighth prince suddenly rushed towards Ye Xiwen.

The spectators were afraid to blink because they might miss something important. They were not just watching the battle but also observing the skills used by these three tyrannical experts and learning new things.

Now, they knew that their assumptions were wrong. Instead of falling under the wind, Ye Xiwen actually had the upper hand, of course, only when he was fighting one opponent at a time.

Not to mention, none of the two tyrants was a match of Ye Xiwen in a one-on-one fight.

However, whenever the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao teamed up, Ye Xiwen was forced to switch to defense styled combat.

At this time, Wan Cheng Yao was feeling an uncontrollable rage surging in his heart. It was a shame for him that in spite of being at truth eighth peak, he was pushed to such an extent by an expert who was two levels below him. If the eighth prince did not lend a hand then.....

Wan Cheng Yao's anger filled roars resounded throughout the sky and the air began to boil like boiling water. Countless air explosions took place in the sky and it seemed as if the surrounding space would crack open anytime.

Wan Cheng Yao was releasing a terrifying imposing aura and some spectators felt as if their eardrums would shatter any moment now.

Wan Cheng Yao went all out and his fearful imposing aura instantly locked on Ye Xiwen. He did not waste time and immediately shot a rippling Bladelight that rushed towards Ye Xiwen at a lightning fast speed.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen tried to block this attack but was sent flying and his ribs were completely shattered.

Ye Xiwen felt an intense pain raiding his brain.

"World domination!" the eighth prince did not miss this chance and directly impaled Ye Xiwen with his spear.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen was directly nailed to the ground.

Seeing Ye Xiwen in this state, the eighth prince laughed and a grim look appeared on his face. Last time, he was nailed to the ground and that brought a lifelong shame for him, but he took revenge today by doing the same to Ye Xiwen.

However, his pleased mood did not last long because Ye Xiwen suddenly shot his palm, releasing a mass of spiraling energy that pounded on his chest and sent him flying. He paid the price for being arrogant and underestimating Ye Xiwen and also letting his guard down. He spurted a mouthful of blood and fell heavily on the ground.

Ye Xiwen pulled out the spear from his body and his wounds

healed almost instantaneously. The experts who saw this scene held their breaths and simply did not believe their eyes. How was this possible? How could he have such an ability which simply defied the heaven's will? Most importantly, was it literally impossible to kill Ye Xiwen?

No wonder he was so full of confidence and challenged these two tyrannical experts.

Ye Xiwen's hands were instantly enveloped by a kind of seething golden energy.

"Whoosh!" an awful piercing sound echoed throughout the sky when Ye Xiwen threw the spear towards the eighth prince, who was still lying on the ground.

"Boom!" the spear descended upon the eighth prince and nailed him to the ground. Ye Xiwen was quite far away and did not know what kind of expression appeared on his face right now. Perhaps, he was excited to be nailed to the ground by his own spear?

In fact, the eighth prince's face was flushed red with shame and embarrassment; after all, this was the second time he was nailed to the ground by Ye Xiwen. Not to mention, he did not have the phoenix regeneration technique to heal his wounds.

However, at this time, Ye Xiwen did not get a chance to give the finishing blow to the eighth prince because Wan Cheng Yao immediately appeared in front of him.

The atmosphere began to disintegrate when these two collided and several experts trembled with fear and excitement.

If they had not seen this battle from the beginning, they would have continued to think that Ye Xiwen was just an expert of truth sixth peak and his battle efficiency was comparable to the experts of truth seventh peak. But, now they knew that there was no one on this island that could be his rival.

The long blade danced in Ye Xiwen's hands. A huge dragon roared and flew into the sky and it seemed like its fierce claws would tear the sky to shreds.

# Chapter 250: Frightened

---

The long blade danced in Ye Xiwen's hands. A huge dragon roared and flew into the sky and it seemed like its fierce claws would tear the sky to shreds.

"Boom!" a fearsome blast engulfed the sky and instantly formed a tornado so massive that the spectators felt as if they would be sucked into it, even though they were observing from afar.

Wan Cheng Yao's Bladelight gave rise to chaos in the sky and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

With a flick of his hand, Ye Xiwen diverted the trajectory of the Bladelight. The two tyrannical experts then engaged in a terrible battle and none of them seemed to hold back. They were no longer using complex martial techniques to show off their skills rather they were now resorting to the use of brute force and inherent energy. Wan Cheng Yao was relying on his higher level while Ye Xiwen was relying on 'gilded tyrant form' and 'phoenix regeneration technique' to sustain such a world-shattering battle.

The spectators felt as if the battle potential of these two experts was enough to cause the end of this world. They were nothing like the mediocre experts from their respective levels.

One could see that whether it was Wan Cheng Yao, Ye Xiwen, the eighth prince, Warhawk or the remaining two super experts, all of them were basically outstanding experts even among the group of peerless geniuses summoned to this island. In a few years, they

would surely be sitting at the top of not just their own generation, but a generation above them. Moreover, a clash between them was bound to happen sooner or later.

Initially, everyone thought that Ye Xiwen didn't belong among these tyrannical experts and would certainly die, but now they did not think so. Ye Xiwen had already shown enough strength to stand among them.

Ye Xiwen did not fall under the wind even while facing those two tyrants at the same time. What else did they need as proof of his tyrannical strength?

Ye Xiwen's performance was not just strong; he actually managed to injure both Wan Cheng Yao and the eighth prince. And judging from the battle, they could clearly see that in a one-on-one battle, Ye Xiwen was superior to both of them. In fact, even Warhawk would have been unable to perform this well if he was the one battling these two tyrants.

Therefore, it was obvious that no one on this island could beat Ye Xiwen alone, not to mention it seemed literally impossible to kill him since he had some kind of mystical regeneration technique that defied the heavens. Ye Xiwen was confident that he could kill them both and also knew that even if the super experts teamed up to fight against these two tyrants, they might not be able to defeat them. No wonder the super experts did not dare to participate in this battle even if they wanted to and were just watching from sidelines.

He and only he could do this! And he must do this!

Of course, if Ye Xiwen was at truth eighth stage, this battle would have ended at the very beginning. Then, Ye Xiwen would be so powerful that if had he so desired, he could have single-handedly wipe out each and every expert from the face of this island.

"What happened? Was it not you who wanted me to come out?" Ye Xiwen said in a cold voice, "See, I came out to test your skill, but it seems like a waste of time."

Ye Xiwen completely released his terrifying aura and appeared just like a God in the sky. The divinity was crawling all over his body and the look in his eyes was extremely cold as if a God of destruction was looking at his prey. In Ye Xiwen's God-like presence, everyone looked no different than ant-like existences.

Ye Xiwen decided not to wait any longer and took advantage of the eighth prince being presently nailed to the ground. He launched a full-scale attack to kill Wan Cheng Yao in one fell swoop.

Otherwise, going on like this was not favorable for him. The phoenix regeneration technique was not completely invincible and involved large energy consumption. He was still at the peak of truth sixth stage and the ratio of consumption was certainly large in comparison to that of an expert of truth eighth stage.

Ye Xiwen looked just like a God to everyone present on the scene. His whole body was covered with endless divinity and exuding fearful rays of golden light in all directions. At this time, he looked



like a being who could subjugate anyone in the Ten Thousand Worlds.

Wan Cheng Yao looked at the God-like being standing in the sky and understood that he must immediately release all his power otherwise he would not be able to survive the next attack. He was curious to know the secret of Ye Xiwen's strange power but was scared of death. This was the first time he was scared of losing his life.

However, Wan Cheng Yao was an arrogant guy. He was destined to become one of the leaders of the Southeast region and rule above countless people. He also completely released his power and shot his mightiest Bladelight towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen used his long blade to first block this Bladelight then instantly congealed the invincible might of 'gilded tyrant form' in his palms and tore that Bladelight to shreds.

The spectators felt as if they were transported to the prehistoric era and were watching a battle between two war Gods. It was like a battle between a golden martial God and a devil. One of the two was instantly regenerating his severed body parts, while the other was total ignoring his severe injuries. Not to mention, their prestige was on the line so the rest of the world could just meet the doom, they couldn't care less and were fully indulged in this frenzy.

On the one hand, Wan Cheng Yao looked crazier with a crazed look flashing in his blood-shot eyes and was putting everything on the line to get rid of Ye Xiwen while on the other hand, Ye Xiwen

looked calm and composed and his golden eyes were focused on the prey. The golden divinity not only granted him a tyrannical body but also influenced his perception and charisma. Right now, anyone would say without hesitation that Ye Xiwen was much more powerful than Wan Cheng Yao.

"I can dominate people, I can manipulate anyone. I am a supreme being who was born to rule. You are nothing in front of me!" Wan Cheng Yao roared with rage. The Wan True Union was just a way to prove his dominance to the younger generation of the ten countries of the Southeast region. It was just the first step towards dominating the entire Southeast region by subjugating these peerless geniuses of the younger generation. Then, within few hundred years, he might become a huge presence, far above the reach of the ten countries of Southeast region. It could be said that his ambition was far ahead of the ambition of the eighth prince.

However, just when he was going to be successful in the most critical step, he had to face an obstacle like Ye Xiwen. And before his ambition could take a real form, it was basically crippled by Ye Xiwen.

He was so angry right now that he not only wanted to chop down Ye Xiwen into pieces, but also wanted to annihilate his soul so that he would never be able to reincarnate.

Wan Cheng Yao's imposing aura was increasing crazily, fueled by his rage, and it eventually became almost comparable to Ye Xiwen's divine aura.

"You actually think that someone like you can dominate people?"

Ye Xiwen sneered, "How foolish can you be? You think strength is enough to dominate people? I don't even feel like educating you on the topic, anyway, it's going to be a waste of time to educate a dead man."

Ye Xiwen finally understood why Wan Cheng Yao and that eighth prince had teamed up. There was a popular saying in his past life; birds of a feather flock together. These two were ambitious fools who wanted to dominate people with sheer power. Well, they were not completely mistaken about the basic concept of domination since this world was governed by strength, but Ye Xiwen was not someone from this world. He was certainly not someone who would allow someone else, certainly not such idiots, to dominate him.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen instantly rushed forward like a missile and his terrifying speed caused sonic booms.

"Horrifying!" the experts could not help but praise Ye Xiwen's power.

They had to move far back to stay away from the aftermath of the supersonic waves.

"Aaaaaa!"

"Save us!"

"Aaaaaa!"

The pitiful screams transmitting from within the Xueling array gradually disappeared. One by one, all of the trapped disciples had been nailed to the ground. Mu Youran was standing on the side and his face looked extremely pale and covered in sweat. One could imagine the consumption of Zhen Yuan for maintaining such a massive array. At this time, he was literally out of energy but didn't seem worried because almost all of the enemy disciples were now dead.

After hearing the last screams of a few surviving members of his alliance, Wan Cheng Yao got even angrier and attacked Ye Xiwen.

"Die!"

A war cry thundered in the sky and Ye Xiwen dived towards Wan Cheng Yao like a God descending to the earth. His hands transformed into two coiling dragons and swept out to crush the world.

The whole world rippled as if suppressed by the two mighty dragons. Ye Xiwen's fearful imposing aura was suffocating Wan Cheng Yao but his complexion appeared grimmer than that of the eighth prince.

Both experts once again engaged in a superheated battle, almost disregarding their own safety by using most of their energy reserves in the attacks. Wan Cheng Yao waved his blade and released a fearful Bladeqi mixed with his imposing aura.

Ye Xiwen again tore the mass of Bladeqi with his bare hands. He had already removed the limiter and fully unleashed gilded tyrant form at the cost of fast consumption of Zhen Yuan. He was all prepared to end this battle very soon.

The spectators felt their hearts almost jumping out of their mouths. Perhaps this was the most tyrannical battle to take place on this island so far.

"Puchi!" Wan Cheng Yao's blade suddenly opened a huge wound on Ye Xiwen's golden body.

However, at this moment, he was unable to dodge in time and suffered a punch on his solid chest that instantly made a dent on it. He spurted a mouthful of blood and was sent flying far away.

Ye Xiwen's wound healed instantly and he rushed towards Wan Cheng Yao and once again thrust his palm. Ye Xiwen had abandoned complex moves and was focusing on the most primitive ones.

Each time Ye Xiwen was injured by Wan Cheng Yao, the counterattack would also cause him injuries. However, Ye Xiwen's instant healing ability was constantly crushing the morale of Wan Cheng Yao.

Wan Cheng Yao felt like vomiting blood when he saw that all his efforts were basically useless. Ye Xiwen's golden body was spotless without a single scratch anywhere. Wan Cheng Yao was not a fool and even he could see that his own attacks, if not powerful enough,

were not able to injure Ye Xiwen's golden body.

And whenever he put extra energy and effort to strengthen his attack to injure Ye Xiwen, he would face a counterattack from Ye Xiwen at the same time, making the whole thing counterproductive since Ye Xiwen was somehow able to heal his own wounds instantly.

Ye Xiwen was defying common sense and his battle strategy was flawless. Wan Cheng Yao's rage was nowhere to be seen, in fact, it was now replaced by fear and frustration.

Perhaps, no one in the crowd of spectators was capable enough to block Wan Cheng Yao's attacks, but even such attacks were useless in front of Ye Xiwen's flawless battle strategy.

Wan Cheng Yao had already lost the confidence of winning. He was scared to attack Ye Xiwen, thinking that the next counterattack might end his own life. He could neither run away nor attack. Of course, he certainly could not stand idly and think.

"Your tyranny ends here and now!" Ye Xiwen sneered and rushed forward.

"Ah!" From a distant place, the eighth prince suddenly began to shout and his spear also began to emit rays of horrifying light. He was holding his spear and trying to pull it out of his body to break free and immediately rush to rescue Wan Cheng Yao.

Wan Cheng Yao's face revealed a look of pleasant surprise. He thought that he must survive until the eighth prince would break free, then both of them would team up to kill Ye Xiwen. Perhaps, he still had not noticed that he was thinking like a coward and had already lost the battle of wits. He had fallen into the well-planned trap of Ye Xiwen. Right now, he was scared and had also lost confidence. He could not even contemplate a scenario of defeating Ye Xiwen alone. He was subconsciously depending on the eighth prince's help and this thought process was surely going to bring his doom.

His invincible courage and confidence had been thoroughly crushed by Ye Xiwen. He was no longer a tyrant whose ambition was to dominate the world. Now, he was just a pathetic warrior who had lost faith in his own strength and was relying on someone else to save his life.

# Chapter 251: Execution Of A tyrant

---

He no longer had that previous courage and invincible aura. His frame of mind had changed from tyranny to cowardice!

Wan Cheng Yao was roaring out of desperation. He felt empty inside. The dominating heart of a tyrant had already been crushed by Ye Xiwen in front of everyone. Now, he was just an empty shell of his previous self.

"Unfortunately, this battle is over. We are witnessing the fall of a tyrant." Warhawk shook his head and said.

"Indeed." Ji Moon and Wang Purple also nodded. The three super experts were standing on the front line with hands crossed behind their backs.

"A tyrant like Wan Cheng Yao is truly a terrifying existence. He is at the peak of truth eighth stage and is certainly at the pinnacle of the younger generation in the entire Southeast region. Even I cannot dare to say that I can beat him. Note my point; he is stronger than Ye Xiwen. Yes, Ye Xiwen is merely at the peak of truth sixth stage but his body is extremely tough and intrepid. This is the main reason why he is able to fight with two experts of truth eighth stage." Warhawk's vision could be called sharp and sinister. He had seen through Ye Xiwen's secret. But the point was, he and the other spectators were able to understand this fact only after actually seeing Ye Xiwen in battle. And the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao did not have such luxury since they had already blundered by challenging Ye Xiwen.



Warhawk was confident that if he was at the peak of truth eighth stage then he might be able to fight with one expert of truth eighth peak, but certainly not two.

But who was Wan Cheng Yao? Yes, an expert at the pinnacle of truth eighth stage, a super genius and a tyrannical existence who did not think twice before killing people!

One could see that fighting such a ruthless expert was not an easy task, not to mention Ye Xiwen dealt with actually two such tyrants!

In simple words, Ye Xiwen went against the heaven's will in front of so many people.

"Wan Cheng Yao's real strength is actually slightly more than the strength of Ye Xiwen, but unfortunately, he seems to have lost his courage and ambition. He succumbed to fear, and even if he survives this battle, perhaps he will never be able to regain his confidence and glory."

Those who heard Warhawk's commentary nodded and continued to look at the scene in which Wan Cheng Yao had completely fallen under the wind.

Ye Xiwen was constantly using phoenix regeneration without being afraid of anything. He went ahead bravely and unscrupulously shot. Wan Cheng Yao's attacks were still tyrannical, but even if Ye Xiwen was defeated ten times, he could stand up ten times in a completely healed state, whereas if Wan

Cheng Yao was defeated even once, he would start to act all timid and scared. He had completely lost his motivation to beat Ye Xiwen and was simply biding time for the eighth prince to come to his rescue.

The screams had fully disappeared within Xueling array because all of the besieged disciples of the Imperial Union and the Wan True Union had been crucified to death by the evil blood god.

"Whish!" The entire array suddenly collapsed and vanished into thin air. Mu Youran's complexion was extremely pale as if there wasn't a trace of blood left in his body.

His energy had been completely drained by Xueling array, and not just him, even his fellow disciples of [Xueling Union](#) were also in a similar state. Some were in more serious state and immediately fainted.

Xueling Union can also be called 'Blood Spirit Union'. So they must have used their blood and energy to build that array.

Xueling array's might was outstanding, so the energy requirement was certainly going to be big. In fact, the energy consumption was so huge that even a high-level expert like Mu Youran came close to draining his entire Zhen Yuan and blood.

However, at this time, no one dared to take advantage of Xueling Union's weakened state. Even those, who normally hated the Xueling Union and were silently in favor of the Imperial Union along with the Wan True Union, did not dare to act because the battle was not yet over. They were waiting to see the final

outcome. Not to forget, there was a possibility that Ye Xiwen appeared for the sake of Xueling Union so they were being cautious.

Also on another battlefield, Mu Ling and Jian Wuchen were engaged in a superheated battle, though not as destructive as the other one, but there was no less brutality involved in this one as well.

At this time, Jian Wuchen growled. His whole body was covered with blood and his bones were truncated at some places.

Mu Ling's body was also covered in wounds. There was an exceptionally terrible wound on his chest.

This was really a battle between two evenly matched opponents, two veteran sword masters.

Mu Ling raised his sword and summoned a yellow river. It immediately appeared behind him and flowed towards Jian Wuchen.

Mu Ling's battle efficiency was increasing continuously, yet there were no signs of a breakthrough, but his attacks were getting fiercer.

Jian Wuchen wasn't deterred by this and he immediately waved his sword to congeal clouds of Swordqi around him so as to protect himself from the onslaught of the yellow river.

"Boom!"

Even the terrible collision like this could not compel these two men to retreat.

A bit!

A bit!

A bit more!

Mu Ling's battle efficiency finally broke through the boundary of truth seventh stage under the heavy pressure of this insane battle. His imposing aura suddenly stepped into the truth eighth stage.

The spectators, who were paying attention to this battle, were suddenly stunned. This decisive battle of life and death was between two equally matched opponents, but Mu Ling actually benefited from it.

"Shua!" Mu Ling's sword came very close to Jian Wuchen's neck and stopped right before it was about to behead him.

"I do not want to kill you." Mu Ling said. He had defeated Jian Wuchen but he also admired this man's talent and fighting spirit. Mu Ling admired him as a fellow swordsman and had also heard from Ye Xiwen that Jian Wuchen was actually an honest man with

a very clean and pure soul. Indeed, he was nothing more than a sword-slave of the eighth prince. But today, this would change and someday, he would become a truly outstanding hero.

"Someday, I will find you and we will finish our unfinished business." Jian Wuchen said and turned around to leave. Everyone watched his back profile as he slowly disappeared into the horizon. His fellow disciples were already dead so there was no point in staying here.

Ye Xiwen smiled when he noticed that Mu Ling stepped into the truth eighth stage. Having a strong reinforcement surely strengthened his confidence.

Wan Cheng Yao was startled by this but it made him even more desperate. He shouted like a crazy guy and shot a rippling Bladelight at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen's golden hands caught that rippling Bladelight and tore it apart, then, he immediately flew towards Wan Cheng Yao like a bullet fired from a gun.

Ye Xiwen's palms struck out horizontally and simultaneously pounded on Wan Cheng Yao's chest.

"Bang!" Wan Cheng Yao was sent flying and the tremendous force contained in his attack broke many of his ribs.

Wan Cheng Yao seemed to have been cornered by Ye Xiwen and

appeared like a mad man who was desperately fighting a battle for his own survival. He rushed forward like a lunatic to maliciously attack Ye Xiwen.

Moreover, the eighth prince was almost done removing the seal from his spear. He did not take too long to do this which indicated the extent of his skill and terrifying might.

Wan Cheng Yao was like a ferocious beast in general. He disregarded the consumption of energy and instantly released a black colored Bladelight. It looked like a lightning from hell as it went straight towards Ye Xiwen.

"Now you die!"

Wan Cheng Yao roared while stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen. He seemed quite confident in this attack.

Ye Xiwen smirked and stuck out his hands as if to tear the space itself. The golden divinities poured out of his hands and crawled towards the black lightning.

"Boom!" The two attacks collided and began to devour each other, setting off layer upon layer of air storms in all directions.

When his best attack failed as well, Wan Cheng Yao's complexion paled. Ye Xiwen sneered but noticed that the eighth prince was about to break free, so he must kill Wan Cheng Yao as soon as possible.

Ye Xiwen rushed forward hurriedly but his mind was unusually calm.

"Bang!" His palm pounded on the back of Wan Cheng Yao.

Wan Cheng Yao was directly sent flying. His grandiose stature flew upside down. But again right at this moment, Ye Xiwen suddenly jumped in the air, twisted his waist and launched a kick at Wan Cheng Yao from above almost instantly.

"Ah!" The eighth prince shouted and finally managed to pull out the spear from his own body. He then stood up and looked around to find Ye Xiwen, but at this time, a shocking scene greeted his eyes.

Ye Xiwen raised his foot up in the air as if to split Wan Cheng Yao's body into two halves with a kick. But Wan Cheng Yao obviously wouldn't allow him to achieve his wish. He immediately released a Bladelight but even that could not stop Ye Xiwen's kick. The divinities concentrated on his foot instantly dispersed the Bladelight and his kick directly landed on Wan Cheng Yao's body.

"Bang!" A horrible sound of breaking bones resounded everywhere.

Wan Cheng Yao screamed pitifully as his chest was completely crushed by him. The divinities instantly entered his body and churned his internal organs.

Wan Cheng Yao struggled a bit but ultimately could not withstand the loss of vitality and died on the spot.

"What?" The eighth prince's eyes opened wide in disbelief when he saw how Wan Cheng Yao was trampled to death by Ye Xiwen. It didn't take him too long to set himself free but he never expected to see such an unbelievable turn of events.

"Now there's no one left to interfere. Prepare yourself for the inevitable death because today, I will make sure that no one comes to save you." Ye Xiwen looked coldly at the eighth prince and said. It was obvious that he would not allow the eighth prince to escape this time.



# Chapter 252: You Were Unqualified

---

The eighth prince was startled and angry at the same time. He never thought that an expert like Wan Cheng Yao would meet such a horrifying death by getting trampled to death.

Setting sun!

Oblique wind!

Blood!

Broken bones!

Everything was outlining a desolate scene in the battlefield.

Ye Xiwen was not in a hurry to kill the eighth prince. He was taking advantage of this time to restore his power by constantly mobilizing phoenix regeneration technique.

The experts who were observing from the sidelines only saw Ye Xiwen going forward bravely, but they never noticed that he was also actually injured.

The strength of these two tyrants was far above his own, so sustaining some injuries during the clashes was obvious because gilded tyrant form could only give a certain amount of protection to him at a time and then, he again had to rely on phoenix

regeneration to heal.

However, these two techniques were not invincible or infinite!

A moment ago when he was giving the finishing blow to Wan Cheng Yao, he accumulated a lot of bruises on his body and had no choice but to heal up using phoenix regeneration!

In addition, it was an undeniable fact that he was unable to kill these two tyrants simultaneously.

The eighth prince was stuck in a stunned pose for a while and this allowed Ye Xiwen to rest for some time.

When Ye Xiwen's breathing calmed down, he looked coldly at the eighth prince and said: "By now, you certainly wouldn't have imagined that today I will send you to hell."

"Ha ha ha ha ha!" The eighth prince laughed loudly and wasn't intimidated by this: "Today, I will offer you and your people as sacrifices to my cause."

The eighth prince's voice thundered as his spear transformed into a dragon and crawled forward as if to pierce the sky. Radiant stars dazzling at the tip of his spear as if buzzed and advanced towards Ye Xiwen.

The eighth prince was not discouraged, rather seemed more tenacious and sinister than Wan Cheng Yao. He needed to get rid

of Ye Xiwen as soon as possible because Mu Ling had unexpectedly become a possible threat to his life and if Ye Xiwen teamed up with Mu Ling then that would certainly bring his doom.

He had no other way out!

Ye Xiwen's golden hands effortlessly tore off the dazzling spear attack, and the very next moment, they shot forward and swept out a vast golden light, making it crawl towards the eighth prince.

"Poof!" This golden light was so fast that it instantly approached the eighth prince and pounded on his chest. He spat a mouthful of blood and quickly retreated several steps to neutralize the enormous force contained in Ye Xiwen's attack.

Phoenix regeneration granted an astonishing recovery speed though at the cost of Zhen Yuan or vitality in extreme situations. But, in a matter of few breaths, Ye Xiwen had already reached his peak condition, whereas the eighth prince had been injured twice by Ye Xiwen. Not to mention he had been wounded by his own spear and had already spent a considerable amount of energy to set himself free. In other words, the eighth prince was certainly not at his peak condition right now, instead was actually at a disadvantage.

However, Ye Xiwen was in his peak condition though at the cost of his vitality.

Phoenix regeneration had already been displayed to the acme level by him.

Granting him unimaginable strength and battle efficiency!

Ye Xiwen's imposing aura climbed to the peak along with the golden divinity which simultaneously surged in his boiling blood.

Although the eighth prince roared again and again and deployed various secret techniques one after another, was still defeated again and again by Ye Xiwen's golden palm attacks.

In the face of absolute strength, all secret techniques were like floating clouds.

It was simply impossible for the eighth prince to be an opponent of Ye Xiwen in such an injured state.

Ye Xiwen's attacks were getting faster and faster, and at the same time, he had been constantly using phoenix regeneration to stay at his peak condition at all times while launching attacks non-stop!

"Bang!"

The eighth prince blood-bathed body was again sent flying.

To spectators, Ye Xiwen radically looked like a fearless warrior, who was not only brave but unscrupulous. This observation was because of a simple fact that the rate of recovery was far beyond their imagination. But the same was not true for the eighth prince

and his pitiful appearance was visible to all.

The eighth prince's battle efficiency slowly began to reduce. And finally, he was completely suppressed by Ye Xiwen.

Everyone saw that the originally angry expression on the eighth prince's face suddenly changed into a shocked one when he was suddenly trampled by Ye Xiwen. He absolutely did not have any strength to fight back.

"Kaca!"

"Kaca!"

"Kaca!"

The eighth prince's bones gradually cracked one by one, even some of his bones protruded out of his torn off skin. Now, his body looked like a tattered bag of blood and cracked bones.

Everyone looked at each other while being completely speechless. Could it be that the curtain would drop this time?

"Bang!" The eighth prince had been brutally trampled by him. However he still did not stop there and kicked him so fiercely that he was sent flying miles away and crashed into a mountain. He then immediately approached the eighth prince, lifted his hand and landed a malicious slap on his face while holding his neck with the other hand.

"Wake up, open your eyes and properly witness the final moments of your pathetic life. Today, no one is here to save your ass. You are doomed!" Ye Xiwen said coldly.

"Wait!" A loud shout resounded throughout the sky. A youth, who appeared to be 20-years-old and was clad in ordinary clothes, suddenly descended from the sky.

Ye Xiwen suddenly raised his eyebrows and asked: "Again? Who are you?"

"Emperor Chen." The man said proudly.

"What do you want? Do you also want to fight with me?" Ye Xiwen pointed a finger at him and coldly asked. Ye Xiwen was vigilant so activated a Sealing type Zhen method to seal the energy within the eighth prince's body.

Simultaneously, he was also mobilizing phoenix regeneration technique to maintain a continuous restoration of his injuries and battle efficiency.

"Let him go. That's all I want." Emperor Chen said openly without hiding his intention.

"That's impossible!" Ye Xiwen almost instantly said leaving no scope for negotiation.

"How dare you go against my words?" Emperor Chen said coldly.

"Humph! Am I supposed to care?" Ye Xiwen tightened the grip on the eighth prince's neck while his iron like claw was almost on the verge of crushing his neck.

"Ye Xiwen!" A gentle voice sounded from afar. Ye Xiwen turned his head and saw the same Daoist priest he had met earlier.

Qing Xu also descended from the sky like a celestial immortal.

"Qing Xu, you are also with him?" Ye Xiwen narrowed his eyes and said. He said this in a cold and rough tone and no longer felt like considering Qing Xu as his friend.

"If possible, I would like you to spare the eighth prince's life." Qing Xu sighed and said in a somewhat embarrassed tone, "You have already killed one rare genius of the Southeast region. At least spare the eighth prince."

"Ha ha!" Ye Xiwen laughed loudly then said: "You have chosen such a nice time to come out as a peacemaker. I wonder why you didn't appear earlier when these two so-called rare geniuses had teamed up to kill me. Where were you then? I expect you to give some proper reason."

"Because you were unqualified at that time." Emperor Chen said in a cold voice. And what he said was a fact! After all, who would have thought that Ye Xiwen would display such terrifying battle

efficiency? Indeed, he was counted among well-known figures but he was still not considered on the level of super experts.

Ye Xiwen smirked. He once again witnessed 'the law of the strong' and how obvious it was in this world. His own life was not worth saving before this battle. But now that he defeated these two tyrants, he suddenly started to get special attention from others. So these two did not feel like interfering earlier because the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao were great powerhouses and rare geniuses.

"Listen, Ye Xiwen, these things are very complex and include the battle involving our southeast region with foreign powers. I hope you can show mercy and spare his life." Qing Xu said with a sigh.

"Don't make me repeat myself. You are asking for impossible!" Ye Xiwen shook his head, "I certainly do not know much about this battle you talk about. But I know that he is a poisonous snake and since I don't want any future trouble, so sparing his life is out of the question."

"By the way listen to this and deeply engrave it in your heart. You are unqualified to tell me what to do." Ye Xiwen turned towards Emperor Chen and said in a grim voice. And as he said these words, he used his other hand to grasp the eighth prince's head.

The next instant, the eighth prince's head was crushed and dropped as a pile of brain paste and blood on the ground.

"You are courting death; do you think that I will not kill you?"



Emperor Chen's imposing aura instantly enveloped Ye Xiwen's body. He was angry because no one had ever dared to not give him face, but Ye Xiwen dared to kill the eighth prince right in front of his eyes.

Emperor Chen's breath was extremely formidable; perhaps he was on truth ninth stage. Though his inner state showed some signs of instability, but still he should be more powerful than the eighth prince.

"Then you are free to try!" Ye Xiwen followed the rule of tit for tat and instantly summoned a layer of golden divinity over his body. His imposing aura also erupted out of his body at the same time.

"Well, since it has come to this, we will say nothing else." Qing Xu could feel Ye Xiwen's anger and really found it difficult standing on the opposite of Ye Xiwen.

If before, he had stood in support of Ye Xiwen, then it was perhaps okay to interfere now. However, his current interference was no different from taking advantage of his friendship with Ye Xiwen.

Emperor Chen's fiery eyes were staring at Ye Xiwen and it seemed like he would launch an attack at any time. Ye Xiwen did not dare to relax even for a moment because Emperor Chen was extremely strong.

However, it was true that the opposite party did not have

grounds to blame Ye Xiwen. If Ye Xiwen had not killed the eighth prince then he would certainly have become a major threat to him or his family in the future.

Ye Xiwen would obviously first ensure his own safety, otherwise, why would he care about the well-being of the southeast region!

Everyone was stunned while witnessing this scene. Who was this Emperor Chen? Almost nobody knew him and had never heard of him since coming to this island.

On the contrary, Warhawk was a bit surprised when he saw Emperor Chen. It seemed like he also knew his identity.

## Chapter 253: Constant Changes

---

The scene fell into a strange calm atmosphere. It seemed like Ye Xiwen and Emperor Chen would soon engage in battle. But this time, no one dared to underestimate Ye Xiwen even though his opponent was at a much higher level.

Who was this Emperor Chen? His strength was apparent to all but what was he planning to do?

Ye Xiwen's whole body was covered with Zhen Yuan while at the same time; golden divinities were crawling all over his body. He seemed all prepared for battle.

The enemy was very strong, so Ye Xiwen was not in a mood to make concessions; instead he intended to go all out from the get-go.

"You'll be sorry." Emperor Chen looked at Qing Xu and seemed a bit afraid of him. Then, he turned his face and said while looking coldly at Ye Xiwen. Afterwards, he immediately turned around to leave.

When Emperor Chen left, Qing Xu did not stop either. He looked at Ye Xiwen and smiled with an apologetic expression on his face, then quickly vanished from there in front of everyone.

Soon after these two left, Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling also left and went straight towards a secret mountain valley.

In that secret valley, Wu Shaoqun was sitting cross-legged on the ground and meditating to recover. At this time, his whole body was stained with blood.

"How did this happen? Why are you injured?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Those bastards, though their main force was stationed to ambush you, they still left behind a lot of experts." Wu Shaoqun said.

Since Ye Xiwen knew himself being the main target of the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao, so he naturally could not be careless. He certainly rushed into their ambush but it was all part of a plan!

Ye Xiwen collaborated with the Xueling Union and helped them in planting a large Xueling array. The Xueling Union was naturally not going to stand still and patiently wait to get slaughtered. They also did not want to escape because it could later put a major stain on their reputation.

Ye Xiwen also asked Wu Shaoqun to go to Imperial Union's encampment to help him in rescuing Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. They were rumored to have been captured by the eighth prince, though these rumors might be a hoax to trap Ye Xiwen. However, Ye Xiwen knew that Wu Shaoqun's strength was enough for the job; after all, the main forces were going to be handled by him and the Xueling Union. Hence, Wu Shaoqun would only need to deal with residual forces in the enemy encampment.

But now, it seemed like Wu Shaoqun was injured while performing the task.

"Are you okay?" Ye Xiwen quickly asked.

"Relax, I am fine. Their residual force was not a big deal and these are minor injuries." Wu Shaoqun waved his hand and said. His injuries were a result of his own fault of underestimating the enemy, "But I am really glad that you came back, Ye Xiwen. So that means those two bastards are really dead."

Wu Shaoqun was astonished to see that there wasn't a single scratch on Ye Xiwen's body. This was simply hard to imagine that he actually killed those two tyrants.

"Yes!" Ye Xiwen nodded.

"You're so fierce." Wu Shaoqun gave the thumbs up and smiled. But this stirred his wound and his face immediately contorted in pain.

"But Ye Xiwen, I did not see your sister apprentice and brother apprentice in the enemy encampment." Wu Shaoqun said, "Damn it, that bastard actually tricked us. I interrogated some people I caught in the encampment and found out that they never caught your fellow disciples. It was a trap to force you out."

"I knew it! So it was really a trap." Ye Xiwen had trusted Wu Shaoqun and only he was the one who knew that Ye Xiwen had

been looking for Hua Menghan and Chen Ruochen. Then, how did the eighth prince find out about it?

Ye Xiwen had asked Wu Shaoqun to find them but outsiders did not know about it.

Qing Xu was related to Wu Shaoqun and also knew about it. Although Ye Xiwen was not at all happy with him but had a feeling that he would not do such a thing. So in the end, who leaked this information to the eighth prince?

Ye Xiwen felt strange while thinking more and more about it, but now those two tyrants were dead, making this thing a permanent mystery for him.

"Well, I asked a lot of formidable people for help." Wu Shaoqun said, "Perhaps, one of them betrayed me but fortunately it doesn't matter anymore as those two are already dead. Otherwise, this could have led to disastrous consequences."

"No matter what, I thank you for helping me today." Ye Xiwen said with a smile, but his mind was still busy thinking about this matter.

The news about how Ye Xiwen fought with the eighth prince and Wan Cheng Yao and also killed both of them had really shaken the entire demon island. Ye Xiwen became a well-known figure, much more famous than he used to be. If Emperor Chen had not appeared and threatened Ye Xiwen at the end of the battle, then, all of the experts would have come forward to put a crown on Ye

Xiwen's head.

Besides Ye Xiwen, no one else would have dared to pull off such a stunt.

"What, that Ye Xiwen actually killed two experts of truth eighth stage?"

"Yes, two experts of truth eighth stage were not his match."

"Wan True Union really had it coming."

Wan Cheng Yao and the eighth prince's death shocked the entire demon island, but nothing could become an eternal topic of discussion on this island. The topic slowly submerged under several other topics which popped up one after another.

Three months passed quickly.

On the demon island, several young geniuses lost their lives while several others obtained a lot of benefits. Their cultivation increased by leaps and bounds and they suddenly became the new champions on this island.

For example, shortly after the death of the two tyrants, both Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun became famous throughout the demon island. In a competition for relics and vestiges, Mu Ling defeated Wang Purple and his alliance, and this put him in the list of top players on the demon island.

And in a month's time, Wu Shaoqun officially stepped into truth eighth stage and thereby also landed on the list of top players.

These changes continued to take place for three months. During this period, several heroes lost their glory while several others made brave appearances.

In a flash, almost six months had already passed on the demon island since the island first closed down. In a period of only six months, many experts had multiple breakthroughs and there were some who actually leapt from truth second stage to truth sixth stage.

Although this island was not as big as Zhen Wu Jie, but it held more resources in comparison, enough for these young geniuses. At least, they did not have to be worried about practicing resources.

One year's worth of cultivation on this island was equivalent to 10 year's worth of cultivation in the outside world or even more, to be honest. Of course, the risk was also high because only a few hundred experts were still alive out of more than 1000 summoned experts. In fact, almost half of the summoned experts had already died.

Although the cultivation was very efficient here, the mortality rate was also quite high.

In addition to the deadly fights between human experts, the



biggest problem was battles between humans and demon beasts.

The young geniuses who were summoned to this island were under 50 years of age. Even the strongest human expert was still in truth realm, but the same was not true for demon beasts. Indeed, most of the times the demon beasts were in truth realm, but there were many half-step legendary level demon beasts as well. Not to mention, there were ethnic groups with legendary realm demon beasts and some were even beyond legendary realm, i.e. those old monsters that wandered the depths of this island and were presumably in the Saint realm.

Therefore, even if the experts were slowly exploring the depths of the demon island, they still hadn't ventured into the true depths of the island and were only exploring the peripheral zone. Those who dared to go to the real depths never came back.

But even so, there were many who still benefited a lot from their explorations and this was the reason why their cultivations progressed by leaps and bounds, placing them among top players.

The latest rumor shocked the entire demon island when experts got to know that Warhawk found an ancient egg which was actually a relic of ancient times. It was an egg of a golden eagle and they found it floating in the air. The chick was actually at Small Truth realm and some experienced experts said that if this egg had hatched long time ago when it was supposed to hatch, then this chick would have been born directly into the legendary realm.

This discovery immediately sent a wave of excitement among human experts.

It was said that only dragons gave birth to legendary level baby dragons. So the mother of this egg was actually a demon beast that was on the level of dragons. This news could stir the entire south-east region.

# Chapter 254: Demon Beast Egg

---

It was a well-known fact that all demon beast eggs came with expiry dates and must hatch within a certain period of time. Otherwise, these eggs wouldn't be able to hatch and stay buried under the ground for a long time, ending up becoming a fossil. Some would rot whereas some would miraculously survive the lapse of so many years, but at the cost of consumption of vitality.

If these eggs had hatched countless years ago when they were supposed to hatch naturally, then the newly born demon beasts would have probably taken birth directly in the legendary realm or in a realm even above that.

Moreover, it was said that there should be more than one egg buried under the ground. This spread a wave of joy and excitement among the human experts and consequently, they rushed to capture the remaining eggs. Even one such egg would be a very big harvest.

Soon, the second golden egg was discovered by human experts. It belonged to a pterosaur and the expert who found it was only at truth fourth stage. As soon as he unearthed the egg, it hatched, but things didn't go well for that expert. On the contrary, the baby pterosaur gave him a fatal blow and killed him almost instantly, before flying away from there.

However, this was not enough to deter the crazy experts from looking for the buried eggs because they believed that the killed expert was careless and incompetent for the job. They were overconfident that a newly born demon beast should not be that

big of a threat to their lives.

So, experts from all over the island flocked towards that area where the buried egg had been discovered!

The demon beasts that hatched out of these eggs were certainly not like the common demon beasts that were prevalent on this island. They were far stronger than rest of the demon beasts of the demon island.

One must know that the common species of demon beasts found on this island were far stronger than the species found in outside world. So, it was easy to guess that these eggs belonged to tyrannical demon beasts of the ancient era.

However, survival through the passage of numerous years caused consumption of a major part of egg's vitality and essence. No wonder why demon beasts that were supposed to be taking birth in legendary realm were now taking birth in truth realm.

But not all knew about this fact.

Later, another matter shocked everyone. This was also related to demon beasts because on the demon island, even if there were many demon beasts but there still remained a division of territory among them. They rarely crossed into each others' territories and since human experts preferred to not barge into the territories of demon beasts, there was rarely a clash between the two races.

However, after the hunt for eggs became popular, the human experts couldn't restrain themselves and started intruding into the territory of demon beasts.

Originally, there was a presence of formidable demon beasts in depths of the demon island and one such tyrannical demon beast visited Eagle Union Encampment. It was a bird-type demon beast of legendary realm, a senior beast who personally visited Warhawk and his men to take back the golden-winged eagle's chick that was subdued by Warhawk. Reportedly, the chick belonged to an ancient mighty demon god and demon beasts did not want it to fall into the hands of human beings.

The two sides came very close to war, but Warhawk wasn't scared at all even while facing a legendary level demon beast. But the fight did not happen because the golden-winged eagle's chick was reluctant to leave Warhawk and actually wanted to become his partner. So, the senior demon beast had to bitterly leave.

Before leaving, it bowed submissively, not to show respect to the human experts, but to the small chick who was still in truth realm.

This incident was a solid proof that demon beasts weren't dumb creatures without wisdom. It was just an ignorant perception that must be changed especially because now these human experts were on an island which was home to tyrannical demon beasts. Human experts always underestimated demon beasts and didn't think twice before massacring them for their own benefits. But the wise demon beasts of this island were altogether a different story, pertaining to their high wisdom and tyrannical strength.

However, this again made more and more people crazy to find the eggs, after all, who wouldn't want to have an ancient beast as a pet.

When a newborn beast was already born in the higher stages of truth realm, one could imagine how powerful it would become after reaching adulthood. Some experts were planning to capture one and sell it in the future for huge benefits.

Human experts were no fool, hence they reacted quickly. Now they knew from Warhawk's example that newborn beasts could be subdued and thereby turned into loyal pets.

Although they could not fight with the demon beasts lurking in the depths of the island, but they could at least capture the eggs.

Suddenly, several experts rushed towards the area that was rumoured to be hiding eggs.

In a cave, a bundle of black light bloomed and a strange dragon howl burst out in the form of shock waves. But it was soon prevented from going outside by a circular membrane made up of energy.

"What kind of mysterious technique is Ye Xiwen practicing in there? He is creating so much turbulence!" From a distant place, Wu Shaoqun said while looking at the cave's entrance. There was an incredible look in his eyes.

"I do not know!" Mu Ling replied and waved his sword, releasing an endless stream of light into the sky.

Since that battle, Wu Shaoqun was disinclined to return to the small faction of Qing Xu and few other rogue experts. He preferred staying with Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling and formed a small group of three people. Not to mention, this trio was strong enough to deal with any possible threat on this island.

Now on the entire demon island, the situation was getting increasingly bizarre and more and more dangerous, so no one dared to stay alone.

After practicing for three months, two days ago, Mu Ling finally stepped into the truth ninth stage. Although his inner state was not yet stable but this was enough to put him among the most outstanding human elites on this island.

Wu Shaoqun was also not much behind and reached the peak of truth eighth stage. He was almost on the verge of stepping into truth ninth stage.

Among all of the summoned geniuses, Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun were clearly the super elites among elites and undoubtedly among the top. Despite being so young, they managed to reach such higher levels. Of course, there were few other experts who were at higher levels than these two when they came to this island, but all those experts were older. Basically, it could be said that these two were bound to become dominating figures in the Southeast region sooner or later.

In fact, not just Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun, all other experts were going to become tyrannical figures in the future.

When considering Ye Xiwen, actually he had been able to defeat two experts of truth eighth peak three months ago.

When these three were together in one group, who would dare to provoke them? Ye Xiwen was concentrating on training and cultivating, while the other two members of the group were keeping watch, even though they knew that no one would dare to provoke them.

Wu Shaoqun was very satisfied because while staying with two cultivation freaks like Mu Ling and Ye Xiwen, he could also concentrate more on cultivating. Not to mention, he felt safe with these two trustworthy friends.

Mu Ling also did not mind being with Ye Xiwen and Wu Shaoqun as long as it didn't hinder his practice. His cultivation basically relied on Dead qi and yellow river and he had limited time on this island, so he could not afford to waste time. One must know that his progress speed was almost equivalent to that of Ye Xiwen.

The three experts usually shared their respective experiences with each other and were benefiting greatly.

"It seems like he will soon have a breakthrough, then his power will shatter the flag array." Mu Ling said.



Ye Xiwen always found it very difficult to breakthrough since his foundation was strong and each breakthrough required huge accumulation of energy. The difficulty level of his breakthrough was much above that of ordinary experts. But once the breakthrough occurred then his strength would increase dramatically and directly surpass the strength of the experts at much higher level.

"How is he able to do it, I am quite interested. Let's go and check." Wu Shaoqun smiled and said.

"Not interested." Mu Ling answered.

"Many people want to obtain it, still cannot succeed, you know." Wu Shaoqun curled up his lips and said.

"My way is the way of the sword. Everything else is a distraction for me." Mu Ling indifferently said.

"Man, you are really a cultivation madman." Wu Shaoqun said and realized that this was precisely the reason why he was one step behind Mu Ling. He lacked the craziness that Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling displayed when it came to cultivation.

But he was not planning to change because his natural disposition included his free, easygoing and straightforward nature.

One of the prohibited taboos in the world of martial arts included abstaining from concealing one's own natural disposition. Cultivation not only targeted at the improvement of the body but also mind and soul. So a cultivator must never try to conceal his true disposition while cultivating. The disposition of the eighth prince was also a kind of nature that helped him a lot in getting stronger.

"Boom!" A loud explosive sound echoed throughout the cave.

## Chapter 255: Foul-Mouthed Cub

---

"Boom!" A loud explosive sound echoed throughout the cave.

A blue figure strode out from the cave with a sort of smile on his face. Several deepwater black snakes were flying around him and growling. Although his stature looked exquisite and fairly small in comparison to the monstrous beasts floating around him, but his terrifying imposing aura was enough to show who was the boss here.

Ye Xiwen was holding Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag Array in his hand.

After several months of training day and night, he was planning to reach truth ninth stage. And in order to reach this stage, he had collected the corpses and souls of deepwater black snakes for later consumption. Since, at the time of breaking to the half-step legendary realm, he would need to have a proper amount of accumulation as well as a difference in the quality of energy. Also because of this, he had been only able to reach truth seventh stage so far since he was focusing more on the accumulation of heavy amounts of energy. However, now that he had completely entered truth seventh stage and one could see that his strength was not at all inferior to any of the experts of truth ninth stage. This really pumped an invincible confidence inside him.

"You had a breakthrough?" Wu Shaoqun asked.

"Yes." Ye Xiwen said with a smile. He had successfully stepped

into truth seventh stage, and for him, its significance was hard to put in words. In short, now he was no longer afraid of anyone from truth realm. Unless his opponent was an expert of half-step legendary realm or above, he could easily deal with rest of the experts on this island.

Now, he could also be regarded as strongest in the younger generation of experts.

Ye Xiwen's practice time was much shorter when compared with other young geniuses, so this was a huge achievement for him.

"Come on, let's go." Ye Xiwen said and grinned at the same time.

"Where are we going?" Wu Shaoqun asked.

"We are going to check out that place where demon beast eggs are buried." Ye Xiwen said. "It has been so noisy lately. Let's go and see what's with all this commotion."

.....

According to the rumors, these so-called ancient eggs were buried in a stretch of river basin, more like a very spacious plain, surrounded by cliffs from all sides.

At this time, the entire area was overrun by experts and all of them were trying to find eggs. Ye Xiwen and his group quickly reached there and began the inspection.

Suddenly, a loud voice came from a distant place.

"Ha ha, I did it, I found an egg!"

Everyone heard the voice and immediately rushed towards him. They were surprised to find a young disciple was holding a 1 meter long egg in his hands and laughing like a crazy guy.

Now that he found an egg, this almost instantly increased his importance in the eyes of other experts.

"Just look at the extent of his happiness. But he has made a mistake of thinking that just because he found an egg, he can subjugate the cub. That's a wishful thinking right there." An expert commented with a disdainful look on his face.

"Just wait and witness how he gets killed by the cub."

"Sure, I expect nonetheless from the cub of a legendary demon beast from ancient era."

Ye Xiwen glimpsed at the egg and couldn't conceal the greedy look in his eyes.

After all, there was a high probability that this cub contained the noble blood of an ancient god-beast, just like Warhawk's new pet. So far, Ye Xiwen had only seen god's descendants who were

basically separated by hundreds of generations from the original gods. But, now there was a chance that this egg belonged to a real god.

One could imagine why this cub was going to be a rare and priceless treasure.

The young expert did not waste a single moment and immediately used his hands to inject Zhen Yuan into the egg, forcing it to hatch. He was not a fool, knew very well that everyone was eyeing the egg and if he tried to escape now, then he would surely be tracked by others. So, his only option was to forcibly make it hatch on the spot and subjugate the cub.

The elite young geniuses that were summoned on this island were no stupid. They were very smart and knew how to act in a given situation. No one interrupted the hatching process and continued to watch from sidelines.

It was hard to determine how long it took but the egg finally began to hatch.

"Kaca!"

"Kaca!"

"Kaca!" The eggshell broke off little by little, and finally, a little black beast crawled out of it. Everyone exclaimed at this scene when they saw a meter long cub with its whole body covered with

profane breath. Judging by its appearance, it looked like a wolf, more like a coyote because of its small appearance. Its black body was overflowing with terrifying breath.

One could say that a seemingly divine glory was overflowing from its body.

When the young expert was going to reach out and touch it, it suddenly opened its eyes holding an aggressive look in them. Immediately after that, it opened its mouth and shot a beam of energy that blasted the arm of that young expert. A pitiful scream echoed everywhere as the bottom half part of the egg, that was still intact, fell to the ground and disintegrated into several pieces. The coyote stood on the ground, uttered a loud howl, then, coldly looked at the human experts, as if issuing a warning to stay away.

It just took a few second for its quivering limbs to stand firmly on the ground. And the very next instant, it appeared vigorous and healthy as if it was not a newborn at all.

Its growth was almost visible to naked eye, just too amazing.

It looked like a coyote but with a fearsome oppressive aura.

The experts began to look for an opportunity to grab it.

However, no one knew that its first few words would be: "You f\*\*\*ers."

Then it turned around to run away!

Everyone was stunned by this. What the f\*\*k just happened? A newborn cub actually spoke, no, it swore to be specific. In general, a demon beast's wisdom was dependent on its strength and level, but this scene was still hard to digest.

It was a common knowledge that it was always difficult for demon beasts to acquire wisdom, especially for low level demon beasts. But the truth was, it was equally difficult even for high level demon beasts.

The only difference was that Xiantian level demon beasts could not attain high wisdom no matter how much they tried, but high level demon beasts, though after facing a lot of difficulties, could actually achieve great wisdom and intelligence, enough to be able to speak like humans.

But, irrespective of level or strength, it was never easy for demon beasts to attain enough wisdom to speak like human beings. It was simply unheard of that a newborn cub could actually speak so fluently. It really came as a shock for everyone.

Just what was the origin of this coyote? Now, everyone had started to feel that it had a tyrannical background.

Color of greed began to appear in everybody's eyes. A burly expert suddenly rushed forward shouting: "This cub is mine!"



His big hand went forward to grab the coyote.

"I am not your sister, f\*\*\*er!" The small cub cursed out loud and spat a divine beam towards that expert.

"Bang!" He screamed while his whole body disintegrated in front of everyone and then, he died almost instantly!

But his death was not enough to stop others from pursuing the cub.

The cub saw many people rushing towards it and immediately turned around to flee from there. A stream of divine light appeared beneath his feet and suddenly boosted his speed several times.

"Ha ha ha, this wolf or dog or whatever it is. It is too much fun!" Wu Shaoqun laughed loudly like a mad man. It was fun to see how everyone was trying their best to catch this foul-mouthed cub.

Even Mu Ling's eyes flashed with a curious look clearly visible in them. After all, the cub really intrigued him. He had never witnessed such a bizarre scene before.

There were 200-300 experts in the vicinity and all of them instantly rushed toward the escaping cub.

The cub was very tyrannical, it was jumping from left to right to throw off the chasers. No one was able to catch up with its speed, in fact, its agility skill was so advanced that it would make anyone

wonder about its background. Soon, it disappeared in a blink of an eye and left only a sense of regret in everyone's heart. But at this time, Ye Xiwen suddenly moved and in a flash, a beam of light appeared beneath him and blasted him forward like a super jet. Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun also followed after him.

"Who is this man? He suddenly began to chase but with his agility skill, it should be impossible to catch the cub." Someone said.

"He looks somewhat familiar, oh wait, I think....this guy is that infamous Ye Xiwen from the rumors!"

"Yes, you are right! I saw how he single-handedly slaughtered those two tyrants. He is undoubtedly that Ye Xiwen, but he has not come out for a long time, I almost forgot his appearance."

"Although he hasn't appeared for past few months, but he suddenly shows up today. Did he actually come here for the egg?"

"There's nothing to be surprised about, after all, who isn't interested in these demon beast eggs? He would not even bother to chase if he was not interested."

"Well, considering his strength, he should be able to deal with that cub, but he lacks enough speed to catch up with it. The cub is too fast for any of us."

Ye Xiwen and the other two suddenly vanished from there which

caught the crowd's attention. At this time, a pair of wings appeared behind Ye Xiwen. These were devil wings but were thoroughly covered with golden light. The wings were certainly generated from a devil power technique, but since they were wrapped in a layer of golden divinities, Ye Xiwen wasn't worried about exposing them in front of everyone.

# Chapter 256: Great Changes On The Demon Island

---

The devil wings no longer gave off the feel of being made up of dense [Moqi](#), though its mighty magical powers were still intact but the ominous devil magic had been replaced by a divine feel.

Moqi = Devil qi

The people of Zhen Wu Jie might not care about the evil ways of martial arts, but they were very much concerned about [devil ways of martial arts](#).

Evil way and devil way are two different forms of martial arts.

After all, devil race was by far the strongest archenemy of humanity.

When Ye Xiwen opened his devil wings, his speed suddenly dramatically rose. He tore a golden streamer in the sky and instantly went towards that small wolf.

The wolf cub initially thought that it had gotten rid of the human experts, but did not expect to see a golden figure suddenly catching up.

It suddenly cursed out loud: "F\*\*k, this is unreasonable!"

Although it had a small body, it was very fast and was also using an extraordinary agility skill. It was so fast that even Ye Xiwen,

with his strength equivalent to an expert of truth ninth stage, might not be able to catch up. No wonder, he had to resort to using devil wings. In fact, even an expert of legendary realm might not be able to catch it.

The extent of this cub's speed could be imagined.

However, an expert of the legendary realm would not need to chase in the first place, since with just a flick of hand, they could directly confine the space, making it impossible to make an escape.

But, Ye Xiwen's devil wings technique was not an ordinary devil technique. It was a top tier technique and since he had already perfected it, he was able to display extremely high acceleration and reach unimaginable speeds in a matter of seconds.

Therefore, within a moment, he caught up with it and stretched out his hands that suddenly transformed into a big hand, made up of Zhen Yuan and proceeded to grab it. It turned back and spat a divine beam towards Ye Xiwen.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen's big hand was unaffected and directly caught the beam and crushed it. The coyote was very strong but its strength was only comparable to that of an expert of truth eighth stage. However, its attacks were simply useless on Ye Xiwen who possessed a tyrannical golden body.

"You f\*\*\*er!" The coyote said angrily and turned around to escape, but it was just a wishful thinking on its part because Ye Xiwen's big hand instantly printed a direct slap on this foul-

mouthed cub's face, sending it flying for a large distance.

Ye Xiwen's wings fluttered and he slowly descended to the side of the cub that was lying on the ground.

"You insolent bastard!" It was angry because this was the first time it was slapped by a human being after taking birth. It could not accept the fact that it had been defeated by a human, not just in speed but also in strength.

Ye Xiwen grinned while thinking that it was really very intriguing. He asked: "Well, what is your family background?"

The cub pretended as if it didn't hear anything and simply ignored him.

"You should consider answering because if you don't, I would prefer cooking a pot of dog soup using you as the ingredient, so delicious." Ye Xiwen said with an evil smile.

"Go f\*\*k yourself, this prince is a wolf, A WOLF, get it? I am not a dog!" The cub instantly said in an angry tone.

"Whatever." Ye Xiwen said dismissively, "Why are there so many eggs belonging to ridiculously powerful beasts buried in this area? If you answer honestly, I'll let you go."

Actually he was not particularly interested in subduing an extraordinary beast cub, especially this one.

He could see this wolf cub's wisdom was way too high for an ordinary demon beast. Ye Xiwen was impressed by its intelligence, strength as well as skills. There was a high possibility that subjugation might not work on it because its wisdom was similar to that of human beings, not to mention it had a rebellious personality. Ye Xiwen could not say for sure that he could subjugate it. But in case he could not make it willingly surrender and ended up hurting it in the process, it might summon danger for him since he was not aware of this cub's background which was bound to be extraordinary.

Moreover, he believed that there should be more eggs buried in this area and he would get plenty of opportunities later on.

He mainly wanted to know why there were such extraordinary demon beast eggs in this area. Also, just like Warhawk attracted the attention of a legendary level demon beast senior, he also needed to be careful not to offend any high-level demon beast for his own good! But one thing was certain and was, there was a hidden secret behind all this.

"I do not know." The cub mumbled while still lying on the ground as if feigning death.

At this time, Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun also arrived and saw the small wolf playing possum on the ground. They were a bit surprised as they did not know what exactly happened here.

Ye Xiwen explained things to them and they felt like having a

headache all of a sudden. Of course, they could not hurt this cub, otherwise, that might attract the attention of a legendary level demon beast.

Ye Xiwen vaguely guessed that this cub's background should be extraordinary. If something happened to it, then he would definitely be chased down on this island for the remaining months.

Usually, as soon as the eggs hatched, those demon beast seniors would immediately appear to protect the newborn baby beast, without giving any chance to human experts to hurt or capture the baby beast. This meant that this cub was also one of those so-called untouchable and precious babies.

However, it was not saying anything; rather there was a treacherous and slick look on its face. As if it would rather die than surrender. Ye Xiwen was a bit surprised by this and secretly praised it.

He did not have a way to find out about the secret from the wolf cub, though it clearly knew something and was not willing to tell. Since he could not resort to brutal means to force the information out of its mouth because of its rebellious personality, so he decided to keep this wolf cub at his side. Perhaps, later on, it would willingly tell things about this mysterious island.

This wolf cub was the only way to find out the real secrets about this strange island.

As far as the wolf cub's attitude was concerned, it had non-



violent, non-cooperation attitude and its only option was to stay with Ye Xiwen.

The race to capture eggs was getting intense and complicated. A lot of people had started going crazy to obtain an egg of their own.

After the wolf cub, several demon beast eggs were dug out, but nothing good came out of it. Most of the cubs fled and almost every time demon beast seniors rushed to protect their own which led to a lot of chaos. In the end, for human experts, their hard work was all in vain.

Certainly, there were some experts who were successful, such as Ji Moon obtained a Hudiesaurus [butterfly lizard] which was an extremely rare demon beast. Its whole body was of a Tyrannosaurus but with a pair of butterfly wings on its back.

However, the third super expert, Wang Purple, was the most unfortunate one because when he finally got a cub, it attracted a demon beast senior and he was half beaten to death. Not to mention that cub was also taken away from him.

The good thing was that the opposite party was not serious, otherwise, he would have already been killed.

The unrest continued to get stronger and stronger.

The silence of the night spread a chill everywhere while the constant shrieks could be heard transmitting from the ominous

mountain. The roars of several demon beasts also disappeared under the overwhelming presence of those shrieks.

Not far away, the yellow river was flowing down the forest and numerous ghost soldiers could be seen marching upon it. They had been following this daily routine for thousands of years, going on an expedition against an unknown enemy.

Mu Ling was indulged in a continuous battle in the yellow river and basically cultivating. He was fortunate to be able to practice in this river of the dead, which was also the main reason why his cultivation progress rate was so high.

"Several days have passed, why haven't your relatives come to pick you up?"

A large bonfire was burning high and a considerably large demon beast was supported on two thick branches and was being roasted in the fire.

As the roasting continued, its meat was gradually turning yellow while the fat oil was dripping down into the fire, contributing to its intensity.

Not far away, the wolf cub was constantly pacing back and forth. When compared to a few days ago, its size was now significantly larger and it also looked a lot stronger.

Obviously, it was still constantly complaining: "This prince is not

going to eat this lowly demon beast." Nonetheless, its eyes were constantly staring at the almost cooked demon beast. It was reluctant to remove his gaze from the delicious food.

Ye Xiwen slowly rotated the branch to roast the uncooked portions of flesh, making the delicious fragrance suddenly spread in the air. He had been relaxing for the last few days; a short break was necessary to stabilize his inner state. Anyway, there was no point in being impatient when it came to cultivation.

He felt odd because whenever other demon babies came out, soon they were taken away by demon beast seniors. But this wolf cub had been out for quite some time and no one came to pick it up. Though he did not know what means they used to find out about the birth of these cubs. But in this case, Ye Xiwen felt something was off.

"They are all dead." The wolf cub did not turn his head and said in a low voice. Its eyes were still staring at the demon beast meat.

From the beginning, he tried several times to escape, but each time, he was caught by Ye Xiwen within seconds. Now, he was an orphan who did not know where to go, though it did not take him too long to understand that Ye Xiwen was not going to hurt him.

According to what he said, Ye Xiwen also came to know that he was homeless. No wonder no one came to pick him up.

However, when Ye Xiwen asked him about other things, he refused to talk about anything.

Just when Ye Xiwen seemed all prepared to taste the meat, suddenly, horrible shrieks began to echo everywhere. The ominous qi swept from the mountain and instantly obscured the entire sky in the form of dense black clouds. The condensed black clouds suddenly gave rise to endless rain on the island.

The sudden invasion of Yinqi and Deadqi sucked away lives out of the trees, leaving them in a withered state.

The barbecue was instantly corroded by the torrential downpour and ruined the bonfire.

Then, Ye Xiwen and the others suddenly heard extremely loud roars of demon beasts coming from the depths of the island. They had never heard such horrifying roars before and it was not hard to tell that these roars belonged to extremely tyrannical demon beasts.

## Chapter 257: Tomb Slave Reappears

---

"What the f\*\*k, my meat! It's all ruined now!" The wolf cub could not bear to see the delicious meat corroding in front of his eyes and his anger suddenly soared to the sky. The so-called proud prince could not control this outburst.

Ye Xiwen immediately stood up and looked at the sky. Wu Shaoqun and Mu Ling also looked at the sky and did not know what actually happened all of a sudden.

"Beep!" A tyrannical golden bird flew across the sky and was headed towards the huge ominous mountain. Ye Xiwen noticed that this golden bird was actually the golden-winged bird that had destroyed his boat when he was entering the island.

Then a giant flaming bird flew from another direction and went towards the ominous mountain.

"Seems like a major event!" Wu Shaoqun murmured.

It was easy to tell from the present environment on the island that something was off and this was certainly an important matter.

And it was kind of scary to see that this matter was somehow related to the ominous mountain!

The rain got harder and harder and black clouds enveloped the entire island. It seemed as if the entire island had been swallowed

by a deathly atmosphere, making it seem like the world of death itself.

Ye Xiwen and Wu Shaoqun immediately used Zhen Yuan to resist the corrosive rain, whereas Mu Ling was not all affected by the rain, on the contrary, the rain was actually absorbed by his body.

Then, abruptly, a figure appeared in the distance. Ye Xiwen saw a somewhat emaciated old man flying in the rain, directly across the sky. He seemed very far away, but the very next instant, he appeared in front of them. It was actually the tomb slave.

Ye Xiwen's pupils shrank because he clearly remembered what tomb slave had told him earlier about making a vow to always guard the tombs and not being able to leave the premises of graveyard. But now he seemed to have come out and this certainly showed that something big happened on this island which compelled him to come out of the graveyard.

And this was certainly related to the sudden outbreak on the ominous mountain.

"Greetings to honorable senior!" Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling quickly saluted to show respect to the old man. Wu Shaoqun did not know who he was but since Ye Xiwen was showing respect to this old man, then he was bound to be a great persona. Therefore, he also quickly followed the other two and gave his salute.

"What have you decided about the thing I told you earlier? Are you ready to take up the task?" The tomb slave said. "It is solely in

your control whether you want to do it or not. But remember, if you are unable to accomplish this task then forget about leaving this island, you might actually lose your lives."

Ye Xiwen's complexion suddenly changed, so this matter was really very serious. Moreover, they might not be able to leave this island.

For these geniuses, staying on this island was only a part of an adventure. No one wanted to spend their entire lives on this deadly island. Their motive was to get stronger on this island, then go back and display their newly obtained strength to the entire world, not to mention also to contribute to their respective sect's strength.

However, this matter had turned into a serious possibility that everyone would end up dying on this island.

"Senior, what exactly has happened? At least let us know." Ye Xiwen said.

At least he would like to know what had really happened, then only he would further decide whether to go or not.

"What we are witnessing is the period of time that comes once in a millennium. During this period, those undead that reside on ominous mountain experience great suppression and are at their weakest level." The old man explained, "In fact, the undead are confined in a powerful matrix method on the ominous mountain and it's impossible for them to come down. But the situation has

gotten worse because a gap has appeared in the matrix method and those undead will most likely come out through the gap. So, I sent the demon beasts of this island to rush to the ominous mountain and make sure to block the gap, otherwise, the consequences would be disastrous. Even if the undead face a major reduction in their strengths during this period of time, they are still very scary. And in case even one of them managed to come out, then forget the demon island, the entire world would face a serious danger."

Now, they finally understood the seriousness of this situation.

Especially, Ye Xiwen understood better because he could tell that this would perhaps affect the entire world.

These so-called undead monsters were insanely formidable and scary. Even after facing the suppression that appeared once in a millennium, they were still so dreadful that even a single one was enough to threaten the world security.

However, this matrix method was so powerful that it was able to confine these undead monsters for tens of thousands of years. According to what Ye Mo said, the person, who would have set up this matrix tens thousands of years ago, was truly a terrifying being, simply beyond the comprehension of this realm.

However, a gap appeared in such a powerful matrix method, though only a small gap, but enough to put the entire world in danger.

The creator of this matrix method must be an extremely



formidable being. Or perhaps, it was not created by a person but an organization.

Ye Xiwen had already started to notice that there was basically no subordination system among the demon beasts on this island. It was as if demon beasts had divided their respective territories on the island and no one liked interfering with each other. Of course, there was no sign of intrusion as well, which indicated a very smooth regulation and territorial understanding among the beasts. The demon beasts used to only hunt in their respective territories and there were no signs of cross-border attacks.

However, the appearance of ancient eggs was enough to hint that this demon island was hiding a secret. But this time, things got even weirder than before. The wise and exotic demon beasts of legendary level or above were actually following the orders of the tomb slave. It seemed like this island previously belonged to a tyrannical faction. Although there was a decline in its influence over time, the chief of each demon beast clan was probably still a member of that ancient faction while this old man was their boss.

Even if this faction's influence had declined, it was still a tyrannical existence for Zhen Wu Jie.

It was like a clash between two disastrous forces.

Why did the demon island appear once in every 50 years? What was the reason behind summoning young heroes to this island?

What was the point of ghost soldiers going on an expedition

every night in the yellow river and against whom?

Who was this old man?

Were the demon beasts on this island really the descendants of god?

Ye Xiwen was immersed in deep thoughts as these questions quickly flashed in his mind!

"Looking at the gravity of this situation, what can we do?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"You can uncover that seal since those undead are now under the restraint and you can take advantage of this opportunity to travel to the ominous mountain. But you will get only one chance, if you fail, that will be your end." The tomb slave said in a serious tone. "But my offer is still valid, as long as you can uncover that seal, I will give you the right to my inheritance. You think about it while I will go inform the other human experts about the situation."

Then the old man turned around and disappeared into the thin air. The insane level of his agility skill could literally shock the world.

Just before leaving, he glanced at the wolf cub then left from there.

The other two looked at Ye Xiwen and asked: "What should we do

now?"

"I advise you to do what the old man said because this seems to be a big trouble." The wolf cub suddenly spoke, "Even if a part of the Zhou star array is broken, it is enough to become a door to unleash deadly creatures that have waited for so long to wreak havoc on this world."

"We have to do it, guys! There is no other way out. If what the senior said is true then we will most likely die if we don't do something." Wu Shaoqun clenched his fist and said.

"If we don't act, we die. But if we take the risk and survive, we may get that inheritance he talked about." Ye Xiwen said as even he could clearly see the hidden meaning in the old man's words and that was, they had no choice but to take up this task.

Earlier, the old man had said that if Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling refused to take up the task, he would wait for another fifty years to pass on the task to another generation of geniuses. But this time, he seemed quite anxious as if he really wanted them to take up this task and succeed.

Ye Xiwen was no longer thinking about the inheritance because survival was a much bigger issue now!

"Come on then, there's no point in further discussion, let's go!" Mu Ling said in a straightforward manner.

The trio made the final decision and rushed in the direction of the huge ominous mountain of the undead. They were planning to do all they could in their power before the disaster would strike. But all of a sudden, Ye Xiwen was taken aback when he saw the wolf cub following after them. The same wolf cub, who tried several times to escape, was now silently following them on his own accord.

## Chapter 258: Rushes All The Way

---

Three men and a wolf rushed all the way at an extremely fast speed and soon reached the huge ominous mountain. Although this mountain was visible from any part of the demon island, it was in fact located very far away in the depths of the island. Now, after arriving so close to the mountain, all they saw was a steady stream of demon beasts rushing to the mountain one after another.

Even the yellow river changed its course and was flowing towards the ominous mountain. The ghost soldiers were riding the mighty streams of the yellow river, all set to go on an expedition to the ominous mountain. This was really a frightening event.

Innumerable tribal groups, that consisted of various species of demon beasts which usually preferred to stay in hiding, also showed up to be a part of this grand expedition. Not to mention, the mighty cavalry of ghost soldiers was also a part of this grand expedition, making the whole situation quite scary for human experts.

Ye Xiwen was literally speechless when he looked at the raid being performed by demon beasts and ghost soldiers. Such an enormous and mighty army was enough to bring chaos throughout Zhen Wu Jie. The sheer number of legendary realm warriors in this army was beyond imagination.

Not to mention, this was just their strength after the decline of their influence over a span of thousands of years. He simply could not imagine the extent of their original might when this influence was at its peak.

The fearful shrieks of the undead creatures could be heard from far. Ye Xiwen condensed Zhen Yuan in his eyes and it seemed as if he suddenly opened a deva-eye in the sky. Now, he could see from unimaginable far distances.

From afar, he saw an endless army of skeleton monsters entirely enveloped in inexhaustible amounts of Deadqi. There could be only one way to define these skeletons, terrifying creatures! It was easy to make a guess that they belonged to a mighty ancient influence, and at this time, an army of skeletons was rushing down the mountain. The terror-inducing sound of bones, rubbing against each other, was resounding throughout the sky and making the whole atmosphere even more frightening.

Ye Xiwen witnessed how the army of skeletons severely clashed with the army of demon beast and vicious creatures and began the most terror-inspiring battle. In moments, there were several casualties on both sides but that didn't affect the battle at all.

"Beep!" At this time, the golden-winged eagle arrived like a fighter jet, flapping its wings violently and then, it shot several rounds of lasing beams on the skeleton army, sweeping clean a big stretch of area.

However, the golden-winged eagle did not stop and continued to advance in the direction of the mountain of undead. On the rear side of skeleton army, there was an immense army of skeletons and zombies while several zombie experts had unimaginable strength and cultivation levels. The zombie commander suddenly released his invincible imposing aura, thereby sweeping Deadqi into the sky

in the form of a column of light. As soon as this column of ominous light soared into the sky, it exploded and scattered the dark clouds in all directions.

Ye Xiwen's eyes opened wide as he saw this scene. He suddenly held his breath and simply couldn't believe his eyes. If skeletons were terrifying then zombie experts were much more dreadful. And then there were also evil spirits waiting to wreak havoc on this world.

Wu Shaoqun cursed out loud and said: "Goddamn it! I just hope that the matrix method is still confining a major part of this undead army, otherwise, we are screwed."

When the roars of demon beasts and undead creatures along with the rubbing sounds of bones, interwoven together, the generated noise which took birth were extremely horrifying enough to shake heaven and earth.

The count of demon beasts kept on increasing since more and more demon beasts kept on joining the battle to stop the rampage of the undead army.

The two sides were in a deadly deadlock which was essential to stop the undead army from destroying the entire island.

It was like Armageddon, the whole island was trembling. It seemed as if the whole world would collapse as a result of this battle.

Soon, the yellow river also reached its destination and ghost soldiers also joined the battle. The ghost cavalry reached directly from the oblique side and cut off the contact between skeletons and zombies. Although skeletons and zombies might have been extraordinary powerhouses when they were alive, but when confronted with the yellow river, they immediately fell under the possession of evil spirits lurking in the yellow water which greatly lowered their spiritual strength. Some could no longer maintain their existence, simply screamed loudly and melted on the spot.

It was a terrible war, enough to inspire terror in anyone. The dark sky was wreaking havoc on the island in the form of deadly rain that was capable of instantly corroding things.

"Let's go, no matter what, we must cross the battlefield!" Ye Xiwen took a deep breath and said. There was only one option at hand, not only for own survival but also for the safety of the entire world. Anyway, tomb slave had already told him earlier that they could not leave this island, and if this undead army was allowed to go outside, then there was no point in leaving either because the entire Zhen Wu Jie would face destruction.

The entire humanity might face annihilation so they must find a way out of this mess.

"Hu Hu!" Ye Xiwen's extremely fast flight as he cut through the air, producing a whistling sound that seemed to resemble a devil's cry.

Ye Xiwen and the others rushed all the way and soon reached the intersection point between the two armies. The demon beast



soldiers seemed to understand that Ye Xiwen and the others were here to help them. Not to mention, they were indulged in this battle and simply did not have time to attend to Ye Xiwen's team.

However, skeletons noticed them and immediately, a formidable skeleton gave the order to his subordinates to attack. They immediately reacted by shooting a barrage of bone arrows towards Ye Xiwen and his team.

Also, there was no lack of legendary realm skeletons among the attackers.

"Get out of the way!" Ye Xiwen bellowed and his whole body instantly got covered by a golden cloak of divinities. The mighty divinities were burning wantonly around his body while also purifying the Deadqi in his surroundings. This decreased the intensity of howling of innumerable souls that were filled with resentment.

The long blade danced in his hands and released a dazzling Bladelight that instantly formed a curtain of blade shadows. It blocked the incoming bone arrows and chopped and crushed several of them to bits almost instantly.

Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun also resorted to their secret techniques to block the incoming barrage of bone arrows.

Then there came a shrill cry and a formidable looking skeleton took out a bone arrow, aimed at Ye Xiwen and shot.

The arrow pierced through space and almost instantly arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

Almost at that moment, a terrible light flashed in the sky and the bone arrow instantly disintegrated under its enormous might. Then the golden light further proceeded and crashed into that skeleton, crushing him instantly.

Ye Xiwen looked up and saw the giant stature of the golden-winged eagle in the distance. It did not stop and once again continued to slaughter undead soldiers.

Apparently, it did this to protect Ye Xiwen and his friends.

The trio and the wolf cub continued to move forward but now more cautiously. This time, they were fortunate enough to receive help from the golden-winged eagle; otherwise, things could have become messy.

They went forward all the way, only to find many experts in the distance. They had also taken advantage of the commotion and arrived here to participate in this battle. It seemed like they had also been persuaded by the tomb slave. In short, they knew that if they did not go all out now, then, there was a possibility of a great disaster that would eventually bring death to all. Therefore, they chose to struggle for survival rather than waiting for death.

Ye Xiwen's team also joined the team of experts.

This team was being led by Emperor Chen and only this time, he was sitting upon a golden lion. He appeared majestic, just like the true emperor of this world.

Emperor Chen's imposing aura swept over in all directions. He turned his head and saw Ye Xiwen flying towards his team. He snorted but did not take the opportunity to attack Ye Xiwen, because he was clearly aware of the severity of the situation. He ignored the presence of Ye Xiwen and urged the golden lion, thereby flying all the way forward.

Qing Xu could also be seen following Emperor Chen and his aura was no worse than Emperor Chen's. With just a flick of his hand, a blue beam appeared out of nowhere and swept skeletons out of his path.

Qing Xu was riding a beautiful yellow crane and appeared just like an immortal being. There were several familiar faces on this team, such as Ji Moon could be seen standing on her butterfly lizard, Warhawk was also riding his golden-winged eagle, and Wang Purple was also present. These four formidable experts were guarding the four sides of the team formation with all other human experts inside the formation.

Mu Youran and Jian Wuchen were no longer injured and had also arrived to participate. In addition, several other strong experts of the ten countries of the south-east region had also arrived, with some being at truth seventh or eighth stage while some being only at truth fourth or fifth stage.

The island's best human experts had already arrived to

participate in this battle for their survival.

But at this time, the smell of blood spread all over while the sky turned red and began to pour blood everywhere, almost as if the heaven was crying tears of blood.

"It's the infamous blood rain, so terrible!" An expert said when he was drenched in the blood rain and felt his body getting heavy, to the extent that he was unable to take even a single step forward.

"Tianyuan mirror!" Ye Xiwen shouted and Tianyuan mirror flew out into the sky and released a curtain of scarlet light that immediately acted as a shelter against the blood rain. However, when the blood rain fell on the scarlet shelter, it instead became a source of nourishment for the mirror.

"Ha ha ha!" Ye Mo gave out a carefree laughter because this blood rain was simply like a nourishing shower for him and Tianyuan mirror. This shower of blood was made up of evaporated blood and essence of demon beast soldiers as they were being slaughtered by undead soldiers. For most people, this blood rain was like a curse and very hard to deal with. In fact, it could even kill formidable experts if proper protection was not used. But Tianyuan mirror directly erased the curse and absorbed blood and essence out of it. This was the reason why Tianyuan mirror was getting brighter since it was constantly absorbing blood and essence of killed demon beasts. The scarlet light released by the mirror almost camouflaged the surrounding sky.

At this time, Tianyuan mirror flew high into the sky and started getting bigger and bigger, covering a very wide area, and the next

moment, the blood rain was directly absorbed by the scarlet red mirror.

The experts cupped their hands and showed gratitude to Ye Xiwen. If Ye Xiwen had not acted at the critical moment then they would have faced extreme difficulties in dealing with this blood rain.

They felt like throwing up due to the repugnant smell of blood emanating from the blood rain.

This was the time when everyone needed unity and cooperation. Ye Xiwen was not stingy, hence he openly lent them a hand, not to mention, it also allowed Tianyuan mirror to reap great benefits. In any event, Ye Xiwen made the right decision.

Only Emperor Chen looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. He neither appreciated Ye Xiwen's strength nor the kindness rendered by him. He certainly was not afraid of this blood rain and continued to defend the frontline.

# Chapter 259: Struggle On The Ominous Mountain

---

Only Emperor Chen looked coldly at Ye Xiwen. Neither he appreciated his strength nor the kindness rendered by him. He certainly was not afraid of this blood rain and rushed toward the frontline on his golden lion.

Under the crazy shower of blood, the team of experts was enjoying the full protection of Ye Xiwen's Tianyuan mirror.

After successfully bypassing the skeleton army, they bumped into the mighty army of zombies. These horrifying zombies were continuously gushing out from the gap in the matrix method. Ye Xiwen and the others did not stop there and flew all the way, only to find a flaming bird in the distance that was constantly sweeping clean an area with its immortal flames which could burn the world itself.

The team of experts rushed through the flaming area and reached pretty close to the ominous mountain for the first time. They saw a mighty team of undead, mainly consisting of high ranked zombies, rushing down from the mountain.

The most unusual scenery that greeted human experts was when they looked into the matrix method, actually saw a variety of palace buildings on the mountain peak. Yes, an entire complex of ancient architecture with lots of crowded buildings covering the entire mountain area inside the matrix formation.

"This should be the headquarters of the ancient mighty influence that initially ruled this island. Almost all of them are made up of rare materials." Ye Mo said. And considering how old a being he was, the amount of experience he possessed was not something Ye Xiwen could comprehend, "Only after searching in several dimensions, one can find so many rare building materials. Most of these materials do not occur in this world. I must say that these buildings are more extravagant than Devil King's palace."

Everyone was shocked after witnessing this endless complex of the ancient architectural masterpiece. Built with an amazing combination of gold and jade along with some strange materials had never been seen before. However now, these buildings were acting as a breeding nest for a variety of zombies and evil spirits that were continuously coming out of the palace buildings. There was no end to this undead army and after watching this scene, human experts felt chills down their spines.

In Ye Xiwen's mind, abruptly, the ancient seal characters cropped up. The same seal characters he had seen earlier in the ruins of an ancient civilization. That time, he was sucked into a scary illusion. He couldn't help but remember the same illusion once again.

"Boom!" "Boom!"

Numerous electric snakes could be seen creeping in the black clouds accompanied with a terrifying thunder which struck the palace. The palace couldn't withstand the enormous destructive power contained in the thunder strike and crumbled down.

"I am here, now come out!" Suddenly, a majestic voice resounded

in all directions, "Buzz!" The low and dull muffled sound of a bell also resounded and instantly sent out numerous sonic waves everywhere. While several electric snakes could be seen lurking in the dark cloud, all prepared to bring down chaos in this world.

"Get lost!" Accompanied by a loud shout, a few hundred feet wide pillar of golden light went straight into the sky and dispersed the dark thundering clouds.

As the voice fell, a middle-aged man flew out of the wreckage of palace and coldly looked towards the sky. He had a dignified bearing and was clad in a golden colored emperor's robe.

In the sky, the scattered clouds suddenly agglutinated again and revealed a huge glowing eye in the centre.

"If you dare to go against the heaven's will, you cannot do that without a fight!" A muffled voice echoed everywhere.

And a huge lightning maliciously struck.

Wasn't the illusion based on this location? Though it looked somewhat different after having undergone corrosion for thousands of years, Ye Xiwen still managed to recognize this place in one glance.

Or, the entire island was perhaps the background in this scene and not just this part of the ominous mountain of the undead.



Right after entering the matrix method, human experts immediately felt a terrible pressure upon their bodies. They felt as if they would be crushed under this pressure. The strange force suddenly fell down from the sky and pushed them to the ground.

Now they had no means to fly inside the matrix formation. Certainly, there were some exceptions like Ye Xiwen with his golden devil wings, Warhawk riding his pet golden-winged eagle, Ji Moon riding her butterfly lizard and Qing Xu riding his yellow crane, after all, even if human experts were unable to use various techniques to fly, the ones with wings would naturally be able to fly in the air.

The terrifying shrieks were resounding everywhere and the whole scene was truly fear-inspiring.

Watching the steady stream of zombies coming out of the palace buildings, everyone felt as if they had stepped in a zombie nest, otherwise, how could there be hundreds of thousands of zombies in one place.

"I think this place is an ancient battlefield. All these zombies are clad in iron armors, armed with spears. So, it is clear that they used to be war soldiers who have now transformed into zombies."

"You are right, it's too terrifying. I also thought the same thing; this place seems like the lair of a formidable ancient civilization. Besides, it also seems like they were attacked by some even more formidable force that led to countless casualties, which eventually led to the birth of these zombies."

"What kind of formidable force can destroy such a fearful influence, causing so many casualties? This is unbelievably shocking!"

"Anyway, we have to uncover the seal; otherwise, we certainly will not have any way out of this mess."

An expert said in a loud voice and was heard by all other experts. This worked as a spark to help them recover from their shocked states. They also began to think about the most vital point - if they did not do their best, then there was only a dead end waiting for them.

At this time, the matrix method began to revolve. Even though some formidable zombies and skeletons were constantly attacking the gap, desperately trying to widen it and also ultimately destroyed the entire matrix method, but the matrix method, despite having a gap, was intrepid and sparkling across the sky. In the sky, the stars were twinkling like never before and as if announcing the incoming of an apocalypse. At this moment, suddenly, a huge beam of light detached itself from the matrix formation and severely pounded on the ground, smashing many zombies and skeletons into minced meat.

Zhou star matrix method!

The wolf cub opened its mouth wide and spelt out the name of this matrix method. The energy of the stars was condensed by the matrix formation, transforming into a huge dragon tail and

severely hit the ground.

Taking advantage of this situation, the team of human experts rushed forward. Even if they could not fly, they were still advancing at extremely high speeds.

The huge palace-like buildings were connected with each other and were positioned as sections of ladders, one after another while going up towards the mountain peak. The experts crossed the buildings one by one and continued to climb up while also encountering many zombies and skeletons on the way.

They did not stop to engage the undead soldiers and continued to advance forward at maximum speed. They could not afford to waste any time and needed to stop the advancement of the undead army into the demon island.

The experts were getting agitated but did not dare to stay to fight with undead soldiers because staying behind was no different than dying a brutal death.

"Aaaa!"

"Aaaa!"

Several pitiful screams echoed when experts were passing through a palace and were suddenly attacked by two pairs of jaw bones as they directly dashed into the crowd of human experts and caught several experts at once. There came miserable cries along

with spooky bone-rubbing sounds as if the flesh was being chewed directly from the bodies of people who were still alive and screaming.

All of the experts who managed to evade this attack looked at each other with eyes filled with horror; after all, this was not something they witnessed every day. Now everyone knew how important it was to reach the summit as soon as possible and open the seal, then only they could stop this nightmare.

But this was something that has never been accomplished by anyone in the past thousands of years. No one had ever succeeded in taking off the seal, however, they had no choice but to do it. They could only choose to go forward while temporarily ignoring the loss of their comrades. Of course, retreating was not an option.

"We must hurry, but we must be careful not to go near those palaces!" At this time, Qing Xu, who was riding a yellow crane, shouted from the sky and warned everyone.

"Yes, charge forward in order to survive!"

All experts were encouraged by this and rushed forward. Those palaces were extremely frightening and were being guarded by frightening monsters. They encountered much more terrifying monsters as they continued to get closer to the summit.

By the time they reached halfway up towards their destination, almost half of their team had been sacrificed, leaving less than 500 experts. This was no ordinary loss and especially for the Southeast

region that lost so many of its super elites. Most of the weaker human experts were eaten by the zombies, but the rest of the team did not stop to help them. This was certainly a heartless thing to do but they had to endure it because if they had stopped to help others then everyone would have died.

There were several palace monsters who almost came close to single-handedly wipe out the entire team of experts. A rotting monster suddenly came out of a palace and chased after them, but the saving grace came as a fact that it was somehow bound to the palace and couldn't go past a certain limit. However, it still managed to drag away several experts and ate them.

These experts had never experienced such a terrible place in their entire life. They were the so-called lucky and pampered geniuses of the Southeast region who never had to face life-threatening situations to grow stronger, so this situation was pretty much of a disaster for them.

Gradually, as they continued to climb up, the number of zombies reduced considerably, but their strength grew enough to compensate. They also bumped into a half-step legendary level zombie that was immediately engaged by Qing Xu and Emperor Chen. But, their combined strength was not enough to deal with it.

The gap between truth ninth stage and half-step legendary realm was too large. But, fortunately, that zombie had spent more than a millennium and seemed to possess limited strength. Hence, after a while, it was overpowered by the team of human experts. Afterwards, they slowly approached the summit.

They had started to feel tired but the great responsibility upon their shoulders was what boosting their morale and pushing them to try harder and achieve their goal.

# Chapter 260: If I Cannot Do It, You All Will Die!

---

Only Emperor Chen, Qing Xu and Ye Xiwen were able to keep a straight face in such a dire situation. Other experts including Warhawk, looked extremely exhausted. Some experts had their bodies completely soaked in sweat and were on the verge of collapse.

Some were showing signs of breathing trouble while sustaining terrible suppression inside the Zhou star matrix formation.

"Come on everyone, we are quickly nearing the pinnacle!" Qing Xu shouted.

But at this time, the team of experts saw two zombies of half-step legendary realm pacing towards them from far behind.

The crowd called out in alarm. They were scared and definitely not prepared to withstand such a loss; after all, one such zombie of half-step legendary realm had exhausted them to such a pitiful state, then how could they even considering dealing with two of them simultaneously.

"What should we do now? There are two of them, coming after us!"

"I don't want to die after getting so close to our destination."

Their goal was so close but the boost in their morale did not survive long after the sudden appearance of two zombies of half-step legendary realm.

Originally, they never thought much about half-step legendary realm as their target was always the legendary realm. Half-step legendary realm was just a milestone in between, and being peerless geniuses, they never had a doubt about not reaching this realm. It was only a matter of time for them.

However, after dealing with that last zombie, they came to realize that they were highly mistaken to have underestimated the half-step legendary realm. After all, even if Emperor Chen and Qing Xu were at the peak of truth ninth realm, together they could not defeat one zombie of half-step legendary realm.

But fortunately, these two zombies should have been weakened too like the previous one, otherwise, despair would be the only thing awaiting them.

"Let me deal with this." At this time, Ye Xiwen stepped forward and said. Everyone was astonished and looked at Ye Xiwen as it took more than just courage to dare and make such a statement.

"Ye Xiwen, have you gone out of your mind?" Wu Shaoqun quickly said.

"Let me explain - These two zombies were obviously partners when they were alive, it is easy to infer that from their actions. So, if they join forces and attack together then we will be doomed. It



will be impossible to block their joint raid so the best way is to divert one of them." Ye Xiwen said and everyone nodded. His talent was not unknown to everyone; and regardless of his strength and level, he was still an elite peerless genius who just now made a valid point.

However, everyone knew that distracting a zombie of half-step legendary realm would not be an easy task for one guy. This was a suicidal plan and would lead to certain death, but nobody wanted to die. This made things more complicated and confusing. But Ye Xiwen willingly accepted to take up this risky position which was quite shocking for everyone.

"If the strength is too weak for the job, then even if one of us managed to distract a zombie, it will be pointless as that person will be killed in an instant. And then the zombie will turn back to reunite with its partner." Ye Xiwen said. "Therefore only a few people are fit for this task."

Everyone nodded, though there were a lot of people who were not willing to take up such a risk, but at this time, all had to admit that it was indeed not possible for most people to successfully perform this task, honestly because they lacked required qualifications to do so.

These people knew that even the strongest and most talented Emperor Chen was not daring to take up the task since even he would admit that he did not have such capability to single-handedly stop a zombie.

But why did Ye Xiwen came up with this idea and why was he

willing to take such a risk? Everyone was confused, especially Mu Ling and Wu Shaoqun as they were anxiously looking at Ye Xiwen and trying to understand what was going on in his mind. Why was he looking for death?

"However, I am the most appropriate one for the job." Ye Xiwen said, "A zombie's most vital advantage is not martial arts, but its body which is much more formidable than demon beasts of the same level. Right now, your martial strength is limited due to suppression, but I am not affected because my body is strong enough to constrain a zombie."

Ye Xiwen certainly hadn't made this decision in a heat of the moment. It was a well thought out plan and he needed to be careful to make it work.

They did not have the option to make a U-turn and get out of there. Ye Xiwen made this decision, keeping survival a top priority since he was willing to face the situation at hand without succumbing to escapism.

Moreover, right now, the formidable powers of these zombies were limited according to what the tomb slave said. Not to forget that they were still more powerful than experts of truth ninth stage.

It was said that when gilded tyrant form would be practiced to the perfection level, then the practitioner should be able to tear apart mythical beings like gods and devils with bare hands. Although Ye Xiwen's practice had not yet reached such a high level, however, a zombie of half-step legendary realm was also not

a mythical being.

Only Ye Xiwen with his gilded tyrant body could contend with a zombie while others simply did not stand a chance when fighting alone.

Ye Xiwen knew that this was going to be a tough battle with unpredictable outcomes and there was also a chance that he might get killed. But he had no choice because if these two zombies attacked together then everyone was bound to die, including him.

"Only I can do this."

"And remember one thing. If I don't succeed then you all will die for sure."

Ye Xiwen's expression was blunt but his words showed his boldness and confidence, to the extent that even his rivals suddenly began to feel that he was quite pleasing to the eyes.

Wu Shaoqun and Mu Ling tried again and again to persuade Ye Xiwen, but he had already made up his mind. Moreover, even these two understood that this was not only the best choice available to them but also the most reliable choice. If Ye Xiwen stayed with rest of the team and the other zombies attacked then the entire team would face the instant annihilation.

Ye Xiwen rushed forward; simultaneously his whole body was enveloped in a golden cloak. From afar, he appeared just like a

golden god of war, a powerful being with extraordinary powers. He seemed out of place in this dark environment as if a golden god woke up just now from the chaos in order to eradicate the chaos with his own hands.

He then opened his devil wings and instantly flew towards the zombies while simultaneously thrusting his palm to shoot Dragon qi towards a zombie.

"Boom!" The Dragon qi severely crashed into that zombie's body and it started roaring again and again due to intense pain caused by this attack. At this time, the other zombie suddenly jumped towards Ye Xiwen and started chasing him.

Ye Xiwen had succeeded in his plan. He simply turned around and flew all the way towards the mountain forest to lure the pursuing zombie into that forest.

After luring it far into the forest, Ye Xiwen stopped and retracted his wings.

When the zombie saw him stopping, it suddenly got excited and went towards him. Its skinny claws stretched out to grasp him.

The zombie was actually using tiger claw style to grasp Ye Xiwen to death. Ye Xiwen knew this and certainly would not let this happen.

Since his whole body was already enveloped in a golden cloak, it

was safe to say that gilded tyrant form was acting at its best. He shouted and thrust both his palms towards the incoming claws. His palms transformed into dragon claws, displaying the incomparable might of Coiling Dragon Palm.

One must know that Coiling Dragon Palm was an ancient martial technique and it was very difficult for an ordinary expert to comprehend it. Some disciples had tried in the past but had lost their mind and soul as a result. Not to mention, Ye Xiwen also had to face a similar problem and its mastery was fairly difficult for him, unless he would comprehend it to an extraordinary extent.

However, he actually managed to reach such an extent but not by learning from others. He relied on his own insight that he obtained inside the mysterious space to comprehend Coiling Dragon Palm in his own way.

He could still see the figure of an indomitable spirit of a man that was constantly practicing Coiling Dragon Palm in his mind. Ye Xiwen had spent a lot of time in the mysterious space to get insights about how to practice and implement it. But rather than copying that figure, he comprehended this technique in his own way to get better results like excluding the move sets he did not need and adding the ones he might need to improve the technique.

He applied this kind of learning, comprehending and improving method on all techniques. So, he had been always able to improve a technique and increase its power while at the same time, decrease the difficulty of using it in an actual combat.

"Boom!" The bone claws and coiling dragon claws severely

collided with each other.

It seemed as if the resulting explosion was caused by atomic collisions in general. This was a terrible collision and the shock waves caused by it instantly swept across in all directions and wiped out a major section of the forest.

Ye Xiwen had to retreat several steps as he felt his chest tightening as a result. Even though he was protected by his gilded tyrant body, he still felt as if his body would fall apart.

This zombie's body was really intrepid, unlike its skinny appearance. Other experts would have been certainly torn apart by its claws. So, the only saving grace this time was his golden tyrant body, otherwise, even an expert of truth ninth stage would not stand a chance.

Ye Xiwen was able to contend because the fighting styles of both him and the zombie relied on their respective formidable bodies.

# Chapter 261: Deathmatch With A Half-Step Legendary Zombie

---

This fight was certainly not going to be an easy one for Ye Xiwen. Even though the zombie was under suppression, it was still more powerful and had a much stronger body than him in comparison. So, in the end, Ye Xiwen did not hold a single advantage against it.

But this did not mean that Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant form was utterly useless. He could take on the zombie by relying on the tyrannical defense of his golden body, but his inferior cultivation level was not at all a help. His battle strength was comparable to truth ninth stage, but the gap between ninth stage and half-step legendary realm was too difficult to surmount.

Zombies were infamous for their terrifying bodies in all of the ten thousand worlds. And the body of a zombie of half-step legendary level was easily going to have an iron threshold. Yes, there were thresholds above the iron threshold such as copper threshold, silver threshold, golden threshold, etc. It was said that a zombie with golden threshold could actually contend with a mythical creature.

Although this zombie had not yet fully entered the iron threshold phase, its body was still formidable when taken in Ye Xiwen's perspective. Because Ye Xiwen still hadn't fully reached the true potential of gilded tyrant form due to his lack of level. He was still in truth realm and required the understanding of legendary realm to perfect it.

Fortunately, that zombie's power was suppressed, or else Ye

Xiwen wouldn't stand a chance.

Even so, Ye Xiwen would have to participate in a deadly battle for survival.

Ye Xiwen and the zombie fiercely clashed and so did their tyrannical bodies, sweeping away anything in the past in the form of a horrifying explosion in the forest.

Ye Xiwen's golden body couldn't block the entirety of attack force and traces of blood appeared from the corners of his mouth. He was dedicated to his cause and was willing to face much worse for its sake. He had no alternative and if he did not do his best, then, everyone would be slaughtered, including his friends. Moreover, if everyone died, then who would complete the task?

Therefore, he had to bite the bullet and once again move forward to engage in battle!

He seemed prepared to do his best and go all out.

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

He immediately took out Poisonous Dragon Water Control Flag



Array and summoned deepwater black snake king with the combined soul power of nineteen deepwater black snakes. The humongous beast instantly surrounded the zombie while constantly roaring; seemingly all prepared to attack it anytime.

However, the zombie immediately used its fists and kicks and gave several blows to the deepwater black snake king.

The deepwater black serpent king's overall power had reached merely the ninth layer of truth realm and was only one step away from becoming a water dragon, but it was still knocked out like a stray dog. Ye Xiwen had predicted this outcome and was only using the power of the flag array to encircle the zombie and keep it distracted.

Anyway, deepwater black snake king was just a collection of energy, so, Ye Xiwen was not afraid of its safety.

Moreover, deepwater black snake king used to be at half-step legendary realm when he was alive and would soon transform into a water dragon, becoming a valuable addition to his arsenal. Although after death, its power had greatly reduced but the zombie's true power was also under suppression. If not alone, perhaps together they could thwart this zombie.

The deepwater black snake king restructured its disintegrated body and again attacked the zombie.

Ye Xiwen took this opportunity to use Phoenix regeneration to restore his injuries. In a matter of few breaths, his condition was

restored to peak condition. Then after, without wasting any further second, he immediately rushed towards the zombie to collaborate with flag array.

He had nurtured flag array exactly for situations like this. It was like his last card to deal with opponents at much higher level. He did not need to use it against the two tyrants because he himself was enough to deal with them, plus his pride did not allow him to use flag array to beat those two.

Even after keeping in mind the large disparity between truth ninth stage and half-step legendary realm, Ye Xiwen knew that flag array could work very well for distracting an opponent, giving him enough time for strategizing and healing.

With the help of this divine tool, he was confident that he could constrain and perhaps even kill this zombie.

He was not a fool and was not just fully depending on the flag array's distraction ability. In the end, he would have to wait patiently for the right time and personally act, using his golden body's invincible strength to defeat the zombie.

One must know that this zombie's one punch could kill an expert of truth ninth layer. Therefore, Ye Xiwen had been acting cautiously so far and would continue to do so.

For him, this was a rare experience of fighting with a warrior of half-step legendary realm. Besides, he was going to obtain enormous benefits from this battle.

"Tianyuan mirror!" He shouted loudly. Tianyuan mirror suddenly appeared out of nowhere and released a deep scarlet light that enveloped his body. Some of it penetrated into his body and merged with his flesh and blood, considerably raising his strength a notch.

"Ye Xiwen, this is an excellent opportunity. Kill this zombie and take its Core Dan. It will drastically improve your cultivation level and that too in a very short time." Ye Mo was standing on Ye Xiwen's shoulder as he gave his suggestion in a very excited manner.

In reality, Ye Xiwen's inner state was still at truth seventh stage and the zombie, despite being suppressed, was at half-step legendary realm. Therefore, when its Core Dan would be consumed, it would be sufficient to help him have a breakthrough in a very short time. Then he would step into truth eighth stage and his battle strength would reach half-step legendary realm, if not directly reaching the legendary realm. But, after reaching the peak of truth ninth layer, his fighting strength would actually reach legendary realm. At that time, he would have easily surpassed Emperor Chen and the others, thereby standing at the top of the younger generation of the south-east region. Even while counting the top experts of the previous generation, he would still be considered at the top.

For others, a zombie's Core Dan, also called Zombie Dan, was a deadly poisonous drug, but that was not the case for Ye Xiwen because his Tianyuan mirror could purify drugs, even the poisonous ones and transform them into nourishing drugs.

But anyway, he must first kill this tyrannical zombie to obtain its core.

He used his hands to tear a golden arc of light and shot it at the zombie.

It seemed as if space itself had been torn to welcome the golden arc of light from another world and all must submit in front of the glory of this endless divine beam of light from an otherworldly source.

The zombie shot its palm and its fingernails turned in a frightening claw, like an iron hook which quickly approached Ye Xiwen to trap his neck.

The iron hook claw was a secret technique used by zombies and it was considered as a very frightening technique.

"Boom!" The two sides clashed almost at the same time. Ye Xiwen's golden body with god's defense, when coupled with the defense granted by Tianyuan mirror, was finally able to compensate the gap.

As soon as the two tyrannical beings collided, it seemed like the entire world would collapse.

"Bang!" The terrible force generated in the explosion sent both of them flying in opposite directions.

In the zombie's hand, a terrible crack opened up in its tough flesh and purple blood oozed out and splattered on the ground. The blood was extremely toxic and corrosive and instantly began to corrode the ground upon contact.

But Ye Xiwen was also not in a good shape. His gilded tyrant form also disappeared all of a sudden and his red blood splashed out while also containing traces of golden threads.

The ominous and vindictive color got stronger in the zombie's eyes. It roared again and again and once again ran towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen did not waste time and fully concentrated on using Phoenix regeneration to repair his wound. Soon, his inner state was restored to its peak. He glanced at the zombie that was crazily running towards him and he also immediately rushed forward to greet the incoming attack.

Both sides were tyrannical, outrageously powerful and their battle was based on the direct clash of bodies. Especially, there was an ever increasing burning rage in the zombie's green eyes as if it despised the very existence of this world and wouldn't stop before it would bring upon death to this world.

Ye Xiwen looked calm and tranquil, just a crack in his flesh could not make him blink an eye. Phoenix regeneration technique was very magical and once again restored him to a perfect state. He once again shot and released a coiling dragon almost instantly.

The coiling dragon looked upward and gave out a long and loud roar. Its roar was like a thunderclap, and at the same time, mighty dragon qi spread everywhere and restrained Yinqi and Deadqi which were overflowing in the vicinity.

It was a like a terrible explosion of light!

The epitome of positive energy!

The banisher of evil spirits!

Ye Xiwen used coiling dragon palm and suddenly, the entire world lost its color. As if only the coiling dragon existed in the world and nothing else.

The coiling dragon rushed towards the zombie and attacked it with its claws.

Ye Xiwen also claimed a shot at the same time, but in that zombie's eyes, instead of seeing a panic-stricken look, he saw a rather calm look.

Just like demon beasts, it was not easy for zombies to gain wisdom and intelligence. Their very existence was not tolerated in the world and was basically called a blasphemous existence. The world law that was exploited for making zombies was also considered one of the most blasphemous laws in the world. Zombies just followed instincts and worked on the leftover

instincts from when they were alive. But there were some extremely powerful zombies who still had an opportunity to develop wisdom.

Ye Xiwen was facing a zombie that had not yet fully reached legendary realm. It was certainly better than ordinary zombies that followed only instincts, but it was also far from obtaining a complicated thinking ability. Its wisdom was very limited and his intelligence had only slightly gotten rid of the so-called instinct driven thought process.

This was a bitter fight and both sides were trying their best to eliminate the opponent as soon as possible. Each of their clashes was world-shattering and causing destruction in the surrounding areas.

The battle had reached the phase in which blood was splashing in all directions. Sometimes, they were colliding in mid-air and causing havoc in the forest area that had now simply been reduced to a wasteland.

The zombie fiercely dashed towards Ye Xiwen like a bulldozer.

The coiling dragon soared in the sky and fiercely strangled the zombie. It seemed as if the coiling dragon had come on a punitive expedition, however, even so, even after using various methods, there were still some disparities between the powers of the zombie and Ye Xiwen.

# Chapter 262: Slaughtered Zombie

---

It was a brutal contest of resilience and toughness among the two tyrannical masters. Once again, a mighty explosion occurred and blasted both of them in opposite directions. Both of them had their skins peeled off and blood oozing out of their wounds, but none of the two wanted to stop fighting.

For a zombie, its body itself was the most powerful weapon. A zombie did not feel pain and wouldn't stop rampaging, even when its limbs were torn off or its head was severed from its body because right after transforming into a zombie, its body was occupied by evil spirits, ending up making the whole corpse just a tool.

So even if the head was severed from a zombie's body, other body parts would still continue to move because a zombie's body was not controlled by its brain but by the evil spirits.

The zombie did not stop even when it was seriously injured in the last attack and immediately rushed towards Ye Xiwen. Meanwhile, Ye Xiwen was standing like a mountain while an endless amount of imposing aura was gushing out of his body, making him appear like a mighty god of war. Phoenix regeneration was working non-stop to heal his injuries and restore his inner state to its max, and in a short time, he was back to his peak condition. He also did not care about the injuries since Phoenix regeneration was the biggest advantage he held, and by relying on it, he could always continue to maintain his present tyrannical battle efficiency.

And even if that zombie did not care about its injuries, it still



could not stop a gradual decrement in its battle efficiency as it was constantly running amuck and wasting energy. So, a long battle would actually be more favorable for Ye Xiwen because even a zombie of half-step legendary realm could be slowly exhausted to death.

Although Ye Xiwen would have to consume a lot of his life essence and vitality, he refused to give up, otherwise, only a dead end would greet him if he was unwilling to make decisive sacrifices whenever needed.

The retreat was not an option, it certainly wasn't an option!

"Roar!" The zombie lifted its face upwards, roared and released its poisonous qi in the surrounding area. Being a zombie, it was fully detached from reincarnation cycle, and just like a monster from hell, it released an ominous imposing aura, breaking the shackles of the world and then, swept across in all directions.

Ye Xiwen seemed all prepared to face the fury of this zombie!

He also roared and there exploded a dazzling divine light from within his clothes as if to conquer the entire universe and subdue the heaven.

The battle had entered its final phase and it did not seem like it was going on between a human and a zombie, but between two legendary beings, belonged to two different universes.

It had mostly been a contest between two invincible bodies, but the extent of this battle had not yet reached the most tragic state. The worst phase was about to come!

The zombie's green eyes were flashing fiercely as it waved its fists in a strange manner to display zombie-specific martial art that derived qi from its arteries.

Ye Xiwen also went all out and used coiling dragon palm to summon a huge coiling dragon. It gave out a long and loud cry and soared into the sky, wantonly dancing and it seemed like the whole belonged to it, now. As if a real legendary dragon had come out of the fables to dominate the entire world. The coiling dragon's very presence was suppressing Yinqi and Deadqi in the atmosphere.

"Bang!"

The battle had entered an extremely frigid phase and suddenly, Ye Xiwen's chest was penetrated by the zombie's sharp iron claws. And the very next instant, the zombie retracted its claws and tore off a big chunk of flesh and meat from his chest.

But things did not go well for the zombie as well. Its whole body was nipped by the coiling dragon, and as a result of that, its bones were now visible through the several wounds spread all over its body.

Ye Xiwen's golden defense had been broken by the zombie's iron claws and a fatal wound could be seen oozing blood from his chest area. But at the same time, his wound was also healing at an

incredibly fast speed, and within a few breaths' time, he was back to normal. Of course, there was no trace of any wound on his chest region, and he was once again at his peak condition.

"Boom!" Both sides severely clashed again and caused a massive explosion in the sky, resulting in a burst of dazzling golden light and splashing blood in all directions.

"Rumble!"

"Rumble!"

Ye Xiwen noticed that each time the zombie attacked with its claws, it drew the power of world laws and invoked suppression upon him as a result of the fluctuations in world laws. One must know that suppression effect of world laws was applicable only to the experts of truth realm and below. Because it was extremely difficult for them to comprehend world laws and they easily succumbed under their might, in turn facing an overwhelming suppression. This was actually the biggest difference between an expert at truth ninth peak and an expert at half-step legendary realm.

It was very difficult to comprehend world laws and that was the reason why only a small numbers of experts entered into the half-step legendary realm. Even in the younger generation, only a handful of experts, below the age of 150 years, were able to step into half-step legendary realm, but there were many experts at truth ninth stage in comparison.

Although there were several legendary level experts in Yi Yuan School but that was the result of a thousand years of accumulation. And considering the fact that there had been millions of disciples in the history of Yi Yuan School, there were only a few dozen disciples who had managed to step into the legendary realm. So, one could see that legendary experts were quite rare existences.

There were not more than 200 legendary experts in the entire Great Yue State and that too out of tens of billions of people. So, one could understand how difficult it really was to step into the legendary realm.

A legendary level expert was capable of invoking complete suppression. When considering the elites from all of the ten countries of Southeast region, there were only 20-30 people who had managed to achieve the legendary realm before reaching the age of 150. This meant that on an average, only 2-3 people per country were able to achieve such a feat. Qi Feifan was one such example as he was able to reach half-step legendary realm at a young age.

So even if there were hundreds of true disciples at truth ninth stage, some being at the peak of truth ninth stage, but even so, they were still regarded nothing in front of the four pro disciples.

This was a crucial step and if this step was taken within a short period of time, then, it would directly determine their future success.

If an ordinary expert was facing such law fluctuations which were being orchestrated by the zombie, then that expert would

have been in an utterly miserable state by now. But thankfully, Ye Xiwen had also comprehended a section of the law debris. The depth of his comprehension was not comparable to that of the zombie but was enough to offset the suppression effect that was being caused by the fluctuations in the world laws.

Heaven and earth seemed to have lost their luster in front of the tyrannical battle going on between these two monsters. Spiralling energies were spreading in all directions. Thundering explosions and shock waves had reduced this entire forest area to a wasteland.

Ye Xiwen was not at all worried, on the contrary, he was very excited to have come across such a rare opportunity to experience fighting with a higher-level tyrannical monster, a monster that possessed an invincible body just like him.

Perhaps he had a subconscious lust for violent and bloody battles and he himself was unaware about that.

The zombie was getting injured again and again while Ye Xiwen contained to remain at his peak condition thanks to Phoenix regeneration. With the help of this technique, he could repeatedly challenge opponents of much higher level than his own. Not to mention, he could also participate in deadly battles without worrying about getting seriously injured.

He dared to challenge a tyrannical opponent not just to sharpen his own skills but also to obtain the biggest advantage in the form of battle experience and also in the form of an invincible confidence level.

Most people, even the so-called peerless geniuses were afraid to do so, but he dared to take this risk thanks to Phoenix regeneration.

If anyone could see this battle, they would surely feel frightened to no limit.

The zombie had slowly started to lose its advantage over Ye Xiwen because it was getting tired and was taking a lot of damage.

Although Ye Xiwen was at his peak condition, he still could not hide his pale complexion. This was the consequence of overusing his life essence. Even his golden defense wasn't able to cover up his pale complexion.

In other words, Ye Xiwen was burning his own life energy for the sake of winning this battle. Everyone cherished their lives; after all, their lifespan was limited and no one wanted to consume their own lifespan and die early because time was very crucial to cultivate and step into next realm in order to increase the lifespan.

However, Ye Xiwen was not afraid of losing several years from his lifespan. In just a few years time, he had reached truth seventh stage all the way from Houtian third stage. It could be said that his cultivation speed was insanely fast. So unlike others, he did not need to spend a lot of years to step into the legendary realm in order to obtain a huge lifespan.

Moreover, he always thought that life was not for saving up.

People must fearlessly move forward and live the way they want.

The zombie roared and its helmet and armor suddenly shattered into pieces. When it was alive, it used to be a general and had fought for countless years, killing countless enemies in his career. So far, the battle was stuck in a tie but one thing was clear that it was not going to resign in front of Ye Xiwen.

The zombie blasted a punch and swept away an endless amount of poisonous Deadqi towards Ye Xiwen. He noticed that the golden defense had started to melt due to its corrosive effect.

"Looks like I do not need to retrograde today to cut down a legend." Ye Xiwen said in his heart and finally began to go all out without any restraint. He immediately used coiling dragon palm and an endless amount of dragon qi, combined with golden divinities, collided with the zombie's attack in midair. The resulting explosion was so vast that it camouflaged the entire sky.

Suddenly, the ground cracked open when a massive sword intention condensed in his hand. Ye Xiwen had also embedded golden divinities into this sword intention. This terrifying golden sword intention was capable of killing demons, devils, ghost, goblins and all sorts of creatures in one fell swoop.

He then stared coldly at the zombie. The coiling dragon was roaring over and over. At this time, he opened his devil wings and instantly arrived in front of that zombie.

"Boom!" The terrifying golden sword intention struck

horizontally as if to puncture the world itself and instantly crashed into its body.

The zombie used its hands to block this attack but the destructive power of golden divinities was so tyrannical that it directly routed the zombie's defense and pierce through its body, destroying all the evil spirits that were occupying its body.



## Chapter 263: Slaughters Again

---

"Boom!" After that hit, the zombie collapsed on the ground.

"Hu, hu!" Ye Xiwen was breathing heavily as he just now used his most powerful attack. He had been hiding it from the zombie all this time and then, used it right when he saw an opening. Besides, he was assuming that there was a small part of wisdom still present in that zombie's mind. The reason why he remained patient and even though he was facing tough moments during the fight, he still continued to wait till the time was right and then, finished it off in one shot.

He took a break and let Phoenix regeneration heal his injuries, though this time, the consumption of life essence was not much.

Then, he dug out the Zombie Dan from its body and immediately flew in the direction where the team of experts was still fighting with the other zombie.

Right now, Emperor Chen and the other experts were extremely exhausted. They were having a hard time dealing with a half-step legendary zombie. It was rampaging, killing people and almost no one could stop it.

Even the joint attacks of Emperor Chen and Qing Xu were not enough to stop it or inflict serious injuries. It was being difficult for these experts to attack the zombie due the fluctuations in the world laws surrounding the zombie. The disparity in strength was too huge to surmount and dozens of human experts had already

been killed by it. Only 300 individuals were still alive which basically indicated that the team of human experts had really faced heavy losses in this regard.

Emperor Chen gave out a long and loud battle cry and produced an avalanche of energy leaking out of his body. The energy condensed to form a shadow that looked very similar to him, except it had a pair of abnormally cold eyes. Although he was having a hard time dealing with this zombie, he was not at all scared of it and attacked without hesitation.

This was a terrifying attack skill where he was using his own shadow as a backup!

He could not throw in the towel, especially when Ye Xiwen was risking his own life to distract a zombie and he was doing it on his own. But here, so many people were together and still unable to deal with one zombie. This was simply a big blow to his pride and self-esteem.

Although he knew that Ye Xiwen's case was special as he happened to have a strong body, his pride still would not allow him to admit defeat. He wanted to be stronger than anyone no matter what.

Emperor Chen's attack also incurred huge fluctuations in the world laws. It was obvious that he had already started to meditate and comprehend the world laws, preparing to enter the half-step legendary realm. Therefore, law suppression was not working on him.

One could notice this trait in his violent and frightening imposing aura.

"Boom!" Emperor Chen's fist blasted on the zombie's tough body and exploded into a burst of terrifying rippling waves of light. It seemed like this fist was aiming to destroy the stars.

"Boom!" This punch was extremely terrifying but the zombie simply disregarded its own safety and retaliated by throwing its fist at him. Although the zombie's fist was basically a clenched bone claw, it still caused a massive explosion as if to blow away the universe itself and reopen the world of chaos.

"Stop!" At this time, Qing Xu shouted loudly and his spiritual voice echoed in the area. As a result of that, the zombie's movements slowed down a bit and Emperor Chen, who was sitting on his pet lion, managed to dodge quickly and somehow escaped the range of the fist attack. Even if a half of the zombie's body was severely injured by Emperor Chen's attack, it was still very terrifying to fight against and held tyrannical prowess.

Emperor Chen's eyes were filled with anger. He was, what you'd call, a slave of his pride. He was sitting straight on his pet lion like a mountain and suddenly rushed towards that zombie.

Once again he used the same attack to finish off the zombie in one fell swoop.

"Boom!"

The power, capable of shattering stars, once again broke out and spread sections of Dao everywhere.

Qing Xu was also closely following him and staying by his side. This is what one would call: immeasurable reverence!

Emperor Chen's shadow that had stayed behind him all this time suddenly resonated with the flashing Dao. It is said that you are in Dao and Dao is within you. Right now, this shadow had thoroughly merged with Dao, thereby increasing its power drastically.

"Boom!" Emperor Chen, his shadow and Qing Xu together attacked the zombie and swept away mighty shock waves in all directions.

"Bang!" But, in a blink of an eye, his shadow dissipated and both he and his pet lion were sent flying miles away from there. Consequently, he spurted out a mouthful of blood; even blood was also oozing out from several wounds on his body.

Qing Xu was also sent flying all the way until he was caught by his pet crane. This was really a horrifying collision.

Meanwhile, the zombie killed two more people when everyone resorted to all sorts of martial arts and divine tools to attack it. They basically tried to take advantage of this explosion as an opportunity to attack it.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

It was a terrible collision and the zombie certainly wasn't able to react rapidly. By the time it made its move, it had already been attacked and severely injured by the joint attack from almost 300 experts. However, this joint attack was not enough to completely eliminate it.

Its whole body was covered in its own blood and looked like a tattered sack of rotten meat. But it was still roaring and its formidable pressure was frightening people, making it difficult for them to fight it head on.

Emperor Chen's body was also covered in wounds but he still stood firmly. Actually, he had blundered by underestimating a half-step legendary zombie and by also underestimating the gap between half-step legendary realm and truth ninth peak. Not to mention, this zombie was already under the suppression that appeared once in a thousand years. So, in other words, if it was at its full potential then no one would have survived till now.

Suddenly, there came a distant howling sound, and the very next instant, a human figure arrived at a tyrannical speed and struck with a long blade, instantly chopping the zombie into two halves from head to foot.

"Is that Ye Xiwen? Yes, Ye Xiwen is back, but wait...Where is that other zombie? What happened to it?"

"Yes, don't tell me he killed that zombie!"

"That's impossible."

Everyone was extremely shocked by his unexpected arrival. Was it actually possible that Ye Xiwen actually managed to kill a half-step legendary zombie all by himself? The very thought of it was striking terror in their hearts, but they had to accept the reality that not only Ye Xiwen was standing in front of them but was also completely uninjured.

Emperor Chen was shocked the most and was staring at Ye Xiwen as if he was witnessing a miracle. Originally Ye Xiwen's plan was to distract that zombie but if he really killed it. In that case, this was really no different than a miracle in the eyes of other experts.

"If I cannot do it, we all will die!"

All of them remembered the statement he made before departing, succinct but powerful.

This kind of monstrous self-confidence was simply known to invincible beings!

Ye Xiwen's golden body released a golden beam of light that instantly crashed into that zombie's almost bisected body. Then he

shot his palm out and released a golden dragon into the sky.

"Roar!" The zombie roared with a look of terror and confusion in its eyes.

It also threw its iron claw fist at Ye Xiwen.

"Boom!"

Its tyrannical flesh was actually blown apart by Ye Xiwen's golden dragon. Afterwards, Ye Xiwen grabbed its arms and tore them off its body which made painful heart-wrenching sounds. Then he threw those arms far away from its body. Right now, he was at his peak condition and nothing could stop him.

But this zombie was weakened and injured.

He once again pounded his palm on its torso which resulted in an explosion.

Everyone was alarmed and afraid while thinking in their hearts that who was actually more terrifying? Ye Xiwen or the zombie?

The way Ye Xiwen was dismembering the zombie in front of everyone; they were astonished seeing that how he was even able to do that.

They obviously did not know that he possessed the golden body

of gods.

The zombie's roars were scary and terror-inspiring. All of a sudden, there was a great explosion caused by Ye Xiwen's palm attack and he managed to launch a major blow to its life force. In the end, he finished it off by stamping on its chest and crushing its chest region. The golden divinities crawled from his leg into its body and destroyed all the evil spirits occupying its body. Now the only thing left was taking its Core Dan.



## Chapter 264: Supreme Figure

---

Everyone was stunned and giving dumbfounded looks to Ye Xiwen. They couldn't believe their own eyes. The zombie was literally unable to fight back and so effortlessly, Ye Xiwen killed it in front of them as if it was such an easy task. Actually, he managed to complete a task that not even such a large team of experts was able to do. This was simply a miracle in their eyes!

Ye Xiwen was merely an expert of truth seventh stage while their team had several experts at the peak of truth ninth stage. But he still managed to kill a half-step legendary zombie whereas their entire team couldn't do it. So how did Ye Xiwen succeed? And what was the real extent of his power?

Emperor Chen and few other experts actually knew how he was able to kill that zombie because it was already seriously injured and had also exhausted most of its energy. In comparison, Ye Xiwen's combat effectiveness was at its peak condition, not to mention the zombie was under suppression and it was mostly relying on its formidable body to fight while once again Ye Xiwen had an advantage of having a similarly formidable and uninjured body. In short, the zombie's defeat was inevitable the moment Ye Xiwen became its opponent. However, only a few experts were able to figure out the facts behind this miracle.

Also, it would not be wrong to say that if there was someone else in place of Ye Xiwen, they wouldn't have succeeded in killing the zombie the way he did it!

Although some experts were aware of the special circumstances

under which Ye Xiwen killed the zombie, they were still very shocked by a scene where how easily a half-step legendary zombie was killed by a guy who lacked three levels in comparison. This was just insane and totally outrageous for the experts who were at higher levels.

Ye Xiwen's dominating aura, as well as self-confidence, was inducing envy and restlessness in their hearts.

However, right now, they did not have time and intention to be sighing and feeling that way because the allied armies of demon beasts and ghost soldiers were still indulged in a crazy battle with skeletons and zombies and were slowly advancing towards the peak, slaughtering and pushing back the undead along the way.

It was obvious that this battle was approaching its most tragic phase so they must finish their mission as soon as possible.

The allied forces were doing their best to contain the undead army and push them backwards. But it could also be seen that they were not going to last very long. The urgent matter at hand was to take off the seal and end this crazy battle.

"We are running out of time, so let's hurry." Ye Xiwen said. "We need to go to the summit as soon as possible to take off the seal, otherwise, we won't have a way out of this mess. The battlefield is quickly shifting towards the peak; and trust me guys, you don't want to be anywhere close to that battlefield."

Ye Xiwen was aware of the consequences they would have to face

if they did not take off the seal quickly. Besides, he also knew that they did not have a lot of time left either. The fierce undead army was truly horrifying so the team of human experts couldn't afford to waste time as they needed to take off the seal before the allied forces would completely exhaust their strength.

Irrespective of their envy and hatred towards Ye Xiwen, the experts had to agree with his words. Right now, rather than bickering and being envious, they needed to show courage and concern towards the situation and must act as fast as possible.

The team of experts once again rushed towards the summit while avoiding formidable zombies and skeletons on the way. They were also steering away from the palaces since almost every palace was inhabited by terrifying monsters of the legendary realm and above. However, they seemed to be imprisoned inside the palaces and couldn't come out.

Finally, the team took a section of road that led them straight to the summit. This section of road was too terrible; also the team bumped into a few half-step legendary zombies on the way. But the good news was, these zombies appeared but alone and on separate times and the team somehow managed to either evade or distract them whichever was deemed necessary in the situation at hand.

On the hilltop, they saw a magnificent palace spread across the entire summit. It looked like a sky palace and its size was almost equivalent to that of a small town. Ye Xiwen carefully observed the entire palace and saw a giant stele hanging in the sky, right above the palace. There were big characters engraved over this giant stele and looked very dazzling.

A terrifying aura was transmitting from that stele as if trying to suppress the entire world.

However, a terrifying aura was also surging from the palace and rising into the sky. The palace's aura was confronting the stele's aura that was pressing down from above, thereby creating equilibrium between the two tyrannical auras in the buffer region between giant stele and palace. In this buffer region, space was collapsing and restoring itself frequently in a cyclic process and one could also see cold pitch-black debris of space floating there. The experts were deeply affected by this scene which was quite terror-inspiring. Even Ye Xiwen was no exception because he sensed a rogue feeling of terror lurking in his own heart.

Seeing space collapsing and restoring right in front of their eyes, it seemed as if they were standing on the edge of the world where two worlds were colliding with each other, giving rise to such an apocalyptic scene.

However, they had no time to think about the reason behind this phenomenon rather they immediately went towards the palace.

A signboard was floating high in the air!

Heaven's Peak Palace!

It was hard to speculate the level of the civilization that left behind such a legacy thousands of years ago.

Ye Xiwen did not wait and immediately rushed forward towards the palace.

As soon as they entered the palace compound, they heard intermittent sounds of a bell ringing unceasing. Yes, it was the same bell ringing that had summoned these young geniuses to the demon island.

They rushed all the way inside the palace compound and actually saw an ancient clock bell ringing constantly.

"Ding-Dong!"

"Ding-Dong!"

"Ding-Dong!"

The bell was ringing non-stop and also releasing fluctuating sound waves but only in its vicinity due to some kind of barrier. The answer to this was a huge seal that was hovering over this ancient bell and releasing a mysterious glow. It contained a dominating power, very similar to the power contained in the world laws but much more intense. Everyone noticed that the seal's power was restricting the bell's power.

"That's the seal we are looking for!" An expert said aloud while his eyes were totally focused on the seal. The tomb slave had informed them about this seal and also told them that they must

remove the seal in order to quell the undead army.

While they were all set to finish the task, all of a sudden, the palace doors made a 'squeak' sound and opened wide. A tall figure, with a demonic aura wantonly revolving around him, came out.

His form was blurred and fuzzy and he basically looked like a human shadow with a pair of red eyes. He also possessed a terror-inspiring demonic aura.

The experts suddenly stopped when they saw this shadowy figure and instinctively took one step back. They had seen a lot of weird things on this island but this was probably the weirdest of them all.

"Ding-Dong!" The bell suddenly began to ring faster. Even though a seal was placed on it, it still managed to shoot a condensed form of sonic energy at that shadow.

The shadowy figure lifted his claws, directly grabbed that mass of sonic energy and tore it apart.

"Boom!" At this time, the fluctuating mass of energy surrounding the bell suddenly condensed and seemed to have actually opened up a portal. Then, all of a sudden, a celestial figure slowly walked out of it. He was clad in an emperor's long robe and possessed an unimaginable imposing aura. The human experts were so much affected by his presence that they felt like bowing down on their knees and worship this divine being.

And at this time, Tianyuan mirror suddenly began to shiver violently as if feeling a hint of provocation.

Yes, Ye Xiwen had never seen Tianyuan mirror acting this way no matter what kind of tyrannical expert he had faced so far.

"Ye Mo, what's happening here?" Ye Xiwen asked loudly in his mind.

But he suddenly realized that Ye Mo was fully suppressed inside Tianyuan mirror and did not dare to say anything. It seemed as if Ye Mo no longer existed inside the mirror and had completely disappeared without a trace.

Something like this happened only once when that tyrannical sword expert had suddenly appeared and used his sword intention on Bai Mojiao disciples. But even back then, Ye Mo was not this much scared. This indicated that this celestial figure was definitely an Emperor level expert.

After coming out of the portal that appeared on the bell, the celestial emperor slowly walked away from the bell but soon bumped into the seal. However, he quickly bypassed the barrier and looked coldly at that shadow.

As soon as the celestial emperor walked out of the barrier, no one in the team of human experts was able to bear the incredible pressure and kneeled down on the ground. Even Emperor Chen and the other top experts were no exceptions; in fact, even Ye Xiwen was not able to resist this pressure despite having the

support of Tianyuan mirror.

Ever since he obtained Tianyuan mirror, he was never bothered by his opponent's coercion which was more of a joke in his eyes. Tianyuan mirror was a top-tier divine tool of the Devil King himself. So only those experts, who were at a level higher than him, would be able to suppress Ye Xiwen.

Therefore, Ye Xiwen had never experienced suppression from coercion. Even a high-level legendary expert wouldn't succeed to bring Ye Xiwen to his knees by simply using their imposing aura.

However, now that he did not have the shelter of Tianyuan mirror, he immediately felt a terrifying pressure rampaging upon his body.

"Insolent fool!"The celestial emperor suddenly spoke and it seemed as if his words were promulgating the law to be enforced. As soon as he said these words, everyone felt like they did the biggest mistake of their life by coming here and so, they must apologize if they wanted to live.

But the celestial emperor did not even look at Ye Xiwen and the others as if they were like a group of ants and did not deserve his attention at all.

Those words were actually meant for that shadow. The celestial emperor looked sternly at the shadow and space around him began to fluctuate and disintegrate.



## Chapter 265: Shocking Secret

---

In the eyes of such a supreme figure, this mortal world was insignificant in a way and same could be considered about the mortals. It could be seen that he had experienced innumerable eras and must have been to several worlds. It was as if he had crossed the river of time to appear here and it was fair to say that mortals wouldn't be able to comprehend such an entity.

He possessed the kind of imposing aura only known to have been displayed by great tyrants of the universe. The kind of suppression that could make everyone submit to this domineering figure, just like the legendary gods mentioned in fables.

Even if everyone knew that this was possibly not his main body but seeing such a supreme level figure standing right in front of them still made them have a feeling of prostrating themselves sincerely and worship him.

"I would not kneel down in front of anyone, never, even when the god itself appears in front of me." Emperor Chen clenched his teeth and endured the incredible pressure. The other experts heard him growl and saw how he was unwilling to surrender to this supreme figure and not willing to kneel down. His legs were firmly fixed on the ground as if two iron pillars were nailed to the ground, unwilling to bend. His face was covered in cold sweat and his entire body was trembling fiercely. He was a very stubborn man, indeed.

Not just Emperor Chen, even Qing Xu, Ye Xiwen, Warhawk and the other top experts were also refusing to kneel down and were

still somehow standing. Their stance was simple - Humiliation was worse than dying, so they would rather die standing instead of kneeling down and live!

These were the few experts who possessed invincible will along with great ambitions and those who wanted to dominate the entire world. In that case, how could they just bend their knees and prostrate in front of anyone? Indeed, this supreme figure seemed to come from a superior race from ancient times, but what they were seeing was certainly just a shell of the original being and if they bowed down in front of it, then it would utterly destroy their indomitable hearts.

After experiencing this, one thing was guaranteed that the impression left by this domineering celestial figure would never ever leave their hearts.

At this time, all of the demon beast cubs, namely golden lion, yellow crane, dragon butterfly and golden-winged eagle, felt weak in the legs and fell down on the ground and began to cry loudly with large bundles of tears rolling down from their eyes. The golden lion cub was fortunately quite ignorant and did not understand what was going on, but the wolf cub undeniably possessed far more wisdom than the other cubs and was a lot more mature as well.

But at this time, he was the saddest one and his howling sound was indicating the intense sadness in his heart. He was crying tears of sorrow, not like an ignorant cub that cries for himself, but like an adult that was crying due to a serious reason that was causing him pain.

His sorrowful crying voice and howls and his extremely pitiful appearance explained his tragic state. Even Mu Ling was confused because he could not understand how a foul-mouthed, yet, wise wolf cub suddenly began to behave like this. Ye Xiwen was also shocked by this and did not know what to do.

The way the wolf cub was crying right now, it seemed as if he was grieving the death of his father.

The supreme figure walked forward step by step, and as soon as he began to walk, a golden lotus emerged from the ground!

All eyes were immediately focused on that magnificent golden lotus. Soon they noticed that it was not condensed out of his power, but purely manifested out of some pure world law. In other words, the world itself honored his presence by giving him a tribute in the form of this grand and pure golden lotus.

It made everyone have a chill feeling inside their hearts when they tried to analyze this by considering the extent of this supreme figure's power and the recognition he got from the world itself. It was as if they were like commoners in front of a noble existence.

Ye Xiwen was instantly reminded of a legendary character from an ancient fable and how it was impossible for others to figure out the extent of his cultivation.

Similarly, there was no way to try and speculate the cultivation level of this supreme figure but it could be said that it was far-far

beyond the legendary realm.

The supreme figure walked step by step with his sharp and all-encompassing vision observing everything around him. Whenever he took a step, the world trembled around him and trails of violent aura ravaged the space around him.

That supreme figure's eyes looked like that of an eagle, filled with confidence and pride. Not to mention he possessed an invincible majesty, to an extent that no one was daring to look him in the eye.

"How can someone be so strong?" A young expert said with a dumbfounded expression on his face. This was the first time he experienced something like this and couldn't help but express his shock.

"Demon Emperor, you used to be strong but that is a thing of the past." The shadow suddenly issued an owl-like raucous laughter. "But, no matter how magnificent you were during your lifetime, death is always the final verdict and shows you the path to a home you can return to."

"The worst decision you made was to refuse to embrace death. You rejected our offer when you could have also become a master of death, but unfortunately, an influence that once deterred the Ten Thousand Worlds has gone downhill to such a pathetic state." The shadow said in a mocking tone.

Demon Emperor? Everyone was shocked when they heard this. Even an ordinary person with basic general knowledge would

know the weight contained in these two words. The very term 'Emperor' held a major significance irrespective of which race's name was put ahead of it.

Such as Human Emperor, Demon Emperor, Devil Emperor and so on. But using these terms casually without any truth or basis was an absolute taboo. Even most tyrannical experts of the world were afraid to call themselves so because it was no different than courting death by proclaiming oneself to be one. This was not a talk about one world but all of the ten thousand worlds. Moreover, a Demon Emperor was a being who was not just a local lord, rather was the emperor of entire demon race that was spread throughout the Ten Thousand Worlds Community.

It was just that one could not claim to be an emperor and if anyone did, he was bound to face the consequences. And those who dared to call themselves emperors also had the ability to support their claim.

Even in the ancient times, no one dared to claim to be an emperor so easily.

Ye Xiwen did not know much about the history of demon race or Demon Emperor, but it was quite understandable if one would say that this supreme figure had frightened the Ten Thousand Worlds Community in the ancient times when demon race used to be at its peak.

Such a great being he was, even if he was not a human being, was worth giving respect!

At this time, Ye Xiwen remembered a myth from his previous life. The myth talked about the Jade Emperor who had ascended the throne of the heaven, but was it actually the legendary Demon Emperor who actually did it? Demon Emperor of the Heaven!

This was just a myth but Ye Xiwen could still tell the undeniable similarities. This was enough to instantly accelerate his breathing out of surprise and excitement.

Demon Emperor, Heaven's Peak Palace and a lost civilization. These all things indicated startling similarities between the myth on the Earth and the things he saw here in this world. What exactly happened in the ancient times?

There were traces of Demon Emperor's existence in several legends and myths on the Earth but most of them were unofficially recorded ones. They did not give a solid proof about the existence of Demon Emperor of the heaven. Jade Emperor was the one who dominated the heaven in the legend of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors.

Ye Xiwen could see a solid connection between the hidden history of this world and the myths on the Earth, and in both cases, Demon Emperor had been kept a secret officially. He could faintly feel that perhaps he had come across something that was surprisingly being kept a universal secret.

However, his breathing accelerated not because of these legends, but because these things could clearly be linked with the legends

on the Earth.

Could it be that the Earth was related to the heaven of this world? Ye Xiwen was most concerned about this point. Initially, when he had come to know that he crossed to this world from the Earth, he was devastated because he had read so many novels on the same plotline and had never read about anyone returning home.

However, today his palpitation suddenly accelerated when he speculated that these worlds were somehow linked. If the Earth was also in a world that was part of the Ten Thousand Worlds community then he might be able to cross the worlds. That meant he would have an opportunity to go back home!

Thinking of this, he simply was unable to restrain himself. One must know that although he had fully invested his time and heart in gaining the power to be able to protect his current family, but had always dreamed of returning to the Earth. He considered it a distraction and had always suppressed the thoughts about going back to the Earth.

If someone was to tell him now that everybody wants to cross to a different world because it's thrilling, then why did he want to return to the Earth? Then, he would certainly slap them into oblivion. Only an idiot would willingly want to pass through to a different world or perhaps people with special situations want that to happen. When considering Ye Xiwen's case, he never involved himself in romance and women and had always thought that it was a waste of time and money. He was not an orphan neither was he an outcast. He was neither struck by the lightning, nor was he hit

by a truck. He used to be the most average kind of person with most average lifestyle in his past life and never cherished the idea of going to a different world. He was separated from his family and loved ones just like that.

Family was always the most important for him; even in this world, he treasured his family more than anything especially because he lost it one time and did not want to go through the same pain again. No wonder his enemies had to face the wrath of the emperor whenever they threatened his family's security.

Now it seemed like it was possible to go back to the Earth, so how could he not be excited about it? Although this news might be useless in the current scenario because crossing worlds was an inaccessible concept for him and even after finding out that it was possible, he might not be able to find a way to do that. But even so, he was still optimistic about it.

He felt that this shadow's words very shocking, to be honest. The decline of ancient heaven on the Earth should have in the records but there were none. As if something happened at all and this led to the formation of a flawed history.

According to what the shadow said, there seemed to be some kind of relationship between the declines of the ancient heaven in two different worlds. As if it was the result of the direct decline of the ancient heaven that was unique to all worlds, including the Earth.

Ancient heaven had innumerable powerhouses and their only commander was the Demon Emperor. All of the Ten Thousand World community was scared of Demon Emperor whose eternal



glory had spread across the worlds. Such an almighty and tyrannical influence that continued to exist for millions of years, actually declined when challenged by the unknown influence to which this shadow belonged to? This deduction was extremely shocking.

Emperor Chen and the others were also in shock when they heard the ancient secret and which actually blew up their minds. Although they did not know about the famous myth on the Earth, this was still more than enough to leave them in utter shock.

# Chapter 266: Departure From The Island

---

"The worst decision you made was to refuse embracing death. You rejected our offer when you could also have become a master of death, but unfortunately, an influence that once deterred the Ten Thousand Worlds has gone downhill to such a pathetic state." The shadow said in a mocking tone.

"I never thought that you would be hiding in the dark like a rat and still haven't withered away." Demon Emperor said proudly in a gallant manner.

"Ha ha ha ha, Demon Emperor, you are ignorant and still haven't understood that if there is light in this world, there has to be darkness as well to maintain the balance. And remember that no matter how long you manage to survive; only death is eternal in the world!" The shadow laughed in a weird way as if mocking the Demon Emperor.

"There are some things that even you never understood after all this time." Demon Emperor said in a somewhat indifferent tone, "You have overreached yourself by daring to come here in your true body. I hope you are prepared to pay the price for your foolishness."

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

"Clang!"

There were several light flashes around his body with clanging sounds of ten thousand swords everywhere, along with the formation of a gigantic Swordqi and beams of light shooting everywhere in the sky. This sword intention attack was much more tyrannical than the sword intention attack Ye Xiwen learned from a sword emperor a long time ago. The Demon Emperor's sword intention was pure and extremely frightening when considering the fact that it contained the power of world laws as well.

In an instant, an endless amount of Swordqi coagulated to form a huge and thick curtain of swords in the sky.

Everyone saw this scene and could not help but swallow their saliva. They could not make a guess about Demon Emperor's cultivation level but judging from his awe-inspiring Swordqi, it was not difficult for them to speculate that he was several realms above them.

It seemed like the Demon Emperor used several world laws in conjunction for this one attack!

Everyone was panic-stricken and was scared of the aftermath of this attack. They knew that even one touch of this Swordqi could instantly kill them.

They did not dare to stay outside and rushed into the palace.

Everyone hastily entered the palace, and at this time, a loud noise

resounded everywhere. An incomparably terrifying beam of light shot up into the sky and exploded, thereby instantly annihilating the palace's roof. Two figures leaped up into the sky, one was the Demon Emperor and other was that shadow.

Demon Emperor was floating at a very high altitude, but his figure looked fuzzy and dimmer as if his whole body was enveloped in a fog. Space around him was distorted and no could see his face as a result of that.

Ye Xiwen felt as if he was looking at a Sword God, a being who was capable of cutting the sky and chopping the earth into pieces. In fact, a Sword God was said to be capable of chopping destiny as well.

Numerous Dao based world laws were twinkling around his body and driving an almost endless amount of Swordqi in the air; all prepared to kill anyone who would dare to come close to it.

The large amount of Swordqi fragmented into numerous swords and each and every one of the swords pierced through space. This caused countless holes in space and then automatically repaired on its own. This was a spectacular yet frightening scene.

At this time, the shadow's enormous and tyrannical imposing aura erupted from his body and instantly spread a barrage of Deadqi into the air. The spread out Deadqi then suddenly instantly condensed to form a spear and collided with the Demon Emperor's Swordqi in the sky.

"Ye Xiwen, now is your chance, hurry up and uncover the seal!"  
At this time, Ye Mo's voice sounded in Ye Xiwen's mind.

Ye Xiwen did not ask him why he was hiding in front of the Demon Emperor because the answer was quite obvious.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The collision between Deadqi and Swordqi produced a horrible sight where a large section of space suddenly collapsed, just like the end of the world scenario.

But right then, the Demon Emperor stretched his hand out and directly grabbed a world law out of the broken space. Afterwards, he condensed that world law into a sword and struck with it, releasing a massive Swordlight along with rippling world law, towards that shadow.

"Rumble!"

The entire space in the path of that Swordlight was cut off and a large part of it collapsed like a shattered mirror, while at the same time, the Swordlight continued to travel towards the shadow.

The shadow also congealed a spear out of Deadqi in his hands and shot a beam of black light.

"Boom!"

The impact of this terrible collision seemed to be causing the annihilation of the world as if the entire world would collapse any moment now.

At this time, Ye Xiwen felt a terrifying surge of energy waves coming towards him. He immediately used Tianyuan mirror to block those energy waves and rushed all the way inside the palace hall. He finally saw the ancient bell that was constantly ringing and releasing dreadful sound wave ripples. He also saw the seal that had completely sealed the bell's power.

"Ye Xiwen, do it now!" Ye Mo suddenly shouted.

Ye Xiwen did not hesitate to reach out and directly grabbed that seal, but he never thought that he would be able to tear off the seal so easily without putting much effort.

He snorted as he looked at the torn off seal in his hands. He never imagined seeing such a pathetic seal that was able to restrain such a powerful ancient artifact. Not to mention he managed to tear it off as if it was nothing more than a piece of paper.

"Shua!" The ancient clock bell turned into a streamer of light and flew towards the Demon Emperor. At this time, that arrogant

shadow's barely noticeable face finally revealed a horrified expression.

"Ding-Dong!" The bell's vigorous ringing sound echoed throughout the ominous mountain and the sound waves overflowed everywhere. The shadow turned into a black streamer of light to escape but the sound waves were quicker than him and instantly hit him from behind, annihilating him into dust in a flash. It seemed as if a formidable enemy like him simply did not stand a chance in front of the bell's power.

The sound waves spread throughout the ominous mountain and the entire undead army of zombies and skeletons instantly collapsed.

The power of this bell was simply unimaginable.

The seemingly endless undead army was instantly defeated and countless corpses fell down on the ground. The Demon Emperor glanced at the demon beast cubs once then heaved a sigh but did not say anything. He just flew into the sky and slowly vanished into the horizon.

The demon beast cubs were still crying as they saw the Demon Emperor disappear. Emperor Chen and the others looked at each other in dismay as they had never seen demon beasts crying like this.

The dark ominous clouds in the sky suddenly broke after the heavy downpour that miraculously wiped out Deadqi and Yinqi

from the atmosphere while the rain water, which seemed to contain some kind of miraculous power, cleaned each and every bit of evil energy from the island. All kinds of vegetation began to grow up on the island and a bleak island suddenly evolved into a fairylane in a matter of few breaths.

Everyone knew that this might be the last thing that was left behind by the Demon Emperor in this world, but they were also deeply impressed by his power and skills which were simply out of reach of the mortals.

-- Demon Island battle finally came to a close with a loss of several human geniuses and thousands of demon beast soldiers. Out of more than 1000 disciples summoned to this island, only 400 managed to survive till the end. This figure also included about 100 weak disciples who actually did not participate in the final battle.

Now, the survivors clearly understood why this island was called genius meat grinder.

Although one year's time had not yet passed, the demon island quest came to an end ahead of time. Everyone was speculating that this might be the last summoning of geniuses to this island. After this term, the demon island bell would no longer summon peerless geniuses from the ten countries of Southeast region.

After the undead rebellion was put down for good, the very next day, a crowd of human experts gathered at the coast. They were waiting for the ship that would take them from the demon island to the coast of East China Sea. Since the airspace of the demon island was isolated from rest of the world, the safest option was to



take the sea route.

Both happiness and a sense of accomplishment could be seen on everyone's faces. They were somewhat tired after having finished the demon island quest.

Of course, many experts were reluctant to leave; after all, staying on this island was very beneficial for their cultivation and experience.

"You are always welcome to be a guest of Wu royal clan." Wu Shaoqun smiled and said to Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling. He was quite sad of separating from his two good friends, but being martial artists who were dedicated to the way of martial arts, they were accustomed to such scenes.

Mu Ling nodded with a smile.

At this time, there was a sudden commotion and an ethereal voice sounded from afar and gradually approached the group of experts. Ye Xiwen saw a delicate figure with white skin, curved black eyebrows, and dazzling eyes, was approaching him at an incredibly fast speed. It was as if he was looking at a fairy maiden with a peerless angelic appearance.

He was surprised when he realized that this figure was none other than Hua Menghan.

She was clad in a snow-white robe and her whole body was

covered in a white aura, also, a pair of white wings could be seen protruding out of her back.

Not just Ye Xiwen, everyone looked surprised when they saw Hua Menghan because they had never seen her on the island in the past several months. It was as if she never set foot on the island or was possibly hiding somewhere.

Hua Menghan gently descended next to Ye Xiwen and her beautiful eyes smiled at him.

"Are you okay?" Ye Xiwen asked in a somewhat astonished tone, "Where were you all this time? I searched for you everywhere but couldn't find you."

"It's a long story." Hua Menghan said. Ye Xiwen sensed that she had obtained a peerless treasure and couldn't tell about it in front of everyone.

Everyone around was casting envious glances at her. Judging from her speed and a pair of white wings on her back, they knew that she must have obtained some sort of treasure or heritage and this out-of-the-world agility technique was an undeniable proof of that.

Ye Xiwen noticed that she initially used to be at the first stage of truth realm at the time of demon island bell summons, but now she was already at truth ninth stage. It was obvious that she obtained some kind of inconceivable heritage during last several months.

Where did Chen Ruochen go?

Ye Xiwen had some doubts in his heart but he chose not to ask right now.

At this time, he saw someone approaching at a much faster speed than Hua Menghan. It was none other than the elderly tomb slave.

He showed a faint smile to Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling, then waved his hand and two divine lights directly submerged the minds of Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling.

Ye Xiwen immediately understood that the tomb slave fulfilled the promise to him and Mu Ling, but it seemed like others did not obtain tomb slave's heritage. Perhaps, this promise was not for everyone.

After the tomb slave handed over his heritage to Ye Xiwen and Mu Ling, he did not say anything and turned around to leave. Ye Xiwen was not in a mood to find out whether other experts got this heritage or not.

And that was because a large ship was slowly approaching the island.

## Chapter 267: [Chu Jingcai](#) Promoted To Legendary Realm

---

For those who don't remember, Chu Jingcai is one of the five prodisciples of Yi Yuan School and also the eldest among them.

Yi Yuan School was not far away from the East China Sea coastline. Both Hua Menghan and Ye Xiwen displayed incredibly fast speed to reach Yi Yuan School in much less time in comparison to the time it took them to reach the demon island. This time, they hardly spent half the time to travel from the East China Sea to Yi Yuan School. Back then, Hua Menghan was on the verge of entering the second stage of truth realm and now she was at truth ninth stage, which clearly showed the extraordinary heritage she obtained on the demon island.

And Ye Xiwen was able to raise his cultivation level from truth fourth stage to truth seventh stage, though his battle efficiency was now comparable to truth ninth peak. In other words, both of them had reaped immense benefits on the demon island, so would naturally display much faster speed than before.

Hua Menghan was accompanied by a small white fox that was riding a beautiful rainbow and was occasionally producing faint roars. The wolf cub was on the side of Ye Xiwen and now seemed in a better mood than earlier. Initially, Ye Xiwen wanted to know the secret of the demon island but after witnessing the battle on that ominous mountain and unexpected appearance of the Demon Emperor, he decided to stop pursuing this secret. He did not want to get involved in some kind of terrible secret. As they say, ignorance is bliss.

Such being the case, there was no reason for him to continue to keep the wolf cub under arrest. So he told the wolf cub that he was free now and could go wherever he wanted to. However, in contrary to his expectation, the wolf cub chose to stay with him and said that he did not want to stay on the demon island, otherwise, he would be suffocated to death.

All of them were extremely fast and soon arrived at the entrance of Yi Yuan School.

They were about to enter when more than a dozen disciples suddenly arrived in front of them. These were the patrolling disciples of Yi Yuan School.

All of them were core disciples with each having cultivation of Xiantian sixth stage and above. They were riding tall cranes to fly this high in the sky.

Since the invasion of Bai Mojiao, core disciples used to always come out on patrolling duty.

"Stop!" At this time, one of the core disciples said in a loud voice and blocked the path of Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan.

"What do you want?" Ye Xiwen immediately put on a serious face and asked in a strict voice. True disciples enjoyed a special status in Yi Yuan School which was no less than the elders, let alone Ye Xiwen was the fifth pro-disciple. But then, how did these core disciples dare to stop him?

Even if these core disciples did not recognize them, they should have at least figured out that both Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan were true disciples of Yi Yuan School since they were flying in the sky and were wearing the sect's badge as well. Then why did they dare to block their path like this?

Hua Menghan did not say anything but Ye Xiwen stepped forward to deal with them.

"Ye Xiwen, are they the disciples of your Yi Yuan School? They are pathetic losers! Newborn pups on my island are better than these good for nothing weaklings." The wolf cub said and seemed prepared to attack those disciples but Ye Xiwen flicked his forehead with a finger to stop him.

"Do you know the consequences of stopping a true disciple?" Ye Xiwen asked coldly.

"So, it is Brother Ye and Sister Hua!" At this time, the leader of the core disciples recognized them but still did not get out of their way, "But I must inform you two that security rules have changed because Bai Mojiao's rebellion is getting bigger and bigger. Brother Chu has ordered a thorough inspection of anybody who comes from outside in order to guard against spies."

"So, you are basically trying to say that I might bring in spies with me, so you will perform an inspection?" Ye Xiwen's complexion turned dark and a fierce look appeared in his eyes. So basically, under this rule, even true disciples were not eligible to

pass through the entrance without having an inspection done on them. But this rule shouldn't apply on pro-disciples since Chu Jingcai himself was a pro-disciple and did not hold enough authority to put checks on the other pro-disciples. However, it was still unprecedented and totally bizarre that a bunch of core disciples dared to question two true disciples, not to mention Ye Xiwen was also a pro-disciple. Chu Jingcai indeed held great authority in the sect but this was totally unacceptable. Could it be that his plan was to offend true disciples?

"We are not trying to say that, but Brother Chu has set a rule and we must abide by that." The leading disciple said.

"Get lost!" Ye Xiwen was disinclined to speak nonsense with them. Performing inspection on him was no different than putting him in the category of a probable traitor, would it not thoroughly degrade his dignity and prestige as a pro-disciple? And that too when he was going to be inspected by a bunch of core disciples? It was not just about being suspected or inspected by juniors, it was also about submitting to Chu Jingcai's authority and Ye Xiwen wasn't the type of guy who would simply ignore that.

"Brother Ye, Sister Hua, I'm afraid, you do not know that three months ago, Brother Chu has stepped into the legendary realm and is now going to become the head of next generation, though it has not been announced yet. Gone are the days of five pro-disciples!" The disciple said in an arrogant tone.

"Brother Ye, it would be best for you to obediently get yourself inspected otherwise if Brother Chu got to know about this, things would get pretty ugly for you." The disciple openly mocked Ye

Xiwen and it seemed like he belonged to the faction of Chu Jingcai and that was why he was being so rampant in front of Ye Xiwen.

"Even if Chu Jingcai has entered the legendary realm, that doesn't mean you can disrespect me, your superior!" Ye Xiwen shouted, "Remember that your Brother Chu won't come to save you from my wrath. You have dared to disrespect your superior and according to the rules of Yi Yuan School, you shall be punished."

Ye Xiwen slapped that disciple right in the face and sent him flying far away. His figure disappeared into the horizon and it was hard to predict how far he would go, flying like this, before falling down on the ground.

Ye Xiwen was very calm at this moment and seemed to be indulged in deep thinking. Chu Jingcai stepped into the legendary realm, so did that mean the status of other pro-disciples was no longer valid in Yi Yuan School?

"Ye Xiwen, how dare you treat us this way? How do you plan to explain yourself in front of Brother Chu?" A disciple got angry and shouted loudly. Of course, he was scared and did not expect to see Ye Xiwen reacting in such a manner.

Other true disciples had already submitted to Chu Jingcai because it was now clear that he was going to become the next head of Yi Yuan School. No one wanted to be on his bad side and the other pro-disciples also lost their special status, thereby returning to their previous identity of true disciples.



"Humph, I don't need to give him an explanation and I don't give a damn about what he thinks about me." Ye Xiwen said coldly as he was not at all scared of Chu Jingcai.

"Ye Xiwen, behave yourself, do you want to be convicted as a traitor?" A familiar voice sounded from afar and Elder Jin Xuan arrived at the scene.

"So, it's you." Ye Xiwen looked coldly at Elder Jin Xuan without showing any trace of respect whatsoever.

If Chu Jingcai had placed such a rule, was it also applicable on the elders?

True disciples enjoyed lots of privileges in Yi Yuan School and held much more authority than the elders. This was the reason why Luo Yifan used to be so rampant by relying on his identity as a true disciple.

True disciples were superior to core disciples in status, strength, and influence. They also held enough authority to punish core disciples if deemed punishable.

Not to forget, Ye Xiwen was a pro-disciple and certainly wasn't going to just stand and watch his juniors continuously trying to disrespect him. But, he soon understood that it was actually Jin Xuan who was behind all this. Jin Xuan must have instigated these core disciples to provoke Ye Xiwen and chose the right time to make an appearance and blame him. Ye Xiwen noticed that Jin

Xuan's cultivation was now at truth eighth stage. Of course, Jin Xuan must have been desperate and had forcibly made a breakthrough at such an old age, otherwise, later it would be impossible to have a breakthrough. So, he got an opportunity to have a forced breakthrough and he made full use of it.

Ye Xiwen did not know how he did it, but it was certainly related to Chu Jingcai.

"Ye Xiwen, are you trying to commit treason right after coming back to the sect?" Jin Xuan looked viciously at him and a look of anger flashed through his eyes. Ye Xiwen had made him lose face in front of everyone. He had been thrown into the mine, never to come back to the sect again in this lifetime, all because of this one arrogant brat named Ye Xiwen.

He never thought that one day he would get an opportunity to return to Yi Yuan School and once again stand in front of Ye Xiwen.

"Treason, you say? These people have dared to disrespect their superiors. They are lucky that I haven't killed them already." Ye Xiwen said in a calm yet scary voice.

"Nonsense, they are acting in accordance with the orders from above. But I can see that you are acting suspiciously and you also are the biggest suspect of being a spy" Jin Xuan said and grinned.

"An ignorant elder like you wants to convict me. I think you do not wish to live anymore." Ye Xiwen said and smirked in response.

"I see, in that case, first I will capture you then deliver you to the elder parliament." Jin Xuan sneered and suddenly rushed forward. The great power of truth eighth stage instantly manifested itself within his body.

He arrived in front of Ye Xiwen like an incredibly fast storm, but since he had once been defeated before, he knew that Ye Xiwen was ridiculously strong. Hence, he would naturally not dare to underestimate him.

"Damn you bastard!" Ye Xiwen suddenly turned furious with an intense killing intention boiling within his heart. His whole body instantly released a burst of Zhen Yuan in the surroundings.

"A disciple wants to attack an elder? This is going to invoke capital punishment upon you!" Jin Xuan said in a stern voice, and all of a sudden, waves of Zhen Yuan surged out of his body and began to revolve around him.

Ye Xiwen's Zhen Yuan transformed into a coiling dragon which roared loudly and crashed into the revolving protection screen of Jin Xuan. Ye Xiwen did not even need to act personally because Jin Xuan's revolving protection screen was immediately routed by the coiling dragon.

At this time, Jin Xuan shot his most powerful attack in the form of surging Zhen Yuan. It blotted the sky and then suddenly converged towards Ye Xiwen just a like squally shower.

# Chapter 268: Fame Rises In The Southeast Region

---

Jin Xuan was confident because he was at truth eighth stage and felt superior to Ye Xiwen not just in level but strength as well. After all, Ye Xiwen used to be nothing but a disciple of truth fourth stage when he had left for the demon island quest almost half a year ago.

"It seems like I am going to have to teach you a lesson." Ye Xiwen sneered and stuck his hand out. It instantly transformed into a dragon claw and gave rise to a dragon whirlwind.

"Boom!" In a flash, Jin Xuan's attack was rendered useless by the dragon whirlwind and it further proceeded to fiercely collide with his body. Consequently, he was sent flying high into the sky like a catapulted object.

"How is this possible?!" An expression of utter disbelief appeared on Jin Xuan's face the moment his confidence was brutally shattered by Ye Xiwen. He was betting on his own enhanced strength and thought that he could deal with Ye Xiwen. Not to mention he also had the backing of Chu Jingcai, but he never expected to face such a loss of face at the hands of Ye Xiwen. He never imagined that Ye Xiwen would become so terrifyingly powerful after having spent half a year on the demon island.

He was at truth eighth stage and there was no doubt about it. But still, he wasn't able to block a single attack. In fact, on the contrary, he was sent flying like a weakling. He felt depressed because exactly same thing happened to him the last time he

fought with Ye Xiwen, more than a year ago.

However, unlike last time, this time, no one came to his rescue. Ye Xiwen instantly arrived in front of Jin him, who was injured and lying on the ground, then inserted his palm into Jin Xuan's Dantian and crushed it.

"No, please, you cannot ....." Ye Xiwen was so fast that Jin Xuan did not even get enough time to shout for help.

"Bang!" In a blink of an eye, he lost his cultivation and hence was crippled by Ye Xiwen. He spurted a mouthful of blood and lost consciousness due to intense pain and blood loss.

Ye Xiwen coldly looked at Jin Xuan and began to think - was it really Chu Jingcai's plan to bring Jin Xuan back from the mines?

In that case, Jin Xuan must have also received some kind of mighty medicine that helped him in having a breakthrough!

Ye Xiwen sneered and remembered that the misgivings between him and Chu Jingcai had started with the beginning of his enmity with Luo Yifan and Luo clan because Luo clan was a supporter of Chu Jingcai. However, later on, Ye Xiwen became the fifth pro-disciple and thus became a direct competitor of Chu Jingcai. In fact, all pro-disciples were direct competitors of each other.

Not to mention, the position of Sect Head had always been taken by pro-disciples. And, there had never been an exception to this

pattern!

However, no matter what might be the outcome of this, he had now returned and Chu Jingcai and the other pro-disciples would have to accept his domineering presence! .....

The news about their return set off an uproar throughout Yi Yuan School. This news was bound to attract everyone's attention, after all, only three disciples were summoned to the demon island this time and two of them came back safely.

Since they had come earlier than the designated time of one year, everyone wanted to know what exactly happened there.

And right after Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan came back, something unexpected happened. Hua Menghan was made the sixth pro-disciple and became a target of public attention alongside Ye Xiwen. Everyone was surprised because she became a true disciple not long before setting out for the demon island. And now, right after coming back, she was made a pro-disciple. Something like this was simply unprecedented while only excluding Ye Xiwen's case as he had also created a similar sensation when he was made the fifth pro-disciple.

However, he was famous for being an exception in everything. But the same was not true for Hua Menghan and that was why many were envious of her sudden, unexpected fame.

Immediately, the whole Yi Yuan School was discussing the clash between Ye Xiwen and Chu Jingcai. This was an important matter

because Ye Xiwen powered up in the last six month whereas Chu Jingcai became the only pro-disciple to step into the legendary realm. Also, a rumor spread out that it was actually Chu Jingcai who brought back Jin Xuan from the mines to take Ye Xiwen down, but Jin Xuan was crippled instead.

Yi Yuan School was once again impressed by Ye Xiwen's strength because he was able to defeat Jin Xuan who was at truth eighth stage.

According to witnesses, Ye Xiwen was so formidable that Jin Xuan wasn't able to stop even a single attack aimed at him.

As time passed slowly, the matter about the demon island bit by bit spread not just in Yi Yuan School or Great Yue State but throughout the Southeast region. Everyone came to know that the eighth prince was actually killed by Ye Xiwen in a battle where he was battling against two experts of truth eighth peak.

The eighth prince, who was also the commander of imperial guards, was considered the most talented genius in the younger generation of Great Yue State. But before the demon island quest started, Ye Xiwen attained the same position by default after killing him.

It could be said that Ye Xiwen was not just formidable and tough but also had extraordinary combat skills. Although Yi Yuan School lost a valuable peerless genius in the form of Chen Ruochen who was now missing, this trip to the demon island could be called successful in respect of Yi Yuan School and only by virtue of one man, Ye Xiwen. This one name 'Ye Xiwen' was enough to grant an

illustrious prestige to Yi Yuan School that had now become famous in all of the ten countries of Southeast region as Ye Xiwen's sect.

Yi Yuan School was a major sect but was only famous in Great Yue State. However, now that it was famous in the Southeast region, the credit would entirely go to Ye Xiwen. It used to be considered as a mid-level-sect by the foreign powers, even though a famous legendary expert like Qi Feifan belonged to it. However, Ye Xiwen's recent outstanding performance and extraordinary achievements were enough to shock foreigners and greatly contributed towards Yi Yuan School's newfound fame in the foreign lands.

Ye Xiwen not only defeated two experts of truth eighth peak at once, despite being two levels below them, he also slaughtered two half-step legendary zombies though under some special circumstances which might have made things easier for him, but still, it was only him who was able to achieve such feats. Hence, these achievements were enough to establish his strength and formidability in the eyes of everyone.

Suddenly, Ye Xiwen's fame spread everywhere. Now, his name was well-known in the Southeast region and was being counted among other famous geniuses such as Emperor Chen, Qing Xu, Warhawk, Ji Moon and Wang Purple. People had come up with a list of top geniuses among the ten counties of Southeast region and Ye Xiwen's name was at the top of this list.

Ye Xiwen suddenly became the pride of Yi Yuan School and now everyone was scared how Chu Jingcai was going to react. What if he tried to get rid of Ye Xiwen? After all, Ye Xiwen couldn't



possibly fight with a legendary expert.

In addition to Ye Xiwen, all sorts of vital information about Hua Menghan was slowly dug out because a lot of people didn't understand why Hua Menghan suddenly became the sixth pro-disciple. But when news about her achievement in the demon island was dug out, everyone was impressed to find out that she had actually obtained the heritage of a great person on the demon island. This was the reason how in just half a year, she was able to jump from truth second stage to truth ninth stage. One must know, obtaining a rare kind of heritage was no trivial matter because this also indicated that her future prospects were going to be limitless.

Like the eighth prince had immediately become a contender for the throne in the royal clan right after obtaining the heritage of Four Sacred Beasts Sect, not to mention he had also become the most popular candidate as well. In Zhen Wu Jie, it was always a matter of great importance whenever a disciple obtained the inheritance of ancient sects or lost civilizations. And it was entirely because it often meant that these lucky disciples would then obtain great wisdom, lost martial art techniques and also the blessings of ancient beings.

The news about Hua Menghan obtaining great benefits on the demon island slowly spread throughout the ten countries of Southeast region. The demon island, anyway, was famous as a mysterious island that was home to legendary beasts, but this time, the surviving disciples spread all sorts of newly obtained information about the island, for example, about the existence of a tyrannical ancient demon race and the Demon Emperor. And, if Hua Menghan had really obtained the heritage from a great being,

belonging to such a lost civilization, then one could easily imagine her importance.

Therefore, it was not surprising that she was made the sixth pro-disciple of Yi Yuan School, thereby adding a bit more uncertainty to the contest for head's position.

Chu Jingcai was the first pro-disciple and had maintained his power and illustrious prestige for last 100 years, so no one dared to go against him. But on several occasions, he was openly challenged by Ye Xiwen. Of course, Ye Xiwen was not a fool and it was a near impossible task to make him submit. Luo Yifan once tried to bully Ye Xiwen, and now, no one knew where his corpse was rotting. No one dared to openly mention it but a lot of people suspected that Ye Xiwen was secretly involved in the killing of Luo Yifan.

One month passed after Ye Xiwen returned to Qianyu peak, but Chu Jingcai did not pull off anything to retaliate and take revenge. In this sensitive period of time, one day Qi Feifan personally went to Qianyu peak to meet Ye Xiwen.

"Qianyu faction is honored that Brother Qi has taken out some time from his busy schedule to visit us." Ye Xiwen said with a smile and welcomed Qi Feifan. Although both of them were pro-disciples, there was no need for Ye Xiwen to call him 'Brother Qi'. But Ye Xiwen had always referred to him like that and continued to do so even after becoming a pro-disciple; after all, Qi Feifan had saved him several times.

"Brother Ye, I hope you will pardon me for being presumptuous enough to come here without informing." Qi Feifan also smiled and

said. "I would not beat around the bush and come straight to the point. Today, I have come precisely to settle things between you and Chu Jingcai."

"There's nothing going on between us." Ye Xiwen said indifferently.

"I know that his newly implemented inspection rule ended up causing trouble for you and I must say that he is not right in this regard. However, that Jin Xuan incident was not arranged by him." Qi Feifan said, "I feel the need to disclose something important that all pro-disciples must know."

## Chapter 269: True Martial University

---

"I know that his newly implemented inspection rule ended up causing trouble for you, and I must say that he is not at right in this regard. However, that Jin Xuan incident was not arranged by him." Qi Feifan said, "I feel the need to disclose something important that all pro-disciples must know."

"Oh? Please tell me, I am all ears." Ye Xiwen humbly replied. He recently became a pro-disciple and was mostly busy cultivating, hence was unable to learn a lot of things about pro-disciples.

Actually, Ye Xiwen had already planned to teach Chu Jingcai a lesson if he continued to create troubles for him. Although Chu Jingcai suddenly became the most eligible candidate among all pro-disciples for the position of Sect Head after stepping into the legendary realm, Ye Xiwen's achievements also couldn't be ignored. In a short time of half a year, he powered up to the extent that he was able to single-handedly kill two half-step, legendary zombies. His potential was not hidden from anyone.

Ye Xiwen was not at all intimidated by Chu Jingcai, instead was confident to surpass him sooner or later.

However, after listening to what Qi Feifan said, it seemed like there was some kind of misunderstanding.

"In fact, there is a competition among pro-disciples but the sense of cooperation is more than cooperation. When there was a struggle going on between you and Luo Yifan, Chu Jingcai was

aware of that but chose not to interfere, you know why?" Qi Feifan said.

"Why?" Ye Xiwen asked and recalled that this was indeed the case. Chu Jingcai never tried to interfere even when a deadly battle took place between him and Luo Yifan. Perhaps, Chu Jingcai might have lent a hand to Luo Yifan behind the scenes but never did so openly.

Even so, it was very unusual since Chu Jingcai could have easily interfered as a pro-disciple to save his vassal, Luo Yifan. He had all the valid reasons to attack Ye Xiwen but why didn't he do so?

Especially after Ye Xiwen became a pro-disciple, there was literally a cold war going on between him and Chu Jingcai, but even then, Chu Jingcai never really used extreme methods against him.

"The truth is that bystanders think that we pro-disciples are desperately and madly competing with each other for the position of Sect Head." Qi Feifan said.

"Is that a wrong perception?" Ye Xiwen asked in a somewhat strange manner, especially because he had witnessed the fierce struggle between Chu Jingcai and [Yellow Dust](#). Not just that, he had also seen a fierce battle between the disciples of two pro-factions.

Yellow Dust is the second pro-disciple. His Chinese name is Huang Luo Chen but some readers find it hard to remember his name so I will use the easier version of his name.

"In fact, there isn't a life and death type of competition among us, to be honest." Qi Feifan said, "And in reality, this kind of life and death struggle is among the elders and disciples for their respective favorite pro-disciple. We pro-disciples have never actually fought life and death battles, neither do we intend to."

"Since their interests are dependent on us, therefore they are always more anxious than us and pull things out of context to the point of exaggeration just to satisfy their own personal agendas." Qi Feifan explained.

Ye Xiwen understood what Qi Feifan was trying to say. Indeed, sometimes other people are more anxious than you and act on your behalf without permission, making things difficult for all.

"In fact, I am going to tell you the truth. I have never wanted to compete for the position of Sect Head." Qi Feifan said this and a look of disbelief appeared on Ye Xiwen's face all of a sudden. Qi Feifan noticed it, smiled and said, "For many people, obtaining the position of leader is their lifelong goal and they continue to compete throughout their life. But for me, it has never been a goal. So long as I want, I can easily obtain it."

"According to me, there are a lot of things that you can do outside the small boundary of Yi Yuan School. The world is too big and there's so much to explore." Qi Feifan said, "Brother Ye, have you heard of True Martial University?"

Ye Xiwen shook his head as he had never heard of True Martial

University.

"Well, it cannot be helped. It seems like Brother Ye has devoted most of his time to cultivation and managed to enhance his cultivation in such a short time. So, lack of general knowledge is understandable." Qi Feifan made a sharp point and Ye Xiwen immediately understood that his statement was aimed at pointing out the rapid and sharp rise in his cultivation while trying to link it to a lack of general knowledge he showed just now.

"In the Southern region of Zhen Wu Jie continent, there is a famous institution named True Martial University where everyone can go and study. A lot of extremely talented geniuses from several generations converge together to study in True Martial University, in search of brighter future prospects." Qi Feifan said.

"I never knew about such a place." Ye Xiwen really did not know, although he had read a lot of books on various topics when he used to be in Houtian realm, but as his cultivation level advanced further, he began to focus more on martial arts practice and ancient legends to get hints about furthering his practice.

He suddenly felt that he did not know a lot of things, in other words, his knowledge on current affairs was weak and he needed to visit Yi Yuan School's main library to enrich his knowledge. Otherwise, lack of general knowledge might cause major embarrassment for him.

Of course, now reading books would be easier for him as he could just use his soul search skill on books for quick sorting of information and deeper understanding.

Without the soul search skill, it would actually be an insane task to go through so many books, stored in the main library.

"Well, I really do not know when True Martial University came into existence, perhaps during the Devil war, or perhaps even earlier. Actually, no one knows when, but it has been there since time immemorial, for all curious and ambitious experts to keep their aspirations incited." Qi Feifan said, "Countless talents from southern region aspire to enter this university, and not just that, countless genius evildoers [monsters] from other foreign territories also come to join True Martial University. It is hard to tell how many great people have studied in this university, and the list is very long."

"That is my battlefield!" Qi Feifan stood up and said with a hint of yearning expression on his face, "And not just me, Chu Jingcai, Yellow Dust and the other pro-disciples also yearn to enter True Martial University. All of us want to test ourselves by measuring our potential with respect to those countless evildoers."

Qi Feifan said with confidence. Even if he was talking about countless geniuses from foreign lands, his flawless confidence didn't budge at all.

Qi Feifan was counted among the top experts in the current generation of experts from the southeast region. But, even if he managed to enter True Martial University, there was a chance that he would just be among an ordinary lot of disciples!



After all, this was the real competition among true geniuses! The competition among pro-disciples was nothing in front of it.

"You may know that we pro-disciples have stayed at half-step legendary realm for a long time, but do you know that we actually chose to do so?" Qi Feifan asked.

Ye Xiwen shook his head but this question was already present in his heart as to why even a famous expert like Qi Feifan, who should be able to easily step into the legendary realm, was stuck at half-step legendary realm. He was always puzzled by this and it seemed like there really was a valid reason behind this.

Ye Xiwen knew that these pro-disciples had been stuck at half-step legendary realm for decades; in fact, Qi Feifan reached it about 40 years ago.

Was it really possible that these so-called super talented pro-disciples were incapable of stepping into the legendary realm?

Of course, not! Ye Xiwen never believed in the explanation that it was actually very tough to go from half-step legendary to the legendary level and usually it took decades to do so. This statement might be true for ordinary experts but definitely not for pro-disciples.

"In order to let experts join True Martial University, it opens once in a hundred years."

For ordinary people, the period of hundred years was equivalent to a lifetime, but for successful martial artists, it was simply nothing. Not to mention, True Martial University gave enough time to the experts to practice and level up for next entrance test, and to be honest, the time period of 100 years was still not sufficient for most experts to prepare for the entrance test.

100 years ago, Chu Jingcai and other pro-disciples of that time had already experienced the opening of True Martial University for new applicants but they did not go. After all, not everyone was an exceptional case like Ye Xiwen who was barely 20 years old right now. In fact, they were far from being qualified, however, in accordance with the current level and potential of both Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan, they should be more than qualified to participate in True Martial University recruitment campaign in the coming 100 years.

"True Martial University has disciples divided into several ranks such as janitor disciples, common disciples, outer disciples, inner disciples, core disciples, true disciples, pro-disciples and so on."

"That is very similar to our system of rank division." Ye Xiwen said.

"Actually, it's the other way round. In reality, Yi Yuan School and the other major sects of not just Great Yue State but entire Southeast region have copied the education system and administration system of True Martial University." Qi Feifan explained.

"True Martial University is the most powerful presence in the

entire southern region. Just imagine, if a true disciple from our sect applies to enter this university, he can at most become a [janitor disciple](#). Similarly, a disciple who is at half-step legendary will become a common disciple and a legendary disciple will become an outer disciple. The threshold to become an inner disciple is even higher."

Janitor disciples are also there in Yi Yuan School. They are low ranked Houtian experts who are basically employed as cleaners by elders and senior disciples. This Common disciple is a new concept that is not used in Yi Yuan School.

Hierarchy:-

Janitor disciple < Common disciple < Outer disciple < Inner disciple < True disciple < Pro-disciple < Legendary disciple < Sage disciple

Ye Xiwen was stunned by Qi Feifan's explanation. So basically, even legendary experts were not considered worthy enough to become anything more than the outer disciples in True Martial University, also, true disciples were treated as janitor disciples over there.

The monstrous strength and influence of True Martial University could be imagined simply from the fact that its outer disciples were enough to wreak havoc in the Southeast region. It was really hard to imagine the level of core disciples, true disciples and pro-disciples of True Martial University. He was shocked to learn that Qi Feifan and the other pro-disciples were not even eligible to become outer disciples in True Martial University.

"Of course, this is not absolute because, in addition to strength and cultivation level, True Martial University pays more attention to talent and future potential." Qi Feifan said, "Their assessment is divided into truth, half legend, legend and also the sage realm. Only the most outstanding experts can earn fame there."

"If you talk about pro-disciples, our cultivation levels are still too low and if we step into the legendary realm, like Chu Jingcai, our performances will be too mediocre in comparison to our competitors. Perhaps, we may even be demoted to the rank of janitor disciples from common disciples."

# Chapter 270: Book Demon

---

"Our practice time is too short, so if we step into the legendary realm now, then we are basically going to end up being at the bottom in True Martial University." Qi Feifan said.

Ye Xiwen nodded, even having great talent was not enough to reach higher levels of the legendary realm so easily.

"Therefore, it is better to stay at half-step legendary realm and if we are able to give an outstanding performance during the entrance assessment test, perhaps they may consider giving us the status of inner disciples or even core disciples." Qi Feifan said.

Ye Xiwen now finally understood the reason why these prodisciples weren't keen on stepping into the legendary realm!

So, they had been planning for decades, just for this one opportunity.

"Brother Ye, deducing from your age and cultivation level, if you wait for 100 years and then appear in the entrance assessment test of True Martial University, in that case, none of the opponents of half-step legendary level will stand a chance against you." Qi Feifan tried to give a critical opinion because going by the cultivation speed shown by Ye Xiwen, he should be able to definitely surpass legendary realm in the coming 100 years. In fact, he should be able to easily reach higher levels of Sage realm if his cultivation continued to grow at this speed.

"That being said, now that Chu Jingcai has stepped into the legendary realm, will he give up on entering True Martial University this time?" Ye Xiwen asked but he obviously did not think that Chu Jingcai should give up, especially after waiting 100 years for this opportunity. However, postponing was also an option for him now, since a legendary expert's lifespan was 1000 years and waiting for yet another 100 years was not a big deal. And as for Chu Jingcai, his life as a legendary expert had just begun.

"Yes, I wanted to be a moderator between you two to erase all misunderstandings. There is no need for an unnecessary blood feud between you two. I am going to True Martial University along with second and third pro-disciples. So now, only you, Chu Jingcai and Hua Menghan will remain in Yi Yuan School as pro-disciples. I want all three of you to get along and protect Yi Yuan School." Qi Feifan said. "Do not misunderstand Chu Jingcai's intentions. That guy has made quite a lot of sacrifices for our sect."

"I don't hold anything against him, to be honest. But his followers always try to provoke me and I cannot just stand idle and let them do whatever they want." Ye Xiwen said.

"Well, that is understandable since no one is allowed to embarrass or insult a pro-disciple, and those who dare to break this rule deserve to be punished. You should continue to punish those who provoke you. I don't think Chu Jingcai would say anything." Qi Feifan said.

Qi Feifan was on Ye Xiwen's side because he knew that Ye Xiwen wasn't the type of guy who would indiscriminately attack people for no reason.

No one could play with the dignity of a pro-disciple, that was a strict law in Yi Yuan School, and not even the elders could break it.

"Good, my job is done here. I will not stay for long, time to say goodbye." Qi Feifan said goodbye with a smile and left.

After he left, Ye Mo appeared in front of Ye Xiwen.

"True Martial University, it seems like a place I will have to visit eventually." Ye Xiwen said.

He knew that Qi Feifan's proposal of waiting for 100 years was quite critical in a way. In fact, if he really waited for so long before appearing in True Martial University's entrance assessment, he would actually have no opponents at all. However, according to Qi Feifan, Ye Xiwen must stay at half-step legendary realm for coming 100 years.

The longer he would stay at half-step legendary realm, the greater would be the accumulation of energy and experience.

But he could not wait for so long because now he knew that there was a hope of returning to the Earth. Nothing could stop him now as he wanted to go back home as soon as possible. Of course, one hundred years was not a long period of time for him but that was not the case for the people on the Earth.

He could not wait that long because his family would be dead by

then.

So, he must quickly enhance his cultivation as soon as possible, enough to make it possible for him to go back to his parents before they die.

However, Yi Yuan School could not help him in achieving his new goal because the strongest known experts in this school were at most at legendary realm and even they couldn't perform inter-dimensional travel! In other words, he must reach higher realms, much above legendary realm, to achieve his newfound goal.

And it seemed like True Martial University was a place that might help him in this regard.

After he made up his mind, he did not say anything to anyone and directly went to the main library of Yi Yuan School to find out more about True Martial University and also to gain some basic general knowledge for the betterment of his understanding of this world. He had no time to accumulate experience and hence had to use such a method to forcefully mug up all sorts of information and dump them into his mind.

At his current status, he could naturally access forbidden parts of the library with ease. The main library was located in a different world that was somewhat small but had enough space to contain piles of millions of books, arranged in various different categories.

The guard of this small world was an old man with unfathomable cultivation. He tried to sense his cultivation level but failed to do



so. His guess was that this old man was possibly at a very profound stage of the legendary realm. An expert like him really deserved to be the guard of Yi Yuan School's main library.

After all, this one library was home to books on numerous martial techniques, secret skills etc. There were a lot of other secret stuff stored in this library and Yi Yuan School could not afford to lose them at any cost.

"Greetings to senior." Ye Xiwen cupped his hands and said in a respectful manner.

"Good, are you a new true disciple? I haven't seen you before." The old man looked at Ye Xiwen and said. He looked quite surprised as the young man standing in front of him was clearly at truth seventh stage but he had never seen him coming to the library before. This was quite strange because new true disciples would usually visit the main library, right after stepping into truth realm, to learn basics about truth realm and a variety of other information. However, it was extremely rare for an expert of truth seventh stage to visit the main library for the first time.

This was because Ye Xiwen had successive breakthroughs one after another once he stepped into the truth realm. Not to mention, he was never stuck at any point during his cultivation and never really found a need to visit the main library.

However, now he had to admit that knowledge was a necessary tool to obtain greater power.

He nodded. The old man looked somewhat strangely at him then said: "You can go inside but you may have trouble locating things inside, so I will send a book demon to show you the way."

The old man conveniently summoned a book demon. It was a glowing white spirit, about 30 centimetres tall and with a somewhat timid appearance.

"You will find all sorts of books in the stock. Go inside and take a look!" That old man indifferently said.

"Thank you senior for the help." Ye Xiwen said and entered the library with that book demon.

"Brother, what kind of books are you looking for?" The book demon said. These book demons used to daily absorb spiritual essence from the books in order to live.

Even a stone could turn into a demon, let alone books. And these books often possessed inherent advantages because they were written by great people who usually left behind a portion of their souls in the books they wrote. These souls and lingering sentiments would later emerge as book demons.

Of course, the type of book demon was dependent on the book's content.

And some formidable rebellious ones had taken refuge in Yi Yuan School, for example, the one who was showing the way to Ye

Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen said: "I'm looking for information on True Martial University."

"I see, those data books have also been read by several seniors in the past." The book demon said and led Ye Xiwen in the right direction. These book demons were not weak beings and also did not have low status in the sect. Their status was comparable to core disciples and they were also able to cultivate. Once a book demon succeeded to cultivate to a considerably higher level, it could then become a disciple of Yi Yuan School.

Ye Xiwen suspected that most probably that old guard was also a book demon. Perhaps, he used to be a book demon earlier but later began to cultivate. Eventually, he reached such a high level that he was given a very important post of guarding the main library.

However, at this time, Ye Xiwen was not much interested in getting to the bottom of this matter.

"Bang!"

Suddenly, there came a loud noise along with distant human voices. Ye Xiwen turned his head in the direction of the source of the sound and saw a team of giant book demons as if going on an expedition.

The book demon noticed the curious expression on Ye Xiwen's

face and said: "This is being caused by a book on military and war strategies. Those book demons are born out of that book."

Ye Xiwen couldn't help but feel amazed. This world was really full of wonders.

They continued to walk past several bookshelves. There were countless huge books stacked on these shelves and contained a variety of information.

It was not hard to tell that some of these books were thousands of years old.

"Hey, Ye Xiwen, I know a better way than using soul search to grasp knowledge faster and more efficiently." Ye Mo's voice suddenly resounded in Ye Xiwen's mind, and at the same time, he appeared beside him. Ye Mo was clad in a Confucian style scholar dress. The instant he appeared, the book demon got frightened and jumped back away in panic. Ye Mo glanced at that book demon's face with a rather unexcited look in his eyes.

"You just need to catch them all and swallow them up. This is the easiest way to naturally grasp knowledge!"

# Chapter 271: Overnight Epiphany

---

"You just catch them all and swallow them up. This is the easiest way to naturally grasp knowledge!" Ye Mo chuckled. He simply did not care the method, he just wanted for Ye Xiwen to get stronger as fast as possible.

Even if Ye Xiwen was to skim through so many books, it was similar to scanning documents with a scanner and storing unprocessed data in his mind. This did not mean that he understood everything he read, but if he consumed these book demons then he would immediately understand the essence of all the information because these book demons themselves were nothing but the very embodiment of books' essence.

This suggestion seemed very attractive to Ye Xiwen but the same wasn't true for the little book demon standing next to him. To the terrified book demon, these two strangers seemed like ominous people with cruel motives!

This was a world of books and these book demons were basically the embodiment of school's martial art heritage.

Ye Xiwen used soul search and instantly began to sweep through a book. Although for ordinary experts, there were going to be some disparities between merely reading a book and digesting the book's essence by digesting the book demon associated with that book, however, this wasn't an issue for Ye Xiwen. Of course, Ye Mo didn't know about Ye Xiwen's secret and that was why he made the suggestion of digesting the book demons instead of reading the books.

Ye Xiwen's soul search began to sweep through books and simultaneously began to gather a variety of information within his mind. At the same time, the mysterious space began to deconstruct the large inflow of information into bits of knowledge and transferred them to his mind for permanent storage.

Ye Xiwen discovered that he did not need to consume a book demon to obtain its book's essence. With the help of soul search and mysterious space, he could quickly stock up knowledge and that too in a considerably short amount of time.

The stock of knowledge began to increase in his mind and his cultivation level also began to increase, though very slowly. However, the influx of knowledge and information was constantly expanding his foundation.

Ye Xiwen was pleasantly surprised to find out that his inner state was consolidating bit by bit, while at the same, his understanding of this world was also improving bit by bit. This was also beginning to positively affect his cultivation as he could clearly feel faint traces of improvement.

Ye Xiwen finally understood why the ancients said - reading a book is like taking a walk on a ten thousand miles long road. He had to accept that he lacked enough experience about this world. But if by reading these books and gaining their essence he could gather up experience and knowledge, then there was nothing that could stop him. Most of these books were ages old and contained the gist of insights and knowledge gathered by ancient experts through thorough research and hard work. But right now, Ye

Xiwen was plundering their hard work so effortlessly.

He could see that the authors of these books must have also read books from the authors that came way before in time. In that way, these books were a continuation of ancient knowledge, passed down by many authors from different eras through their books.

While he was absorbing the essence of the books, he felt as if he was actually experiencing the whole thing in real life. He could sense various sentiments and emotions surging within his heart.

The more he went inside this world of books and absorbed their essence, the more he sensed a gradual change in his own temperament. He also noticed the presence of overgrown pride within himself, something he was unaware of all this time. He realized that his own breath [aura] was constantly changing and there was now a recognizable presence of an emperor-level-aura within his body. As he continued to gain knowledge, insights, and experience, he was basically gaining wisdom and this was having a major effect on not just his personality or temperament but also on his cultivation.

The little book demon was staring at him with his eyes opened wide like those of a dead fish. Being a book demon himself, he certainly understood what was going on. He could clearly see how Ye Xiwen was so effortlessly reading books using his soul search skill and absorbing those books' essence like it was no big deal, and simultaneously his cultivation was also rising gradually as a result of that.

In fact, even book demons did the exactly same thing. A book

demon also needed to comprehend and then extract the essence of a book to enhance knowledge and cultivation so it usually took a lot of time.

Ye Xiwen was now simply like a humanoid book demon, but unlike other book demons, he was able to thoroughly understand the contents of countless books and absorb their essence and that too to an extent of exaggeration when compared to other book demons and their slow comprehension speed.

The little book demon was shocked, how could someone understand the essence of a book so easily as if it was no more difficult than chopping vegetables?

Most people did not succeed even after using soul search to obtain so much knowledge so fast. The little book demon was shocked by the scene unfolding in front of his eyes.

It was basically impossible to digest such huge amounts of information so fast and there were so many books in the library that a normal expert might have to take multiple rebirths in order to learn from all the books! But what Ye Xiwen was doing right now was simply unprecedented and the result of that was right in front of the little demon's eyes as he could see Ye Xiwen's aura changing constantly.

This was bizarre and unscientific scene!

Well, the little book demon would never know that this was all because of the mysterious space that was hidden in Ye Xiwen's



mind. It was like a million times more efficient computing machine than the best supercomputer made on the Earth.

Hence, Ye Xiwen's comprehension speed was off the charts and he was basically reading an entire row of books from a large bookshelf with just one sweep of soul search.

Although he still had to go through a lot of books because there were countless bookshelves in this so-called small world of books and his progress so far was insignificant.

However, he was not in a hurry as he could feel his own cultivation level rising bit by bit. In fact, he could also feel the gaps in his previous knowledge being filled by the bits of information coming from these books. He felt like entering a profound world of knowledge where he could learn anything so long as he wanted to.

Today, Ye Xiwen discovered that if the world of knowledge was like a sea, then his own possession of knowledge was nothing more than a drop so far. There was so much to learn; this thing was making his blood boil with excitement in the anticipation of what might be the next new thing he was going to learn.

He knew that if he could comprehend all this knowledge then he would certainly be able to advance to a realm of unfathomable proportions, though he would still need to accumulate huge amounts of energy to have breakthroughs in the process of reaching the realms above. However, this much knowledge and experience should be enough for a long period of time to help in upgrading his cultivation level.

So long as he had sufficient stock of energy, he should be able to have multiple breakthroughs overnight.

In other words, he was experiencing the famous 'overnight epiphany' right now since he was obtaining century's worth of knowledge so quickly.

The little book demon was flying next to him but did not dare to disturb his comprehension process. At this time, Ye Mo was also on his side and concocting Ling Dans in order to keep Ye Xiwen's comprehension uninterrupted at all times. He was also playing the part of Ye Xiwen's bodyguard.

The rise in Ye Xiwen's cultivation was very fast but this was useless without the support of massive amount of energy. Tianyuan mirror was the only source of Ling Dans and Ye Xiwen had consumed a lot of Ling Dans on the demon island. Since the consumption pace was high so production pace must match or at least outmatch the consumption pace in order to have a sustainable comprehension process.

The situation was compelling Ye Mo to maintain a constant production of Ling Dans in order to avoid a lack of fuel for keeping the mysterious space running non-stop.

Fortunately, Ye Mo had also not been resting for the last more than half a year on the demon island. While Ye Xiwen was busy killing god's descendants and absorbing divinity from their bodies, he also used their neidans [demon cores] for his cultivation

enhancement. The flesh and blood of those demon beasts were all absorbed by Ye Mo to restore Tianyuan mirror to the peak of truth ninth stage. Yes, Tianyuan mirror was at a higher level than Ye Xiwen right now.

This was the reason why Ye Mo's speed of concocting Ling Dans had an unprecedented increase, enough to meet the consumption needs of Ye Xiwen.

"So this book is on the art of war and battle tactics. I never thought that it actually has so many hidden secrets." Ye Xiwen muttered while digesting the art of war and all sorts of tricks and tactics mentioned in the book. Now, even if he was suddenly asked to command a huge army of a million soldiers, he would not find it troublesome. This was the benefit of having a full understanding of the art of war.

Being a lone warrior who preferred being alone even during fights, this was a fairly unique concept. Ye Xiwen had to accept the fact that he had always been a brute who used sheer power over tactics to deal with his opponents. Now, he was slowly changing bit by bit as he continued to read the books on various topics.

After reading several books on military and war strategy, he comprehended the combined essence he gathered from them and suddenly felt a sublimation occurring in his temperament. He had started to understand the mindset of soldiers and generals better and better. He also gained a better understanding of how to manipulate people, both friends, and foes, to do his bidding.

His aura was changing dramatically and gaining the

characteristics of the imposing aura of a commander. If his friends would see him right now after the transformation, they would say that he no longer looked like an uninterested and unsocial teenager who mostly focused on cultivation unless provoked. Now, he looked like an experienced commander who, if needed, could easily command soldiers at his fingertips.

Of course, he was benefiting a lot by using this method but his soul search was gathering too much information while the processing time was less in comparison since he needed to properly analyze the information and separate out the valuable knowledge. However, this was taking much more time since he had to process unnecessary and redundant information as well.

It was said that truly invincible experts could achieve the so-called level of mastery where they could manipulate one world law to command one hundred world laws at once, like the Demon Emperor who had never practiced sword martial techniques but was still able to display unsurpassed sword skills.

In fact, the Demon Emperor's sword intention attack was far superior to that of the old man whom Ye Xiwen met in the ruins, located at the bottom of the East China Sea.

Ye Xiwen certainly had not reached that level of mastery yet but he was using the method of analogy to comprehend tough concepts and ideas. He was basically using practical examples to understand complex concepts.

Ye Xiwen used the same method of 'comprehension by analogy' to thoroughly comprehend the art of war. That was why he was

able to easily understand the same military concepts which were dealt in several other military books.

He was fascinated as his self-confidence was building up naturally. He continued to move forward little by little while gathering knowledge.

There were some travel notes, miscellanies, personal letters and books that were covered in thick layer of dust. Apparently, no one had opened them in a long time. He could not help but sigh with emotion as he could clearly see that the authors must have been true sages and legends to have compiled such hard-to-obtain knowledge in these long forgotten books. However, even if most of this section of knowledge was valuable but not of immediate use to him.

Of course, like others, he would also not waste valuable time and resources in obtaining this kind of knowledge but he still read them and stored unprocessed data in the mysterious space for future use -

# Chapter 272: Devil Arts Power Technique

---

Ye Xiwen's inner state was naturally not going to be same after the crazy absorption spree.

Slowly, his aura began to transform from that of a soldier to a general then to a king, emperor and moving closer to that of a sophist.

This was a natural outcome since he was absorbing the knowledge of a lot of people, for example, unrivalled profound scholars, Zen Buddhists, Taoist experts etc. All of them with distinct features and expertise in various fields and since each of them had reached the heavenly level of understanding in their respective fields of expertise, Ye Xiwen had to benefit accordingly by gaining essences of miscellaneous knowledge. He was just like a gluttonous person who was using mysterious space to devour knowledge and gaining from that.

He was slowly approaching the level of understanding of a sophist.

He was very much enjoying this whole mass study session. He was slowly walking inside while reading all the books in his path. He sometimes came across to very different perspectives on the same idea, and sometimes he sat down cross-legged on the ground to ponder about the newly obtained contradicting ideas to find out the correct one.

For example, life or death, which one is eternal? [One must plan](#)

[ahead for unforeseen problems](#) or [one should not give in to groundless fears](#), which one is correct? There were a lot of confusing and contradictory concepts in this world and he needed to choose which perspective he wanted to follow.

wèi yǔchóu móu – before it rains, bind around with silk [from Book of Songs 詩經|诗经]; to plan ahead; to prepare for a rainy day

Qǐ rén yōu tiān – man of Qǐ fears the sky falling ; groundless fears)

“Who is this insolent person that dares to peep at my kingdom?!” As soon as Ye Xiwen sent his soul search into a royal Dao book, suddenly, a huge ghostly figure emerged from it. It looked like the ghost of a majestic emperor. Ye Xiwen could see traces of uprightness and elegance, however, its cold eyes were glaring at him.

Ye Xiwen noticed from the author’s name inscribed on the book that the author used to be a great emperor of some ancient dynasty that ruled Great Yue State in the past. So, the ghostly figure apparently belonged to that emperor.

“A mere book demon like you thinks of himself as the master of this book’s world? I suggest you open your eyes and see that your book is in my hand. The source of your very existence is in my grasp. I guess that should be enough to tell who currently the boss is.” Ye Xiwen sneered and said.

After surviving the baptism of the Demon Emperor’s imposing aura, now the imposing aura of no other emperor could have any effect on Ye Xiwen.

“How dare you!” The ghostly figure shouted and flew towards Ye Xiwen. It suddenly used royal fist technique to throw consecutive punches at him, simultaneously summoning forth a tornado of enormous and powerful dragon qi.

The emperor must have been at a profound realm when he was alive. No wonder his ghost was so powerful in the form of a small book demon.

According to the history records, the Great Yue State had reached the peak of governance and dominance and had also become a well-known country among the ten countries of the south-east region when he was the emperor of this country.

His theory of governance was so popular that it was recorded based on his personal notes, as rules to be followed by the other rulers in the course of history.

After a lapse of innumerable years, Yi Yuan School collected the notes and stored it up in this library in the form of a book.

This book demon’s power was clearly above [truth ninth peak level](#), perhaps reaching Complete Truth realm.

truth ninth stage < truth ninth peak < Complete Truth < half-step legendary < legendary first stage

“Well, aren’t you an ungrateful one.” Ye Xiwen snorted as his hand transformed into a dragon claw and went forward to grasp



the tornado. He directly caught the tornado and routed it like it was nothing.

“How is this possible? Who are you are?” The book demon couldn’t believe what he just saw. His most powerful attack was easily caught and crushed by Ye Xiwen. He screamed like a scaredy cat and immediately tried to return to the book.

A book demon was in the end just a book demon, he could never transform into a true emperor he used to be.

Ye Xiwen thought of something then caught the fleeing book demon and instantly annihilated it before it could hide inside his book.

After destroying the book demon, Ye Xiwen moved towards the next book. He did not need to consume that book demon’s body as he had already absorbed the book’s essence with the help of mysterious space.

He just tossed that book demon’s leftover consciousness over to the little book demon who was showing him around. And suddenly, the little book demon’s cultivation level rose from truth first stage to truth fifth stage after assimilating the essence of knowledge from that dead emperor’s book demon. His timid appearance was abruptly replaced by the domineering appearance of an emperor as soon as he absorbed the majestic essence of the dead emperor’s notebook.

The little book demon was surprised but he immediately

recollected himself then cupped his hands and respectfully said: "Thank you, brother."

Ye Xiwen did not say anything in reply and continued to walk forward.

He seemed like just taking a walk but was simultaneously devouring entire bookshelf worth of books at a time.

Days passed one by one and in a blink of an eye, three months had passed already.

Ye Xiwen stayed in the library for a full three months and nearly read half of the books. His reading capacity had extended to outstanding proportions. Even his cultivation level had also reached a higher level than before.

On the way, Ye Xiwen also encountered several book demons that attacked him. He never took the initiative to attack any of them because his motive was just to obtain knowledge, possibly without getting involved in a meaningless slaughter.

However, not all book demons understood his motive and considered him as an intruder. They had spent hundreds of thousands of years in those books and now considered this library as their home. Many of them were naïve and did not know that there was actually another world outside this one. Thus, whenever Ye Xiwen used soul search on their books, they did not consider it polite and basically felt like being attacked. Hence, they also attacked him and were mercilessly butchered as a result of that.

Thanks to this pattern, the little book demon benefited a lot by absorbing the essence of fallen book demons and eventually reached the peak of truth ninth stage. Now, most of the times when book demons tried to attack Ye Xiwen, he willingly stepped in to deal with them so that there was no longer a need for Ye Xiwen to personally act.

Ye Xiwen noticed that this world of books was predominantly run by the law of the jungle and driven by instincts of the book demons. He also noticed the little book demon was very grateful to him for indirectly helping him in leveling up. But he would never get to know that Ye Xiwen did it on purpose. Ye Xiwen had gained exotic and ancient wisdom and knew the importance of having powerful pawns to be manipulated at will.

However, the good thing was that he was not corrupted by excessive wisdom and power as he had consumed all sorts of knowledge, including both the advantages of evil ideas and importance of peaceful concepts of kindness and compassion. Hence, in the end, he was fairly balanced on the brim of equilibrium between good and bad and could use knowledge from both sides to his advantage.

As he continued to proceed further into the depths of this small world, he discovered something that he never thought to find them in Yi Yuan School's library. Yes, he found books on devil arts, several secret devil books on devil power techniques. There was a huge section of the library that was fully dedicated to devil books and had basically turned into a territory, ruled by book devils.

“Jie Jie, a human has intruded into our territory, Jie Jie, he is really bold.”

“Listen, everyone, we are going to devour that human’s flesh and blood. He looks strong so our cultivation should have an incredible progress.”

“Kill him!”

Ye Xiwen listened to what they said and felt as if he had really walked into the territory of devils. However, they were just the book demons derived from books on devil power techniques. Of course, they did not look like other book demons as they had taken the form of real-life devils. Hence, people called them book devils.

They regarded themselves as true devils.

Fortunately or unfortunately, these book devils took birth in the devil books and had stayed in this small world throughout their lives. So, their behavior was kind of understandable considering their inherent urge for violence, supremacy, and territorial dominance.

“Brother, you have done enough for me. Now, let me deal with them and contribute a little towards returning the favor.” The little book demon said with respect. He had already started acting as a little brother to Ye Xiwen and looked up to him. Not to mention, his cultivation right now was higher than that of Ye Xiwen.

The little book demon's battle efficiency had also reached a tyrannical level by absorbing the essences of several book demons.

He dashed forward at a lightning speed and instantly barged into the formation of devil soldiers. Although there were a lot of devils in the devil army, most of them were weak and very few were formidable enough to sustain his attacks.

The book devils did not stand a chance against him as he had not just leveled up in the last three months by absorbing the essence of mighty warriors and legendary people; he himself had come to possess an extremely domineering and aggressive imposing aura. Not to mention, his fighting style was elegant and efficient, unlike those devils.

"Die devils!" The little book demon shouted and released a flood of terrifying Zhen Yuan that wiped out most devil soldiers in one fell swoop then absorbed their essences.

"Who dares to run wild in our territory? No one messes with devil race!" At this time, a book devil of truth ninth peak suddenly appeared from nowhere and rushed towards the little book demon. He had a huge troll-like figure and seemed like a real devil.

The two sides indulged in a violent battle and complementary waves swept out in all directions.

Ye Xiwen immediately safeguarded the devil books he wanted to study and saved them from the aftermath of the battle. He sat down cross-legged and began to scan devil power techniques and

analyze them in the mysterious space.

Although devil race was infamous for terrorizing all of the ten thousand worlds, the power techniques developed by them were certainly one of the best. Ye Xiwen had been using devil wings and knew that there were lots of other awesome devil power techniques he should check out.

An ordinary expert might have to consider whether to practice devil arts or not, after all, it had a very bad reputation in the world and there were chances of self-harm if not practiced properly, but Ye Xiwen did not need to face any of such issues.

He had a favorable impression of devil power technique; in fact, devil wings repeatedly saved his life several times in the past!

He believed that as long as he could make good use of a technique, the source of its origin did not matter. Not to mention, he could always get rid of the bad and retain the good elements of any technique with the help of mysterious space!

## Chapter 273: No Chapter Title

---

Fighting had entered a superheated phase, the fiendish book devil did not have a chance against the little book demon and was on a continuous retreat spree. Though the book devil was very strong but his opponent was a lot stronger. With the help of Ye Xiwen, the little book demon swallowed several formidable book demons and many of whom were superior to this fiendish book devil.

“Bang!” The book devil could not block a full-fledged attack of truth ninth peak level and was sent flying by a massive explosion. After that, he was killed and then swallowed by the little book demon. Ye Xiwen glanced at the victorious book demon and noticed an evil look floating in his eyes.

At this time, Ye Xiwen was busy scanning devil power techniques and choosing best ones to digest and absorb in his sea of knowledge. Traces of [moqi](#) could be seen emerging out of his body and proliferating into the air, but was soon annihilated as moqi could not affect his conscience.

moqi = devilqi

Ye Xiwen’s mind or conscience was like an absolute existence and couldn’t be tweaked with so easily.

He was successful in completely absorbing devil power techniques to the extent of taking a leap from quantitative change to a qualitative change. Yes, it was time for a breakthrough!

If his inner state was like a water tank then the energy contained in his body was like water, however, now this water tank was not big enough to accommodate the ever increasing energy content.

If his inner state was like a water tank then the stock of energy was almost the size of a pool. This comparison was enough to give a valid reason why there was a need for a breakthrough – to increase the size of the water tank in order to accommodate excess energy.

Ye Xiwen's inner state itself was much stronger than others on the same cultivation level, not to mention after the recent studying spree in the last few months, he managed to stretch the water tank to the size of a pool. And this was enough to accommodate all of the water [energy] he had accumulated since the last breakthrough.

His cultivation had already reached a perfect situation that was required before each breakthrough. Now he had no choice but to have a breakthrough, otherwise, continuing further wouldn't have any great effect.

Besides, his cultivation and accumulation were extremely profound to an extent that once he had a breakthrough, his battle efficiency and energy content would reach Complete Truth level. In that case, no one in the truth realm would be his opponent.

The next step was half-step legendary realm. Easy to say but only a few were able to take the so-called half-step into the legendary realm.



However, Ye Xiwen's accumulation had increased up to a terrifying level, and after the breakthrough, even an expert of half-step legendary realm wouldn't be able to kill him. Ye Xiwen would still have a chance of escape.

Although still insufficient, he wanted to step into half-step legendary realm because only after that, he might have a chance to participate in the so-called assessment. If so many people were choosing to stay at half-step legendary realm, there definitely was a reason behind this kind of strategy and he also wanted to test it out.

However, food should be eaten only a mouthful at a time and Ye Xiwen knew this fact quite well.

Now that the decision was made, he was ready to have a breakthrough in the library while Ye Mo and the little book demon were going to be his bodyguards. Though right now, these two bodyguards were somewhat tensed as this was the world of books, infested with book demons. Although not all books had given birth to book demons, there were still enough to pose a threat to him; especially the book devils. Of course, most book demons preferred to stay in their books but a breakthrough was going to cause turbulence in this world and might attract the attention of unwanted guests.

A great danger was associated with having a breakthrough here, but Ye Xiwen had already made his decision and no one could change his mind now.

Ye Mo immediately commanded Tianyuan mirror and sent it hovering over Ye Xiwen's head. It released a scarlet curtain that enveloped Ye Xiwen completely from all sides. The little book demon was not far from there and seemed all prepared to perform his bodyguard duty. He held a great sense of gratitude towards Ye Xiwen and considered him like a big brother. He witnessed Ye Xiwen's mercy and compassion firsthand and managed to leave the lowest position of truth first stage and reached quite a high position of truth ninth stage in the world of book demons. Now, he had enough qualification to send an application to Yi Yuan School and get out of this world, thereby becoming a true disciple in Yi Yuan School.

All thanks to Ye Xiwen but he did not know what he must do to return the favor. Ye Xiwen changed his destiny and he was willing to do anything for this big brotherly figure, even by putting his life on the line.

Ye Xiwen sat down cross-legged and took out two half-step legendary zombie cores. Suddenly, a majestic Deadqi spew out into the air and it seemed like the devil territory instantly evolved into the kingdom of death. Ye Xiwen was not surprised as these two cores of half-step legendary zombies were bound to be terrifying, so this kind of outcome was understandable.

Rippling Deadqi proliferated into the air but the scarlet curtain blocked its path and contained it firmly around Ye Xiwen. At the same time, swirling Zhen Yuan came out of his body and began to absorb the essence of the two cores. The raw energy first passed through Tianyuan mirror and entered phases of filtration and purification. Only after that, the purest form of energy was absorbed by Ye Xiwen. Although a major section of impure energy

was stripped out, the remaining energy was pure and more than enough for having a breakthrough.

Large fluctuation of energy around his body eventually began to attract the attention of several old book demons.

“Damn, this man is tyrannical! He completely obliterated the kingdom of book devils.”

“But he is just an expert of truth realm, how can he be so tyrannical? I cannot believe my eyes.”

“Ga Ga, I sense Deadqi! I am so happy. This is really a lucky day for [Shimo](#).” At this time, there was a sudden burst of Deadqi on top of a bookshelf.

NT: Shimo = Corpse devil. He is referring to himself as Shimo.

A set of greedy eyes looked at the two zombie cores held in the hands of Ye Xiwen who was deeply engrossed in meditating under the protection of Tianyuan mirror. One must know that the owner of these greedy eyes was none other than a book devil that had come out of a secret book on Deadqi based devil technique. However, there was no Deadqi available in the library and so there was no way for Shimo to practice this secret devil technique. But, when he saw two Deadqi-rich cores in Ye Xiwen’s hands, he could not hide a sudden burst of happiness in his heart. He was just one step away from stepping into half-step legendary realm and these cores could make his wish come true.

He was actually one of the top ranked book demons in the entire library.

“[Jie Jie](#), those dead cores is mine!” Shimo gave out a loud and sharp cry as a large hand that was purely made up of Deadqi went towards Ye Xiwen.

Jie Jie: Strange laughter, peculiar to devils.

“Stop!” At this time, the little book demon suddenly saw that Shimo was planning to attack Ye Xiwen.

He immediately used royal fist technique and released a powerful attack that was so potent that it was almost on verge of reaching the Complete Truth realm. This was a very terrifying martial art and as soon as it was invoked, the atmosphere suddenly changed and it seemed as if the entire world must obey his order.

Ye Mo was also getting slightly anxious at this moment because he himself had never witnessed a devil using Deadqi based attack.

“Humph, you alone cannot stop me, kid. I can eat you whole in on go, you understand that?!” Shimo got furious and shouted, while at the same time, he changed the direction of his own attack towards the little book demon.

Shimo was at Complete Truth realm whereas the little book demon was almost about to enter the same, but there was still enough gap between their strengths. Not to mention Shimo could

be considered one of the strongest experts on the same level.

“Boom!” The little demon’s royal fist attack was compromised and the complementary waves of aftermath crashed against Tianyuan mirror’s protection barrier. Afterward, Shimo’s Deadqi attack further went towards the little book demon to finish him off.

“Bang!” The little book demon stepped back while also trying to use his arms to block the attack but failed in doing so. Along with his blood spattering out, there appeared a huge wound on his arm, to an extent that it was almost close to being torn off his body, which was very frightening. If he had been slow even for an instant, then would have inevitably lost one of his arms today.

“Gee!” A cruel smile appeared on Shimo’s face as he licked his lips and said, “Jie Jie, you look tasty so this old man has decided to eat you but first I will swallow the dead cores and step into half-step legendary realm. Then I will do you the favor of being my food.”

“As long as I am alive, you’ll never succeed.” The little book demon said in a firm voice. He also noticed that the last attack exactly the same as the one used by his previous devil opponent, though this one was a bit more potent in comparison.

Hence he decided to use a devil technique against Shimo. So, he released moqi from his body that suddenly transformed into the shadow of a devil emperor with long horns and a sturdy build.

“Hah, you think using a childish technique such as this will have any effect on me. I will bring an end to your wishful thinking, kid. Behold the power of my eternal Deadqi arts.” Shimo laughed strangely then instantly fired a punch, releasing a stream of Deadqi into the air. The surging Deadqi was so horrifying that it seemed as if it was defying the very concept of six reincarnations and literally reversing the concept altogether.

“Boom!” The two attacks collided and Shimo’s attack expectedly had an upper hand yet again.

Shimo’s skill was much more than that of the little book demon, so this outcome was understandable.

“Jie Jie, it’s time to get my cores.” Shimo was about to attack Tianyuan mirror’s protective screen when suddenly, a spear came out of nowhere and stabbed him right in the chest, nailing him into the ground.

Shimo turned to look what happened just now and realized that the spear had been thrown by the little book demon. He immediately got furious and shouted: “If you are really so eager to die, I’ll gladly fulfill your wish. I have changed my mind about first seizing the cores because now I am going to devour you first!”

Shimo condensed a big devil claw that was made up of a mixture of Deadqi and Yinqi. And the very next instant, the devil claw went towards the little book demon at an incredibly fast speed as if to rip him apart, however, right at this time, he heard a loud shout: “Stop!”

A tyrannical aura engulfed the entire area all of a sudden.

Then a huge dragon claw appeared out of nowhere and advanced towards the devil claw.

“Boom!” The devil claw was instantly grabbed and then crushed by the dragon claw, resulting in a massive explosion.

# Chapter 274: Overturning The Heavens Seal

---

"Boom!" The devil claw was instantly annihilated by Ye Xiwen's attack.

"You are courageous, I give you that." Ye Xiwen sneered then stood up after having completely absorbed the zombie cores. He had already broken into truth eighth stage and this breakthrough was a lot easier than the previous one.

If the inner state was a water tank and energy was water, then, he had already been successful in the expansion of water tank, and in having done so, the difficulty could be imagined. But now, he had already built a good pool of energy to keep the irrigation line active.

He had enough energy to have this breakthrough, and even after that, he still had a lot of spare energy.

After stepping into truth eighth stage, his battle strength had already reached Complete Truth realm because his accumulation was way too much; in fact, reaching such a state was [impossible for anyone else](#).

Others cannot accumulate the way Ye Xiwen does because their bodies will explode with excess accumulation of energy. That is why other experts require frequent breakthroughs. Ye Xiwen has a tyrant body to sustain and contain much higher levels of energy within his body.

"What is going on here?" Shimo was confused and obviously did



not know what just happened, "Damn, how did you absorb my cores so fast? How dare you, human! Now, brace yourself because I am going to eat you to make up for my loss."

Shimo's anger level was off the charts; after all, a golden opportunity of stepping into half-step legendary realm was destroyed by Ye Xiwen and that also right in front of his eyes.

Shimo's whole body was instantly covered in Deadqi fire. It released a putrid smell in the air, and suddenly, several bone claws approached Ye Xiwen to tear him to pieces.

This Deadqi fire was very insidious and could melt shields and barriers like butter with the mere touch.

"Die, Die, Die, Die!" Shimo entered a wild rage mode and immediately attacked Ye Xiwen.

"Your inconsequential technique is not even worth witnessing." Ye Xiwen sneered and stretched out his big hands. His golden body made a sudden appearance and his golden hands went forward to grasp the incoming attack.

At this moment, he appeared just like a reincarnated overlord as he directly caught the Deadqi fire attack.

"Zizi Zizi!" The Deadqi fire was still trying its best to corrode his palms but did not succeed in doing so and suddenly got extinguished like it was nothing.

There was an incredible look of disbelief on the little book demon's face because Shimo was a well-known powerhouse in the library, though not among the top ones, but powerful enough to scare most book demons. However, that Shimo's most terrible attack wasn't able to put even a scratch on Ye Xiwen's skin. The little book demon's mind was blown by this scene because he just couldn't imagine the extent of his elder brother's strength.

"What? This is impossible." Shimo looked incredibly at Ye Xiwen, "I cannot believe my eyes. My zombie art technique should be invincible!"

"Invincible, you say? Don't even try to be so full of yourself, especially in front of me." Ye Xiwen sneered because he had already actually killed two half-step legendary zombies earlier and this Shimo was nothing like those genuine zombies. Shimo was just a book demon, belonging to a book on corpse-devil practice techniques.

"I'd like to see what kind of secret lies in your zombie arts." Ye Xiwen also had a keen interest in zombie arts. If a person dies and his soul leaves the body, then what exactly brought the corpse back to life as a zombie?

In this world, zombies were considered undead, somewhere between alive and dead.

"Rippling Mountain seal!" Ye Xiwen shouted loudly and a huge printed ribbon with a seal on it, carrying enormous power,

instantly appeared from the void and smashed down like a falling meteor.

This was a very horrible scene as if the earth had turned inside out. Not to mention, this attack was locked on Shimo and there was no place to hide.

This was the stunning heritage that Ye Xiwen obtained from the tomb slave.

The name of this inheritance was called Overturning the Heavens seal!

In his previous life, he had heard about extremely destructive magical weapons, and this was a similarly stunning attack arcane, derived directly from the source of an extinct secret sect. Ye Xiwen got this ancient arcane attack technique as a reward and its destructive power was unparalleled.

This secret arcane technique was divided into three stages, Rippling Mountain Seal, Inverting the Ocean Seal and Overturning the Heavens Seal. Ye Xiwen had already mastered all three stages, but at his current skill level, he could only use Rippling Mountain Seal. However, its destructive power was ridiculously large; enough to smash down an expert of Complete Truth realm.

Although Ye Xiwen's skill was far better than his, the power of Rippling Mountain seal was needless to say.

Shimo's thinking process was a little slow but he finally reacted. He ultimately realized that Ye Xiwen was an absolute existence and that he himself did not stand a chance against him. At least, that was the case at present. Even his most powerful attack couldn't break Ye Xiwen's defense.

"Do not kill me, please do not kill me, I can explain to you the most exquisite zombie theory, allowing you progress by leaps and bounds in Deadqi arts!" Shimo quickly shouted in a panicked state.

"I do not need it." Ye Xiwen already had mysterious space so he was not interested in this offer.

"Boom!" There sounded a terrifying fulmination noise and Shimo was smashed into a group of the essence, grasped in Ye Xiwen's big hand. Ye Xiwen glanced at the little book demon and threw the group of the essence towards him.

The little book demon's body immediately absorbed the group of the essence and began to digest it rapidly.

After a long time, the imposing aura of the little book demon suddenly stagnated for a moment, followed by his aura exploding the very next instant, sending him directly into the Complete Truth realm.

He was at the peak of truth ninth stage, narrowly failing to step into the Complete Truth realm. But again Ye Xiwen helped him in this vital breakthrough. Swallowing other book demons or book devils was the most efficient method for book demons to enhance

cultivation.

"I don't know how to show my gratitude to you brother for showing such graciousness towards me." The little book demon cupped his hands across the chest and sincerely said. If Ye Xiwen was not there to help him, he would have continued to stay at the bottom in the hierarchy of book demons.

"Would you like me to take you out of this place?" Ye Xiwen stared intently at the little book demon and asked.

"Of course, I would absolutely love that, I have been willing to get out of here for such a long time!" The little book demon quickly answered as he was aware of living in this small library world all this time and he was also aware of the existence of a large world outside this small space. He wanted to see the world where Yi Yuan School existed and the tyrannical guard wouldn't allow any of the book demons to go outside. Yi Yuan School was afraid of evil book demon causing havoc in their world, so these book demons weren't allowed to come out of the library world.

In order to go out, they must take refuge in Yi Yuan School and contribute significantly by giving their distinguished service. The book demons were expected to get real strong in order to get an opportunity of going out to perform tasks for Yi Yuan School as deacons. Only then, they would have a strong chance of becoming a full-fledged Yi Yuan School's disciple, which was again a rare opportunity.

However, such a rare case was in minority and sometimes wouldn't happen for hundreds of years. For him, this was a luxury

that even after having taken birth a few decades back, with Ye Xiwen's help, he could enjoy becoming one of such rare cases and might have a chance to go out of this world. Reaching Complete Truth realm was literally a dream come true for him and all thanks to Ye Xiwen.

The gratitude he felt towards Ye Xiwen was naturally difficult to put into words.

"Good, I have established a faction in the outer world, it's called Qianyu faction. But I must leave Yi Yuan School to join True Martial University so I am going to find a way to make you a true disciple. You will assume the position of the leader of Qianyu faction in my absence, what do you say?" This was his plan all along. In his absence, Qianyu faction, being a truth level faction, was going to need a strong leader as there already were several true disciples in this faction and none of them was strong enough to be the leader. One true disciple was enough in an ordinary faction but Qianyu faction was the faction of a pro-disciple and must be led by a competent leader.

Ye Xiwen's plan was to cultivate this little book demon and make him competent enough to assume the role of Qianyu faction's leader, then he would feel relieved while going to True Martial University. Now an expert of Complete Truth realm was going to safeguard Qianyu faction, plus Ye Xiwen had already reconciled with Chu Jingcai, the strongest disciple in the entire sect. With all these preparations, he was reassured that Qianyu faction, his family, and friends would stay safe in his absence.

Of course, he didn't miss to witness the little book demon's

loyalty towards him when he was willing to risk his own to protect him.

Ye Xiwen had already seen through the little book demon's honest attitude, otherwise, he wouldn't have put so much effort in nurturing him.

"I am very much willing, I surely would!" The little book demon nodded and couldn't hide his excitement. He was not just going to become a true disciple, he would also become the leader of a faction, this was really a dream come true.

"Do you have a name?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"No." The little book demon said in a somewhat embarrassed way.

"Such being the case, I'll give you a name. From now on, your name shall be Ye Shu [Ye Book], also from now on, you are a member of Ye clan."

# Chapter 275: Freeloader Wolf Cub

---

After killing Shimo, Ye Xiwen did not continue to go into the depths of the library. Although he wanted to read all of the books, there were a lot of powerful book demons ahead and many of them were at half-step legendary level and above. At present, he was not an opponent of these tyrannical book demons, but he was happy to have benefited a lot in this library.

He stopped accumulating knowledge and went to the library section where books and records on True Martial University were kept.

TMU was set up a long time ago. After human ancestors came to Zhen Wu Jie, in order to resist the attacks from demon beasts, they established a sacred place, dedicated to preserving and enhancing martial arts heritage from ancient times.

The history of humankind was extremely long and finding out the concrete specifics related to its beginning was now impossible to some extent. Because of various wars and other reasons, the history of mankind had a lot of loopholes and dark eras. A lot of things were buried in the dust of history, perhaps deliberately or circumstantially.

One could almost say that the southern region and even the entire Zhen Wu Jie, every large or small influence in the vicinity, more or less had their origins in TMU. In fact, most sects and factions were once started by the disciples of TMU in the past.



Generally speaking, all these books gave only introductory information regarding TMU, which made him somewhat disappointed. But in the end, anyway, knowing something was better than not knowing anything.

Ye Xiwen made up his mind and decided that it was time to go back. He took Ye Shu along and went out of the library.

It was not easy for book demons to leave the library unless they had sufficient merit points or there was someone with authority willing to take responsibility. Ye Xiwen fulfilled this criterion quite well, being a pro-disciple who was destined to become a great man in the future.

Taking away Ye Shu was simply not a problem; he would just need to lend some merit points to Ye Shu for the time being until the payback. Since he had accumulated a lot of merit points during Qianji Island incident and never had time to use them, so now, he could easily lend them to Ye Shu for the sake of his freedom.

"You really want to take him away?" The old guard looked at Ye Xiwen with a somewhat unexpected look flashing in his eyes. The most surprising thing was a drastic upgrade in Ye Shu's level in the last few months. Ye Shu was one of the few book demons who performed chores for this old guard, so he certainly knew the extent of Ye Shu's strength before he left off with Ye Xiwen.

"Yes." Ye Xiwen said.

"Well, looking at his current cultivation, he can truly apply for a

transfer." The old guard smiled and looked somewhat happily at Ye Shu then said, "It seems you have obtained a large fortune this time, haven't you? Your future prospects shall be limitless!"

"Thanks a lot, senior!" Ye Shu's eyes were full of tears. If not for this old man, a weak book demon like himself would have perished long ago. He would either have been caught as a slave for some powerful book demon or would have been devoured.

The law of the jungle was prevalent in this library and he was able to survive this long only because of this old man.

"Ye Xiwen, this old guy is a book demon, gee, such a formidable monster he is." At this time, Ye Mo's voice sounded in Ye Xiwen's mind and finally confirmed the old man's true identity. Being a book demon with extremely profound cultivation, he was tasked with guarding this library. And he alone was enough to act as a deterrent against countless book demons.

After saying farewell to the old guard, both of them went out of the library. This was the first time Ye Shu was stepping in this world and one could see excitement spread all over his face.

After spending a few months in the world of books, Ye Xiwen's cultivation had undergone an enormous sublimation.

He returned to Qianyu peak and found out that the entire place had been ruined by the wolf cub in his absence. All those cranes and demon beast pets accumulated by Qianyu faction and its members in more than a year's worth of time had been devoured

by the wolf cub, not to mention even immortality pills and Dans faced a similar fate. In a short period of three months, all these important faction resources had been scourged by this son of a bi\*\*h.

After coming back, the first scene that greeted Ye Xiwen's eyes was - the wolf cub roasting a rabbit beast just the way Ye Xiwen used to do on the demon island. Ye Xiwen got furious when he saw this and gave a solid slap on his face and sent him flying high into the sky.

Did he roast and ate all those valuable birds and beasts like this?

Ye Xiwen could not believe that the wolf cub would do such a thing in his absence.

Since the day Ye Xiwen left Qianyu peak, the wolf cub had constantly been eating precious demon birds and beasts which were owned by Qianyu faction. No one would dare to stop this bastard; in fact, there was no one on entire Qianyu peak that could stop him.

He used to be at truth eighth stage when arrived here. But in the last few months, his strength level directly leapt up to Complete Truth realm, making him only a bit weaker than Ye Xiwen.

According to Ye Mo's guess, although the wolf cub did not remember too much about his own origin, it seemed like he belonged to the bloodline of noble wolf clan that might have disappeared along with ancient heaven. He stayed in his egg for

ages, buried under the ground, and lost most of his power. But still, it did not change the fact that he was a noble wolf and held limitless future prospects.

Especially this wolf cub had a sort of amnesia and most of his memories were in a suppressed state right now, otherwise, it would be hard to predict the extent of his power-rise once he would regain his lost memories.

What did this mean? This meant that this son of a bi\*\*h was likely to grow at an unimaginable speed, without facing any bottlenecks in the path, accumulating and regaining the strength back that had worn down with the passage of time.

Not to forget, he was of noble descent and was bound to possess inherent talent so his future progress was going to be very fast.

In fact, according to Ye Mo's speculation, the progress speed of both Ye Xiwen and the wolf cub were almost the same. During the last three months, Ye Xiwen learned so many things and experienced a number of battles to finally achieve the battle efficiency of Complete Truth realm, while this bastard just wasted time on eating and drinking and reached Complete Truth realm.

However, there were a lot of evildoers [monsters] like Ye Xiwen in this world. Some were born in truth realm while some in the legendary realm. In the end, talent and bloodline were not the only factors that determined success. Ye Xiwen had already defeated many and would continue to do so. Nothing was going to shake his heart that was filled with motivation and ambition.

"How did a freeloader like you even dare to think about damaging your host's private property? Aren't you ashamed of yourself?" Ye Xiwen said in a somewhat silent yet scary voice.

"Wait, stop, you don't need to be so angry. I did not eat too much and made sure that I don't waste food!" The wolf cub leisurely flew back to where Ye Xiwen was and said, "I was controlling my appetite you know, do not be so stingy!"

"You! You have eaten almost all the birds and beasts belonging to faction and now you have the guts to talk back? You have done an irreversible damage and forgiveness isn't something I give that easily!" Ye Xiwen was angry because he never expected to see so much chaos on Qianyu peak, all because of this bastard's selfish and immature attitude. Now, it had become absolutely necessary to teach this spoiled wolf prince a lesson.

.....

Ye Xiwen went back to his palace and invited over Ye Feng and Ye Ruxue.

"Little brother, you have not only made our parents proud, you have also earned a big long face for Yi Yuan School." Ye Ruxue patted Ye Xiwen's shoulder and said with a smile.

Ye Xiwen smiled back and thought that she was still the same, hadn't changed one bit. Not to mention, he still cherished his family just the way he did earlier, getting stronger did not change

him either, and neither did it change his identity or the love towards his family and friends.

"I heard that foolish eighth prince tried his best to kill you?" Ye Ruxue asked, despite knowing that the eighth prince was already dead, but she could not help but furiously clench her teeth. She remembered how that eighth prince had tried to use her younger brother as a stepping stone and had also used extreme methods against him. She was actually very happy that Ye Xiwen got rid of that madman.

Although Ye Xiwen's present strength was far beyond hers, in her eyes, he was still her little brother whom she used to protect all the time.

As long as she was around, no one dared to bully her little brother and she still adored him the same way.

"Yes." Ye Xiwen began to describe the events in detail and his two siblings were secretly speechless with admiration. Although he was not at all trying to boast or something and explaining the whole incident superficially, but both Ye Feng and Ye Ruxue just couldn't stop themselves from getting flabbergasted. After all, even after being at truth sixth stage, Ye Xiwen had single-handedly defeated two experts who were at truth eighth peak at that time. They could clearly feel the intensity of the situation and realized how close to death Ye Xiwen had been in a short span of six months and that too not once or twice, but a lot many times.

Ye Xiwen appeared very majestic on the outside. Not to mention, he also held the historical and unprecedented record of becoming a

pro-disciple in the shortest span of time. No one could imagine that he had experienced many life and death situations and had risked his life several times in deadly battles.

"Brother, sister, I have decided to go to True Martial University." Ye Xiwen told them the real purpose behind inviting them here.

"What, are you really going to True Martial University?" Ye Feng said.

"You know about it?" Ye Xiwen asked in a somewhat perplexed manner. Although TMU's presence was well-known in Zhen Wu Jie, only powerhouses above a certain level were concerned about its reality. For ordinary disciples, core disciples, or even most of the true disciples, its existence was nothing more than a bloated fable. They were absolutely not exposed to the happenings and news about TMU. Besides, it was so much above their own existences that they did not even bother to find out, in fact, even Ye Xiwen got to know about it not long ago. It was obvious that the news and rumors about TMU only existed in the community of some powerhouses.

## Chapter 276: Pro-Disciples Get Together

---

"Well, recently there has been a huge uproar about TMU in the sect." Ye Feng said, "A lot of people are discussing this matter because I heard that some people from TMU are visiting our sect. They plan to take some pro-disciples and also some true disciples from Yi Yuan School for evaluation."

"So TMU has personally sent over people for procuring disciples?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Yes, in fact, there has always been a solid connection between TMU and Yi Yuan School, after all, our predecessors used to be the students of TMU, so they are especially sending people to take Brother Qi and other worthy candidates back to TMU." Ye Feng replied.

This was clearly a kind of preferential treatment; in fact, TMU must have sent people to recruit from a series of major forces, not just Yi Yuan School. However, there were many small forces and they naturally wouldn't get a chance to enjoy such privilege. If they wanted their disciples to join TMU, they must go through a rigorous selection procedure.

"Everyone's saying that even the head has been dispatched to entertain the guests from TMU." Ye Feng said, "But I have heard that TMU's requirements and standards are off the charts. Maybe, it's too early for you to be thinking about going to TMU. I suggest you wait for the next time, take your time and train to surpass those requirements."



"I have a reason to go, and it has to be this time. I cannot wait for the next time." Ye Xiwen said.

"Little brother, you really want to go! Is that your final decision?" Ye Ruxue said with some dismay. If Ye Xiwen really went to TMU, she wouldn't be able to see him for a long time.

"Yes!" Ye Xiwen very firmly said.

"Wait, I forgot to tell you one thing. There is a meeting of pro-disciples and true disciples two days from now. Brother Chu has sent invitation card. If you go to this meeting, perhaps you will get a chance to participate in the recruitment process." Ye Feng looked at Ye Xiwen and said. The realm of truth was unattainable for him right now, so he couldn't accompany his younger brother.

Ye Feng clenched his fists and secretly wished for the success of his younger brother. He wasn't too far from entering into the truth realm, but he was still too far from his younger's level. Currently, he was at Xiantian eighth stage and reaching truth realm was only a matter of time. He would most likely step into truth realm before the age of 30 and his progress speed was certainly not slow. Besides him, even Ye Ruxue, Zhangsun Yuyin and the others from the same batch did not show slow progress speed. All of them were bound to become strong experts in coming few decades.

In a flash, two years had passed and new entrants had flocked to join Yi Yuan School. Ye Feng used to be a new disciple back then, but now, he was a full-fledged senior. However, his younger brother was going to leave the sect.

"Alright, I will go, but if I do get selected for TMU, then you will attain responsibility of looking after Qianyu faction." Ye Xiwen said. "I have already reconciled with Chu Jingcai, so he and his faction will not try to suppress our faction. If anything big happens, you can also ask him for help."

If Ye Feng knew about TMU, he should also know about Chu Jingcai stepping into the legendary realm and its implications in power balance and interior politics.

"In addition, I have found a strong helper for you. He is a book demon and has already achieved Complete Truth realm. He is going to become a true disciple of Yi Yuan School and his addition to Qianyu faction will increase the strength of our faction considerably." Ye Xiwen said.

"Brother, thank you so much for doing all this for us!" Ye Feng said. He also knew that addition of an expert of Complete Truth realm was going to give a whole new height to Qianyu faction's status in Yi Yuan School. Unless a pro-disciple like Chu Jingcai personally attacked them, no one else could cause trouble for Qianyu faction in absence of Ye Xiwen.

"It's nothing, brother." Ye Xiwen replied with a smile.

After spending some time leisurely chatting with his siblings, Ye Xiwen announced that he was going to indulge himself in closed-door training and no one must disturb him. Ye Feng was now officially going to handle Qianyu faction and Ye Xiwen did not plan

to meddle either.

Although Ye Xiwen announced about closed-door training, he was not really going to as there was no benefit of only two days worth of training. He preferred resting for two days, sitting alone and strategizing about the upcoming recruitment process.

Days passed quickly and soon it was time for true disciples' general assembly.

Ye Xiwen went to the [Full moon peak](#) and brought the wolf cub along with him. The general assembly was going to take place at Full moon peak, initiated by Chu Jingcai. Of course, he had come forward to entertain the guest as the half lord of the peak.

Full moon peak is like the main administrative building of a school.

Chu Jingcai was originally not a disciple of Full moon peak but now he was made one all of a sudden. This gave a very clear indication; since the head of Yi Yuan School had always been a disciple of Full moon peak for ages, so this sudden change of events was quite inevitable. In other words, Chu Jingcai was the next candidate for the position of sect head, with no visible competitors, so he was made a disciple of Full moon peak in a pre-determined fashion.

Perhaps in the coming few decades or a century, the current sect head would step down from the throne and Chu Jingcai would officially become the head of Yi Yuan School.

But this had nothing to do with Ye Xiwen because he was never interested in becoming the head of Yi Yuan School. In fact, he was not even interested to become the leader of Qianyu faction. He preferred freedom over anything!

At this time, hundreds of true disciples had gathered in the assembly. Even those who had been indulged in closed-door training for several years came out to participate in this general assembly.

No one dared to disrespect Chu Jingcai for obvious reasons.

"Brother Ye!"

"Brother Ye is here!"

"Greetings to Brother Ye."

"So he is the famous Brother Ye? He is really such a young and handsome genius!"

"Being twenty-years-old and holding the title of a pro-disciple, he has really broken all records in Yi Yuan School. Even Sister Hua was not as quick as him."

Now, both Ye Xiwen and Hua Menghan commanded respect in the community of true disciples, being the two youngest pro-disciples of Yi Yuan School.

Ye Xiwen noticed several figures sitting above stone blocks and talking to each other.

There were two particularly striking women in the group and both of them were looking outstanding like two celestial maidens descended from heavens. One of the two was Hua Menghan and the other woman was also a pro-disciple, named [Shuiyan Luo](#).

Her name kind of means 'Hookah Basket'

She looked a lot different and exceptionally mature compared to Hua Menghan.

Qi Feifan was sitting next to these women and there was a usual sunny smile on his face. His golden eyes were dazzling in the sunlight, just like his blond hair.

Next, to him, a man in a yellow robe was sitting with a serious look on his face. He was also a pro-disciple named Huang Luo Chen [Yellow dust], and in contrast to Qi Feifan's sunny temperament, he appeared cold like an iceberg.

Chu Jingcai was sitting next to him. He was clad in a magnificent Chinese robe and possessed the strongest imposing aura in the group.

Among these pro-disciples, there were two unknown men also present with somewhat haughty looks on their faces. One of them

looked roughly 20-years-old, wearing embroidered robe. He looked handsome but with a trace of overflowing arrogance riding his face. Especially, whenever he was looking at the true disciples of Yi Yuan School, the arrogant look on face was getting prominent.

The other man also looked arrogant. He had a tall stature and was clad in a white robe.

"Young Ye, you finally came!" Chu Jingcai's face revealed a pleased look as his sharp eyes caught Ye Xiwen approaching them. He immediately got up to welcome Ye Xiwen with a bright smile.

"Greetings to Brother Chu." Ye Xiwen cupped his hands and said, "Greetings to all senior brothers and sisters!"

Excluding Hua Menghan, everyone else here was older than him. They deserved courtesy and respect and he was aware of that.

"Young Ye, allow me to introduce you to our guests. These two gentlemen are from TMU. They are called Young Li Fei and Young Gu Yun." Chu Jingcai introduced them to Ye Xiwen.

"Actually, Young Li Fei's grandfather was a disciple of Yi Yuan School. It's really fateful for our sect that our predecessors are now part of TMU!" Chu Jingcai said.

Both Li Fei and Gu Yun were young talents of TMU, and also one of the most outstanding disciples from the lot. However, the clear arrogance visible on their faces was making Ye Xiwen feel

somewhat weird.

"We are lucky and grateful that Young Li Fei has personally come to fetch Young Huang and the other eligible candidates to TMU." Chu Jingcai smiled and said. Anyways, now he could no longer participate in the assessment of TMU.

Li Fei nodded and glanced at Ye Xiwen somewhat disdainfully.

"I don't like these smelly arrogant farts!" The wolf cub said to Ye Xiwen. It was rare that both he and Ye Xiwen reached the same point of view this time.

"I also feel like slapping these two arrogant pricks!" Ye Mo's voice rang in Ye Xiwen's mind.

"Ha ha ha, Young Ye, you and Young Li Fei are contemporaries, the two eminent members of the younger generation. Since Li Fei has connections with Yi Yuan School, both of you should very well become close friends in the future." Chu Jingcai said with a smile.

"I don't think that's going to happen. There's no way this guy is worthy of being called an eminent member of the younger generation!" Gu Yun looked disdainfully at Ye Xiwen and said. He obviously did not acknowledge Ye Xiwen at all and did not let go of this chance to insult Ye Xiwen in front of everyone.

"Perhaps you are considered quite well in the south-east region, but for the disciples of TMU, you are nothing." Gu Yun further said

and did not make any concessions while looking down on Ye Xiwen.

The south-east region was an inconspicuous place in the entire South region, and TMU attracted geniuses from the entire region, so it was clear that mentioning Ye Xiwen's fame and relating it only to the south-east region was an attempt to look down on him.

"F\*\*k this arrogant piece of shit. How can he dare to behave so arrogantly [in front of me](#)?" The angry wolf cub said with a furious look flashing in his predatory eyes. He could not accept that someone else was more arrogant than him.

The wolf cub is referring to himself as 'prince'

As soon as Qi Feifan and the others heard this, suddenly, their complexions changed.



## Chapter 277: You Are A Dog

---

These words were enough to look down on all the experts belonging to the south-east region, let alone Ye Xiwen.

Li Fei did not say anything, but he was obviously standing in support of his comrade's statement. Although his own ancestor used to be a disciple of Yi Yuan School, this did not mean he held some special respect for Yi Yuan School or its people.

Even if Yi Yuan School was regarded as an above average level sect in the south-east region, it was still nothing when considered in respect of entire southern region. In fact, outside the influence of Great Yue State, Yi Yuan School was just another sect and a lot of people hadn't even heard its name yet.

Gu Yun said it casually but the disciples of Yi Yuan School clearly looked pissed off. It didn't matter whether the statement was true or not, they were furious because their sect was insulted right in front of them. Not just Ye Xiwen, even their own pride was assaulted by an outsider.

"Damn, this arrogant mother\*\*\*\*er! He really wants to pick a fight. I will tear him to shreds with my claws!" The wolf cub communicated via soul search in his usual foul-mouthed manner. Obviously, he could no longer bear the arrogant behavior of Gu Yun.

Ye Xiwen looked calm on the outside but his brain was calculating strategies about how to deal with this situation that

was going out of hand.

He carefully observed those two men and realized that Gu Yun was obviously less than 50 years old, but was already at the peak of Complete Truth realm. In Ye Xiwen's knowledge, only Emperor Chen and other few were talented enough to reach such a high level at a considerably young age.

TMU's strength was really not a joke.

Li Fei, on the other hand, was already at half-step legendary realm and did not appear like an ordinary expert at all. No wonder he was so full of himself.

To be able to reach such a high cultivation level at this age, he must have obtained some kind of precious heritage.

Qi Feifan was standing on one side and his face looked bright yet somewhat flushed, however, there was a bright smile spread across his face. No one knew whether he was angry, or not angry, or perhaps very angry.

"Young Gu, this is not the right way of talking to your peers. This world is large, filled with countless talented people; maybe Young Ye is really a genius as Brother Chu said." Li Fei came out to mediate but there was still a clear hint of arrogance in his tone.

Ye Xiwen simply did not pay any attention to him, just sat down on a stone chair. It seemed as if this whole thing had no impact on

him whatsoever.

Chu Jingcai smiled wryly and thought that the scene reminded him of the tale in which a megalomaniac meets a hedgehog and gets angry. It was hard to figure out how all of this was going to end in the end.

Ye Xiwen's temperament had always been puzzling others. In fact, right now, only Qi Feifan was slightly aware of what Ye Xiwen might be thinking or how would he react in a situation such as this. Qi Feifan had always been in touch with Ye Xiwen, and out of the older pro-disciples, only he was considered a close rival of Ye Xiwen. It was a common topic of discussion in Yi Yuan School that a battle between Ye Xiwen and Qi Feifan was inevitable because they were the two mythical disciples of Yi Yuan School.

Ye Xiwen was the hedgehog here and no one must dare to touch him. But once he was touched, game over! No, Ye Xiwen was not governed by arrogance, neither was he governed by pride and prestige. However, he was well-known for crushing overgrown arrogance in the best ways possible.

Right now, Chu Jingcai was the host and the two sides were on the verge of a clash. What was the best thing to do in such a situation?

Sure enough, everyone saw that Ye Xiwen did not give him face and that was why Li Fei's complexion suddenly turned ugly.

"Sit down everyone and rest at ease. Today, I have summoned

everyone to throw a welcoming dinner for Young Li Fei and Young Gu Yun. I am so honored that these two have traveled great distances to come to our Yi Yuan School!" Chu Jingcai said.

Chu Jingcai was a resourceful guy in a somewhat dishonest way. He somehow managed to calm down the heat; after all, the matter at hand did not just concern Ye Xiwen. The true disciples were also hurt by Gu Yun's arrogant statement and Chu Jingcai had to make sure that both Ye Xiwen and the true disciples did not react in a reactionary manner.

Ye Xiwen, unexpectedly, did not retaliate in the way everyone was expecting him to. While Chu Jingcai was busy handling the situation, he was busy talking to Ye Mo.

"This TMU indeed seems like the topmost university of the south region. What do you think?" Ye Xiwen said.

"Maybe, but its disciples are horrible. For some reason, I have really come to hate these two." Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen was not at all bothered by their arrogant demeanour because he was more excited about getting tough opponents and that too so many of them. A sense of competitiveness, and the urge to beat them all, these were the things going on in his heart.

Yi Yuan School did not have many genius evildoers [monsters], however, the very thought of encountering an entire batch of geniuses in TMU was exciting in its own way.

Chu Jingcai's hands were gently playing the zither, giving rise to a smooth flowing melody like the passing clouds and running water. Chu Jingcai was so good at it that the music was attracting the birds which descended next to him and began to chirp, complimenting the music in a pleasant way.

Everyone was immersed in such a beautiful music, only the wolf cub was still irritated and eating food, chewing and biting furiously.

"Shut up!" Suddenly, Gu Yun snorted loudly and shot a deadly beam of energy towards the wolf cub.

The wolf cub was eating earnestly with full dedication but his reaction was not slow. He immediately jumped to one side and dodged the attack then shouted: "You f\*\*\*er, how dare you attack me?!"

Ye Xiwen obviously did not like what just happened and glared at Gu Yun. Indeed, this attack was meant to kill the wolf cub and Ye Xiwen wouldn't let go so easily.

"This dog has attained wisdom? Still, it is so insolent!" Gu Yun had never imagined that the wolf cub would suddenly start talking and neither did he expect to receive this kind of reply from a demon beast pet.

"You are a dog, your whole family is made up of dogs!" The wolf cub was furious and roared at Gu Yun.

Gu Yun's complexion suddenly turned gloomy as he looked at Ye Xiwen and said: "Young Ye, are you the one who has trained this dog? I must say you have done a terrible job. This dog has no manners. I am trying to say that you have failed in training it properly. If you cannot even train a dog, why don't let me help you?"

"You f\*\*\*er, no one would dare train this prince. I shall train your sorry ass instead!" The wolf cub refused to admit being inferior. Well, he never was a well-mannered beast in the first place.

"Humph!" Yun Gu snorted and once again shot an enormous beam of light towards him.

However, before the wolf cub could react, Ye Xiwen appeared in front of him like teleportation in general and caught that beam of light in his hand.

"What happened? Now you suddenly want to protect this dog?" Gu Yun looked annoyed as he said. He was obviously not satisfied with Ye Xiwen's interference.

"You are a dog, you bastard!" The wolf cub shouted again.

If Ye Xiwen had not come in front of him, he would have already torn this son of a bi\*\*h to pieces.

Ye Xiwen sneered and said: "Protect? You're wrong! I don't need to protect him. To be honest, I did protect you from getting torn

apart and that is because I want to ask you for an explanation as to why would you suddenly attack him?"

"He is too noisy, that's why." Gu Yun put on a serious face and said.

"So in your opinion, he is noisy. Very well, then, in my opinion, you are too noisy." Ye Xiwen smirked then immediately rushed towards Gu Yun like a fired bullet, producing a buzzing sound. Ye Xiwen's skin turned golden and his palm went forward, releasing an endless golden beam of light towards Gu Yun.

"Hey, you two ....." Chu Jingcai stood up and was about to mediate between the two, but suddenly felt a strong aura stubbornly pressing him. It belonged to Li Fei.

Li Fei slightly smiled and said: "Brother Chu, why do you look so worried? You should just relax and watch the show. I also want to see the level of one of the strongest experts of the south-east region."

Chu Jingcai was about to enter into a panicked state, but suddenly, Qi Feifan communicated via soul search and said: "Don't be so anxious, it is difficult to say who will win the fight."

Out of all of these people present here, only Qi Feifan had the best understanding of how Ye Xiwen generally operated in situations like this. He knew that Ye Xiwen would never engage an enemy he couldn't defeat. Not to mention, Ye Xiwen's fights always tend to defy logic as he had a track record of defeating

opponents of much higher levels!

Chu Jingcai sat down and began to watch the fight, however, he was preparing to intervene, just in case the fight went out of hand and someone's life was in danger. After all, he was a legendary level expert and it was his responsibility as the host as well.

The true disciples were also watching the battle and were secretly pleased in their hearts that Ye Xiwen was teaching that arrogant prick a lesson.

Although there were a lot of people who were not accustomed to seeing Ye Xiwen in battle, they could clearly sense his great power and skills.

Moreover, Ye Xiwen was representing Yi Yuan School in this battle, or perhaps the entire ten countries of the south-east region.

Gu Yun was the favored disciple of TMU!

The reputation of the entire south-east region was at stake here!

"Humph!" Gu Yun also shot a beam of light towards the incoming golden beam attack. The two attacks collided in midair and led to a massive explosion, while the very next instant, Gu Yun's fist arrived in front of Ye Xiwen.

This was the first time Ye Xiwen's attack was so easily resolved. Having produced such a powerful disciple, TMU was indeed



worthy of its title.

Ye Xiwen's dragon claw clashed with the dark cloud attack of Gu Yun and led to another explosion.

"Boom!" The aftermath of this explosion was so terrifying that it broke through the barrier of space and spread out in all directions.

Chu Jingcai immediately used a world law to fix the broken space and contained the aftermath of this explosion with a barrier. The true disciples looked scared and knew that Chu Jingcai had just now saved their lives.

Although they were also in the same realm as Ye Xiwen and Gu Yun, the gap was huge between ordinary true disciples and the experts at Complete Truth realm.

"Bang!" The next collision caused shockwaves that hit viciously against the barrier and shook it to its core.

The upper portion of the Full moon peak along with surrounding space was immediately sent into oblivion.

## Chapter 278: Let Me Crush Your Arrogance

---

The complementary shock waves were still sweeping across the area. No one would have imagined that the battle between two true disciples could be this terrifying.

Gu Yun's eyes flashed; even he did not expect Ye Xiwen to grab his fist attack. Even an expert of Complete Truth realm should not have been able to stop this attack, let alone Ye Xiwen.

"Hoot!" Gu Yun cried loud and moved forward like a streamer of light. His fist was wrapped in an inexhaustible divine light which instantly exploded to the size of a mountain and pounded down towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen, without showing any hesitation, stuck his hand out and it instantly turned into a dragon claw and greeted the incoming attack.

"Boom!" The two attacks collided fiercely and set off waves of rippling light and shock waves in the surroundings.

Gu Yun was very strong, no wonder he was so rampant, but Ye Xiwen's facial expression showed no change whatsoever. He once again went all out; his left palm summoned a golden coiling dragon whereas his right palm wreaked havoc by summoning a tyrannical attack like Hanshan seal. Hanshan seal instantly transformed into a gigantic mountain high in the sky, then, it suddenly dropped down towards Gu Yun.

Both these attacks were unparalleled ancient martial art techniques.

Ye Xiwen instantly routed Gu Yun's fist attack. Gu Yun had to jump back several steps to steer away from the range of these tyrannical attacks. There was no way he could possibly stand a chance against ancient mystical techniques.

However, he recovered quickly. Naturally, he couldn't allow Ye Xiwen to attack incessantly. He immediately punched towards Ye Xiwen and suddenly it seemed as if the sky itself would shatter into pieces. This was really a horrifying fist attack and couldn't be taken lightly.

A large area of the sky appeared to be collapsing as the [Quanjin](#) spread across the sky and began to bombard wantonly in all directions.

### Quanjin - Fist power

Ye Xiwen used his right hand to make some strange gestures as if he was turning the pages of a book, and then suddenly, Hanshan seal fell down right upon the Quanjin and completely annihilated it. It seemed as if the law of the earth itself was condensed into the Hanshan seal. Gu Yun's Quanjin did not withstand the unimaginable weight contained in the Hanshan seal and directly collapsed.

After the Hanshan seal smashed Quanjin, it further went towards Gu Yun at an incredibly fast speed, like a falling meteor.

"Bang!" The dropping Hanshan seal was just like a sierra falling from the sky and it pounded heavily upon him.

"Poof!" Gu Yun spurted out blood and his body was blasted away horizontally due to the massive impact.

"How dare you injure me!" Gu Yun roared like a crazed beast. His cries of horror shot up into the sky and resounded everywhere.

Gu Yun adjusted his unbalanced posture in midair then immediately rushed forward and arrived in front of Ye Xiwen. The speed granted to him by his agility technique was unimaginably fast. In a blink of an eye, a giant fist blasted towards Ye Xiwen.

His attack speed was really outstanding!

Gu Yun's agility skill was approaching near perfection. If Ye Xiwen did not use devil wings, he would barely be able to keep up. Having such confidence and arrogance was indeed not without a reason, and perhaps his future achievements would actually be immeasurable.

"Is that all you got?" Ye Xiwen sneered and activated tyrant body technique, instantly manoeuvred his palm to greet the incoming attack. Even though Gu Yun was incredibly fast, this couldn't act as an advantage as he was still unable to hurt Ye Xiwen.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The two sides continued to clash one after another and that caused the space to collapse again and again.

"These two are very strong, will surely reach legendary realm in the near future." Huang Luochen was amazed by the level of this battle and the potential demonstrated by Ye Xiwen and Gu Yun, even though it was only a truth level battle.

"I never thought that the Southeast region can produce such a master. To think he is actually able to fight on equal terms with Gu Yun. I guess he is not that bad of a choice as a potential candidate for the status of TMU disciple." Li Fei was somewhat amazed by Ye Xiwen's potential but there was still a hidden punch in his tone.

"This is insane! No matter how much he tries, his attacks are simply unable to hurt Ye Xiwen."

"Yes indeed, Gu Yun has already tried so many times but is failing to land one effective hit on Ye Xiwen."

"But similarly, Ye Xiwen is unable to catch up with Gu Yun's speed. Their individual advantages are canceling out each other, making it difficult for one party to gain an upper hand in battle."

"Is this the best you can do? Don't tell me this is the standard of TMU's treasured disciples?" Ye Xiwen sneered while activating tyrant body technique at its maximum. He had not even resorted to using gilded tyrant form so far.

Hanshan seals smashed down one after another while Gu Yun did not dare to block them. He had come to understand the frightening power of these seals and knew that it was for his own good to stay away from them at any cost.

"Humph, so a little boy is trying to talk big, I see. Even if I cannot hurt you, you also can never expect to hurt me!" Gu Yun said loudly with a stern look on his face. He still couldn't bring himself to acknowledge Ye Xiwen's tyrannical strength. Ye Xiwen was a peerless genius of the southeast region but was still just another genius and nothing more. He, on the other hand, thought of himself as a special disciple of TMU, thereby holding a much superior status than Ye Xiwen.

However, he had already discovered the terror of Ye Xiwen by now. It was too difficult to injure Ye Xiwen's invincible body as none of his attacks worked so far. He was somewhat aggrieved because all he could do during the battle was use fast speed to dodge Ye Xiwen's attacks.

He truly never excelled in offensive battle strategy instead he relied more on his speed to defeat his opponents.

But, unlike most of his opponents, Ye Xiwen not only possessed an unparalleled body as an ultimate form of defense but also possessed an ultimate offense type secret technique, Hanshan seal.

If Ye Xiwen was faster than him then he wouldn't have survived this long in battle.

Was it really possible for a genius like Ye Xiwen to appear in a small place like southeast region?

"Is that so?" Ye Xiwen smirked as he felt a sudden urge of defeating his opponent thoroughly to an extent of leaving them completely disheartened and dejected.

A pair of golden devil wings appeared behind Ye Xiwen all of a sudden.

His imposing aura instantly exploded in all directions like a majestic boundless sea.

"Shua!" Ye Xiwen's body suddenly blurred and disappeared from the spot where he was standing just now.

"What is this magical power, how is he so fast?" The true disciples immediately lost the trail of Ye Xiwen. Their eyes just couldn't follow Ye Xiwen, who was moving at such an incredibly fast speed that it felt as if he vanished.

Even Qi Feifan and the other half-step legendary level experts were shocked by Ye Xiwen's speed. They never expected that his speed could be enhanced so dramatically by a pair of wings. Not to mention, these wings also worked towards neutralizing Gu Yun's only advantage, giving an edge to Ye Xiwen in this battle.

There was a look of disbelief on Li Fei's face as he was watching Ye Xiwen's magical speed, which was much faster than Gu Yun's.

In this case, Ye Xiwen was holding all the advantages at the moment and Gu Yun was now in a serious situation where neither fight nor flight was an option.

Li Fei was all set to stop this battle immediately, but suddenly, a strong coercion firmly suppressed him, making him immobile. At this time, Chu Jingcai's voice entered his ears: "Young Li, why do you look so anxious? Relax, just sit back and enjoy the show. I also want to see the true strength of a young genius from TMU."

Li Fei's complexion suddenly paled when he was greeted by his own words and that too in a similar fashion. Not to mention, the meaning hidden in these words was quite obvious.

Chu Jingcai finished this sentence and immediately felt a joyous feeling in his heart. Now that he was finally able to vent his anger, Ye Xiwen suddenly started to appear more pleasing to the eye.

"Bang!" There came a loud noise, a human figure was kicked out in midair. It was Gu Yun who had been overtaken and kicked by Ye Xiwen. This kick was strong enough to send him flying right towards the ground. He crashed heavily on the ground, making a big crater almost instantly. He immediately spurted a mouthful of blood while there was an incredible look in his eyes.

"This should not be happening." Gu Yun seemed confused,



completely overtaken by deniability. He just couldn't accept the fact that Ye Xiwen's speed surpassed his own. But, he was not willing to give up so easily and immediately used his best fist attack.

However, Ye Xiwen's face was expressionless as he was looking calmly at Gu Yun. Suddenly, a Hanshan seal smashed down from the sky and hit Gu Yun directly from above.

"Boom!" Gu Yun was smashed on the ground, making a human shaped hole in the ground.

"Damn, Gu Yun was unable to dodge one attack and look what happened to him!"

"Good, well done, that idiot was trampled to death. The fu\*\*er had it coming!" The wolf cub clamoured in a loud voice and looked quite satisfied.

From the very start, Gu Yun was nothing more than an arrogant bastard who was simply an eyesore for everyone.

The true disciples were literally speechless when they heard the wolf cub's comment. They did not know where Ye Xiwen found this weird beast but no one dared to question Ye Xiwen or his judgment. Gu Yun's speed was already approaching the ultimate level of truth realm, but the wolf cub was able to dodge his attack so easily. This alone was enough to establish one fact that the wolf cub was stronger than them.

"These TMU disciples are nothing but mediocre. They do not deserve to be associated with legendary TMU, to be honest." Ye Xiwen smirked then turned away. Gu Yun was really powerful therefore he was so full of himself. Any other disciple of the same level definitely wouldn't stand a chance against Ye Xiwen.

In fact, at present, Ye Xiwen had enough strength to defeat anyone in the truth realm.

Li Fei's complexion was pale but did not have the means to act because Chu Jingcai was blocking his path. Although he was very strong, was still nothing in comparison to a legendary level expert.

Ye Xiwen did not turn back to look and left the scene along with the wolf cub.

## Chapter 279: Time To Try Another Method

---

The news about the battle between Ye Xiwen and Gu Yun quickly spread in Yi Yuan School, especially through the networks of those true disciples who were all in favor of Ye Xiwen and held intense hatred towards Gu Yun. Although they did not have the strength to teach Gu Yun a lesson, this job was fairly and properly done by Ye Xiwen. They were quite satisfied from the outcome in which Gu Yun was completely thrashed by Ye Xiwen.

Their individual perceptions of Ye Xiwen did not matter much as this incident was enough to override all those pre-existing perceptions. Now, the entire community of true disciples felt grateful to Ye Xiwen for doing what he did.

At this time, Ye Xiwen was one of them and Gu Yun was an outsider. And they were going to stand beside Ye Xiwen no matter what.

At this time, Li Fei's ashen face was visible to them all and making them feel proud and victorious in a way. They were the prestigious true disciples of Yi Yuan School and would certainly feel proud when one of their own defeated an outsider who was trying to look down on them and their sect.

Of course, Li Fei's ancestor used to be a disciple of Yi Yuan School but that did not mean he could look down upon Yi Yuan School and that too in their presence!

"Did you see that? Gu Yun did not stand a chance against Ye

Xiwen and was completely trampled underfoot. That is how you crush someone's arrogance!"

"Yes, true disciples of TMU are nothing but mediocre pricks. I don't see a reason why they are so arrogant."

"I assume that Gu Yun is not really a big shot in TMU. I guess he is just a janitor disciple with a gross arrogant demeanor."

"But we are talking about TMU, guys. Although Gu Yun was so easily defeated by Ye Xiwen, we must not forget that Ye Xiwen is really too strong. In just two years after joining Yi Yuan School, he is the first disciple in the history of our sect who has progressed so insanely. He is a rare evildoer [monster] that appears once in a millennium!"

"Indeed, I have also heard from several fellow true disciples that Gu Yun is truly fierce. If his opponent wasn't Ye Xiwen, then any other disciple wouldn't have survived this battle."

"Yes, Ye Xiwen's speed of growth is monstrous to be precise."

"Moreover, I heard that these two men came to Yi Yuan School in order to check the qualifications of worthy disciples and recruit them into TMU. But Ye Xiwen has ended up making them angry. I wonder what will happen now. I hope this will not affect the recruitment process."

Yi Yuan School disciples were discussing among themselves,

anyway, this matter about TMU didn't really concern them in this lifetime, so they could discuss freely as much as they want.

However, the matter quickly changed its form and caught everyone's attention when the news went out that Ye Xiwen's name was not present in the list of disciples selected for TMU. The news spread like wild fire in Yi Yuan School and detonated bombs of dissatisfaction everywhere.

It was quite obvious that the representatives of Yi Yuan School used their administrative powers to redress personal grievances, which spread discontentment among disciples!

However, regarding this matter which basically concerned only Ye Xiwen, neither the top brass of Yi Yuan School nor Li Fei made an attempt to give any response or clarification.

Inside the main hall of Qianyu peak palace.

"You were too impulsive this time!" Ye Feng sighed and looked at his stubborn younger brother who was so eager to go to TMU earlier but ended up creating such a trouble. Now, he might not have a way to join TMU.

"That bastard went too far! What happened was necessary." The wolf cub said with indignation and still hadn't gotten over the way he was looked down upon by the opposite party.

Ye Xiwen did not say anything but also believed that what

happened was necessary and just.

"Now, what will you do? How are you planning to join TMU?" Ye Feng asked.

"Rest assured, I will go for the other method. I will just go for the bottom level assessment and win my way up to the top." Ye Xiwen said in a very calm and casual manner.

In fact, there were two ways to enter TMU. One was to impress the representatives sent by TMU and enjoy the back door entry, but only a selected few could enjoy such privilege. Not to mention, a pre-established connection with TMU was necessary for this method. However, even these so-called selected individuals were required to go through an assessment process, though only to differentiate them in different ranks according to their potential and strength.

A lot of people were usually not lucky enough to have some kind of connection with TMU and their only option was to opt for the second way; to participate in a competitive assessment from the very bottom and win their way up to the very top. However, the difficulty was also much larger and more than 95% contestants usually faced elimination before reaching the semis.

Since the first way was now closed for Ye Xiwen, his only option was to go for competitive assessment. He was aware that this kind of assessment was going to be much more intense and brutal than expected and he might have to kill his way through countless geniuses to reach the top.

Although most of his competitors were going to come from small clans or sects, this did not mean that they would go down very easily. In fact, there were several records of peerless martial geniuses arising from small sects.

Ye Xiwen was not disappointed rather he was more excited to be taking part in the competition and also looking forward to it. Getting a back door entry was no fun to begin with. He was actually looking forward to gaining loads of battle experience in the imminent brutal fights.

If there were going to be endless obstacles in his path, he would pave his own path out of blood and perseverance by virtue of his own hands in order to reach his goal!

Not to mention, he still had mysterious space as well as Ye Mo's help. There was nothing that could stop him from moving forward!

After two weeks, the team of selected disciples finally left for TMU. In addition to Huang Luochen, Qi Feifan and Shuiyan Luo, Hua Menghan also went to TMU unexpectedly, along with a dozen of true disciples. In other words, the entire elite disciple force of Yi Yuan School was taken away by TMU's representatives.

Fortunately, Yi Yuan School wasn't the only major sect that had to lose its elite disciples. A large number of elites from other major sects also went to TMU.

Out of the six pro-disciples of Yi Yuan School, now, only two were left namely Chu Jingcai and Ye Xiwen.

However, this outcome had a good effect on Qianyu faction's growth as everyone wanted to be a part of the remaining pro-disciples' factions. Since, it was quite difficult to enter Chu Jingcai's faction, Qianyu faction became the most ideal faction to join, considering Ye Xiwen's rise to fame and his newly earned title as the strongest disciple in the younger generation.

Ye Xiwen's excellent performance, as a representative of Yi Yuan School while saving Yi Yuan School's prestige and dignity from arrogant representatives of TMU, also made him a youth icon and the most adored disciple in no time.

However, the departure of these elites had a slight impact on Yi Yuan School's overall available combat force, particularly in this era of Bai Mojiao's rebellion.

Bai Mojiao was a cunning organization and had largely taken into account TMU's recruitment process and the imminent lack of elite disciples. It was a good opportunity for staging a rebellion.

.....

A month's time quickly passed and since Bai Mojiao seemed to know that all major forces had sent their elite disciples to TMU, the degree of their rebellion increased significantly.



Ye Xiwen even had to go himself to wipe out some of the rebelling Bai Mojiao big shots. Now, there were only two pro-disciples left in the sect. Chu Jingcai had to go to the depths of Yi Yuan School to deal with a variety of administrative matters. So, only Ye Xiwen could be dispatched in emergency situations.

Whenever some Bai Mojiao related missions were far beyond the capability of ordinary true disciples, only then Ye Xiwen was asked to move into action. There were only a handful of half-step legendary disciples in the five major sects, adding up to a dozen at most. But now all of a sudden, they were all gone. This put pressure on the remaining elite disciples. Since Chu Jingcai was ready to take over the title of next sect head, Ye Xiwen suddenly became a leading figure for the younger generation.

During this month, Ye Xiwen exterminated over 20 Bai Mojiao strongholds and rose to fame in the entire Great Yue State.

On this day, the cloudless blue sky, as if laundered excessively to the point of flawless cleanness, was spread to infinity in all directions.

Ye Xiwen was travelling on a rainbow while his hands were crossed behind his back. Even if his current strength was comparable to Complete Truth realm, the extermination of Bai Mojiao strongholds was getting more and more strenuous for him. It was because Bai Mojiao was calling more and more of its best members to deal with a threat like Ye Xiwen. Now, even Ye Xiwen had come to realize that he could not continue to wait any longer.

It was time to have a breakthrough!

After exterminating more than 20 Bai Mojiao strongholds, he seized a lot of resources including more than 50,000 Ling Dans which were enough to serve his accumulation requirements. The breakthrough time was approaching closer.

His inner state was already at a sufficient level thanks to devouring knowledge in bulk in the library. So, as long as he could get his hands on enough energy, breakthrough shouldn't be a difficult task for him.

Not to mention, he had not completely absorbed one of the two zombie cores in the library and was saving it for the next breakthrough. All these resources were enough to send him directly from the truth eighth peak to Complete Truth realm in one fell swoop. Then, his combat efficiency would have a rapid and qualitative change, making it possible for him to contend with half-step legendary experts.

By that time, he would surely reach the pinnacle of truth realm and the next step would be reaching the half-step legendary realm. However, his accumulation was not enough to step into half-step legendary realm. In order to compete with other contenders in TMU's assessment examination, he must step into half-step legendary realm and seemed confident as well.

## Chapter 280: Devil Cavalry

---

Ye Xiwen returned to Yi Yuan School and immediately began the closed-door training. His aura rushed from truth eighth stage to Complete Truth realm, granting tremendous changes to his battle efficiency.

He had commanded not allowing anyone to disturb him. In fact, even if there was some urgent task, no one was allowed to disturb him. The value of Ye Xiwen was soon going to reflect in the future, bringing in enormous benefits for Yi Yuan School in various forms. He was phenomenal in his actions of eliminating several Bai Mojiao strongholds and this was quite a big task, after all, this mission was something not even the Taihang elders could succeed in doing so easily.

Another month passed quickly and Bai Mojiao activities got increasingly frequent, they also began to attack major cities.

Five major forces put more intensity in their efforts to exterminate Bai Mojiao forces. However, Bai Mojiao suddenly quieted down while facing that. It was just like the calm before a storm.

On this day, the infinitely cloudy sky, like a relentless army general, suddenly roared and Yi Yuan School's main gate was shaken up. A thrill of horror swept away several mountain peaks and it seemed as if many sierras, located in the front region of Yi Yuan School's campus, instantly collapsed after encountering a doomsday-like scenario. The Zhen barrier circle was also destroyed in a blink of an eye.

The surrounding space was torn apart like a velvet carpet and a gigantic devil claw suddenly stretched out to grab a mountain peak.

"Boom!" The mountain peak was grasped and instantly crushed into pieces. Hundreds of disciples were also grasped along with the mountain peak and were crushed to death.

"Who is that? Who dares to attack our Yi Yuan School!" A voice filled with fury originated from the depths of Yi Yuan School and echoed like a momentary sonic boom.

"Yi Yuan School, this sect of yours has been standing strong for thousands of years but it is time to put an end to its glory!" A loud voice sounded from the other side of the crack in space. A gigantic hand instantly appeared in the sky, sweeping an area stretched over the radius of hundred kilometres in one fell swoop.

"What a joke!" The voice originating from the depths of Yi Yuan School sneered and a rippling Swordqi suddenly cut through the barrier of space and collided with that big hand.

"Boom!" That big hand was chopped down instantly into pieces and turned into an endless amount of qi, sweeping across in all directions.

However, right then, a tall spectre appeared from the crack. His whole body was enveloped in dreadful [moqi](#) that was distorting the air. People could not see his face but his eyes were shining brightly

like two big red lanterns.

moqi = devilqi

A terrifying aura scattered in all directions with his body at the center.

"[Sage realm](#)! This devil is at Sage realm!"

Sage realm = Saint realm = Sacred realm = Holy realm

Yi Yuan School's disciples despaired as they discovered this spectre's real level. Everyone knew that the strength of Sage realm was terrifying and basically out of their comprehension.

The legendary realm was just for legendary characters and those characters were still bound to the mortal realm in one way or the other. However, after stepping into the Sage realm, one would actually transcend the mortal world and witness major changes in one's body and soul. This was the so-called rising above the mundane life of mortals and entering the world of Sages.

A horrifying scene was unfolding in front of everyone. A large rift in the space ended up becoming a portal for Devil army and Bai Mojiao disciples to rush into this world. They were riding abominable creatures called magical beasts and invading Yi Yuan School in abundance.

Various beastly roared filled the sky as hundreds of thousands of devils and Bai Mojiao disciples captured the skyline.

This time, Bai Mojiao's tyrannical forces had shown up incisively.

"How can they have so many soldiers? This is insane! Bai Mojiao has gathered an outrageous number of devil soldiers. This doesn't tally with the information we obtained damn it!" A disciple roared to express his frustration. Although in the hearts of these disciples, Bai Mojiao was considered as a formidable organization, however, it had been in a situation of extermination for quite some time. They never imagined that even after facing grand scale extermination, Bai Mojiao could gather such an insane army!

There was a creepy feeling about this. A feeling of chill greeted their hearts as they continued to stare at the scene unfolding in front of their eyes.

Hundreds of thousands of mighty devil cavalry soldiers were going on a conquest, heading straight in the direction of Yi Yuan School. Some timid disciples were instantly scared to death.

A crowd of elders and true disciples also went up into the sky while other disciples put all their energy into dealing with the devil soldiers on the ground.

Yi Yuan School's disciples and elders were going all out. They put their lives on the line; after all, Yi Yuan School was their home that they must protect at any cost. A barrage of disciples came rushing out of the depths of Yi Yuan School and jumped into the fight without any hesitation.

They were not prepared for this battle while devil cavalry was rushing to the front. One tall devil was sitting atop a scary magical beast and leading the cavalry. He looked very grim and was on the verge of going berserk any time now.

"Bang!"

The two sides crashed into each other in midair, causing numerous casualties on both sides almost instantly.

"Puchi!" Several disciples ran directly into the spears held by devil soldiers. It seemed as if string-like spears passed through several bead-like meatballs in a blink of an eye, unfolding a bloody scene in the sky and on the battlefield.

This was an extremely bloody picture but no one had the time to think about all that. There was no turning back, no one thought of retreating now, rather they raged even more and went all out.

Team after team of devil soldiers were coming out from the rift in space and rushing to attack Yi Yuan School.

"Boom!" Human disciples with swords formed teams and rushed forward to greet the incoming devil cavalry. They joined forces and summoned up a wall of Swordqi and somehow became successful in repelling the devil teams.

Both sides were fighting to kill and making every effort to kill each other.

This was a great event and would spread to become an immortal legend!

Yi Yuan School had been standing tall for thousands of years but this was the first time someone launched a direct attack on it. This was something that had never been seen before, so the disciples were somewhat confused. However, it seemed like now their wills were firmer than ever before.

This was their home, hence, escape or retreat was not an option.

Ancient Zhen laws were activated and disciples got to see the true power of Yi Yuan School. These laws had stayed buried for hundreds of thousands of years for a tactical deployment such as this. Several devil soldiers rushed into them and were turned to ashes.

"Shoot!" Someone shouted from the devil side, and immediately, devil soldiers took out their bows and shot a barrage of magical arrows into the sky, obscuring the sky for an instant then the arrows fell down towards the human disciples.

"Aah!"

"Aah!"

"Aah!"



The rain of magical arrows fell upon the disciples and directly harvested the souls from their bodies. Followed by painful screams, countless disciples lost their lives.

"Counterattack!" The senior expert shouted from the depths of Yi Yuan School, and at this time, an ancient matrix formation began to launch a massive attack, absorbing all of the Lingqi in the air instantly.

"Rumble!"

"Rumble!"

Almost in a blink of an eye, an inexhaustible black dragon appeared in the clouds and glittered violently. It was followed by huge electric snake creeping inside the dark clouds and then it fell down, forming a sea of lightning. Numerous devil soldiers and Bai Mojiao disciples were burned alive by the power of this lightning attack.

Countless devil soldiers were burned to the crisp in this sea of lightning.

This was a clash between two tyrannical forces and every moment claimed a lot of lives from both sides. The terrible collisions were stirring up the meat sauce and a river of blood on the battlefield.

Dreadful moqi seemed monstrous and was rising up to hundred

miles into the sky.

Several ancient laws were being activated to tackle this problem but their resurrection was going to take time. Meanwhile, Yi Yuan School's disciples were losing their lives left and right because their battle efficiency was nothing in comparison to that of the frightening war-freaks like the devils.

For a while, the human disciples were on defense and were being constantly defeated.

Hundreds of thousands of devil soldiers attacked at once.

"Boom!" But, suddenly, a divine beam rushed out from the depths of Yi Yuan School and swept out, annihilating an entire platoon of devil cavalry in one fell swoop.

A huge war-fortress flew out from the depths of Yi Yuan School. It was actually the mountain peak [gifted] to a true disciple and held tremendous firepower. It was equipped with all sorts of matrix methods and immediately unleashed numerous attacks on the devil army. One after another, several war-fortresses flew out and obscured the sky.

The flying war-fortresses began to launch a variety of magical attacks, endless beams lasing in the direction of devil army and causing explosions. The devil army faced numerous casualties after the sudden appearance of war-fortresses.

The flying war-fortresses made an impenetrable defense line in the sky and on the ground as well, and successfully managed to block the advancement of devil cavalry.

"Bang!"

At this time, a thundering sound resounded everywhere along with a storm originating from the crack in space. Then, a huge figure, several hundred meters tall in height, jumped out of the crack and landed in this world.

"War Monster!"

"War Monster!"

The sharp-eyed disciples immediately recognized this creature. This was the infamous War Monster of the devil army. Tall like a mountain, it tore its way out of the crack in space. Its frightening existence finally appeared in their world. It was carrying a crooked smile on its face as it gazed at the tiny and inconsequential human experts while revealing its sharp fangs.

## Chapter 281: Old Sect Head

---

The terrifying War Monster trampled forward and with a single step, it shook the ground beneath and sliced the air around. The long stretches of mountains were crumbled with its mighty sweep.

"Bang!" The War Monster collided with the war fortress. The most dreadful war machines of both the parties mercilessly crashed into each other.

"Bang!" The devil cavalries, which were spread around within a few miles range, were obliterated by the sweeping Swordqi.

At this time, a skinny and slender figure appeared from the depths of Yi Yuan School. His whole face was wrinkled and he was somewhat limping as well.

The facial features of this slender figure suggested that the man was very old. The identity of the old man was a mystery for all the disciples who were looking at him. There were whispers amongst them suggesting he might be a senior who was in a hideaway for a long time.

"Isn't this our old sect head that was in charge 1000 years ago?" A sharp-eyed disciple recognized him all of a sudden.

Hearing this moved the disciples and brought tears to their eyes. For there was no one in Yi Yuan school who did not know and respect this powerful leader.

This old person used to be the sect head of Yi Yuan School until two generations ago and was very much a legendary figure among all the sect heads. However, more than 1000 years ago when Yi Yuan School was surrounded by an enormous crisis, at that time, an ancient treasure trove was discovered and a large number of Yi Yuan experts entered it. But afterwards, an accident occurred and they failed to come back.

During this unstable time of Yi Yuan School, the inheritance and the human resource accumulated over a span of ten thousand years was about to get cut off in a flash. But in this time of distress, the old head marched into the East and the West and defeated countless enemies. He finally stabilized Yi Yuan School and restored its strength and vitality. He re-instated Yi Yuan School back to the ranks of five major forces.

However, the expeditions which lasted for several hundred years exhausted his vitality and everyone thought that he wouldn't be able to die peacefully in a sitting posture. However, since then, the old head disappeared without a trace and everyone thought that he really [died in a sitting posture](#).

Dying in a sitting posture is a Buddhist practice and is considered sacred. It is the only way to stop oneself from turning into a zombie after death.

Unexpectedly, the old head reappeared in the most crucial time once again to save Yi Yuan School.

He was the respectable elder from a thousand years ago who saved Yi Yuan School. No wonder everyone respected him to the

utmost.

The old head's stature was arched and his face was densely covered with age spots. It appeared as if life was just about to leave his body. Besides, it was definite that his survival was supported by his willingness and willpower to seek a breakthrough into the sage realm. Those expeditions had exposed his body to many hidden dangers and now it felt that end of his life was approaching.

The arrival of the old head sent a wave of hope amongst the people of Yi Yuan School.

Even the spectre did not dare to deride the old head and looked at him with solemn respect, as if not daring to underestimate this old man's strength.

The presence of the old head had lifted the spirits of the Yi Yuan people. However, the war had not ended yet. Several devils were still coming in and Yi Yuan disciples were on the verge of retreat. This was a terrifying slaughtering feast.

If this had been a one-on-one battle then Yi Yuan disciples would have been invincible but now hundreds of thousands were at war.

Amidst the flowing rivers of blood, Yi Yuan ancestors feared the danger of eradication.

Everyone had to do their utmost and fight, there was no choice.

"Old guy, it is evident that you are severely injured. If you want to continue to prolong your own life with that turtle breath technique of yours, you can still survive for another 100 years, still, you want to die?" The spectre gave a cold look to the old head and said. He was also in the sage realm like the old head, but the injury the old head had survived earlier was too grave and it had limited his martial life to only vital practices. If he was to participate in a war, his death was certain.

"So what if you have brought hundreds of thousands of devil soldiers, you still cannot win against my Yi Yuan School, keke!" The old head coughed a few times and fresh blood was thrown into the air.

"Old head!" Yi Yuan disciples burst out in concern, worried about his condition.

"I have fought innumerable opponents; the only thing missing was fighting the devil cavalry, keke!" The old man coughed again and spoke.

"Well, it seems your last wish is to die, I will grant it gladly!" The specter replied in a cold voice. Although he was not much interested in this severely wounded old man, he had brought this many devil soldiers to destroy Yi Yuan School and certainly wouldn't allow anyone to stand in his way.

Anyone, who would try to stand in his way, must die.

The specter swept his long spear and released a devil technique

that looked just like a devilish dragon, rushing towards the old head.

The skinny stature of the old head seemed like a small boat being hit by wild waves in the raging tides. He suddenly pulled out his firm sword and released a Swordqi horizontally towards the incoming attack.

"Bang!" The terrifying collision collapsed a piece of space. The dark crack in space looked quite frightening.

The forces on both sides suffered heavy losses after the first collision.

"Clang!" The long sword in the old head's hand behaved just like a black dragon, it instantly roared out and clashed with the devilish dragon. The collision produced an endless wave of energy boom which filled the horizon.

The collisions between the shards of Swordlight and spear shadows obscured the sky.

"Cough!" The old head coughed out blood, but his facial expression was firm and resolute. His forehead was wrapped around with the air of death and it seemed as if the next moment he would really drop dead. Even in such a dire situation, he was relentless and his attacks were fierce.

The Yi Yuan disciples were sobbing as they knew that the real



cost of this fight was his vitality and life-force.

The spectre, at this moment, shoved his moqi directly into the devilish dragon which then fired a magical beam towards the old head from its mouth.

The old head charged forward and slashed it with his Swordqi.

The Swordqi was torn to shreds by the devilish dragon. It, then, roared and rumbled into the old head's body.

"Bang!" The old head was flown away; his skinny body went flying into the mountain peak which was then directly severed due to the impact.

"Old head!" Yi Yuan disciples called out in alarm and started weeping bitterly.

"Our top experts, Taizhong elders, where are they?!"

Some disciples were confused because at such a critical time, they did not know where the Yi Yuan elders were and why would they not come out to support the old head, who was struggling at the moment.

"Today, we will crush Yi Yuan School and then go on to trample other major forces of Great Yue State. We will conquer this land and turn it into a devil bridgehead." The spectre roared and said.

"Kill these devil bastards; we cannot let the devil race step into our territory."

"Yes, kill these devil bastards!"

One of the Yi Yuan disciples roared, the danger of eradication was in front of them and no matter what usual hatred existed among them, today, they had to fight united.

There were more than a hundred thousand disciples in Yi Yuan School and all of them simultaneously unleashed themselves onto the devil army.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, there was a huge burst of sound followed by instant evaporation of many devil cavalries into blood fog.

It was a golden figure that, like a golden ray of light, had rushed into the formations of devil soldiers.

A terrifying aura swept away as the golden light condensed into a dragon, and in a flash, dozens of devil soldiers were killed with just one bang.

The golden trail came together and took the form of a person whose whole body dazzled like a golden war god.

"It's Brother Ye!"

"Brother Ye is here. He has finally come!"

Yi Yuan disciples cheered and their morale rose up suddenly. Although Yi Yuan School had many powerful masters, some even more powerful than Ye Xiwen, but they were from the older generation and not the same generation as Ye Xiwen and the other pro-disciples.

Now, Ye Xiwen was the only active pro-disciple left in the sect and these disciples could relate to him in a way they couldn't with the powerhouses of the older generation.

Ye Xiwen was one of the six pro-disciples, an iconic young expert who was also at the helm of the younger generation. His appearance on the battlefield was more than enough to boost the morale of disciples.

"You all need not be anxious, the head and the elders will soon come over!" Ye Xiwen roared and a thundering voice spread through the battlefield. Yi Yuan disciples were no longer worried; after all, these were Ye Xiwen's words and had a natural persuasive power.

Ye Xiwen summoned Hanshan seal which got bigger and bigger in the sky and instantly slammed down, killing hundreds of devil soldiers in a blink of an eye.

Ye Xiwen appeared callous. His body was covered with golden divinity, radiating rays of golden light in the surroundings. He was just like a tyrannical god of war, ominously glaring like a predator.

This time, Ye Xiwen's fighting strength had risen all the way, breaking from truth realm to half-step legendary realm. After more than a month of closed-door training, Ye Xiwen skipped truth ninth stage and directly reached Complete Truth realm in a single breakthrough.

"Ye Xiwen, I did not expect to meet you here. I remember the last time you ruined our plans, but today will mark the day of your death!" A familiar voice sounded from one side. Ye Xiwen shifted his gaze, only to find Lu Hongwei holding a magical sword in his hand and looking at him with a murderous look in his eyes.

## Chapter 282: Fight With Lu Hongwei

---

"Ye Xiwen, this time I will kill you mercilessly and also destroy your Yi Yuan School!" Lu Hongwei gave a murderous look to Ye Xiwen. His left arm didn't seem like a normal arm; instead, it was a devil arm which was brimming with energy.

He detested Ye Xiwen, if not for Ye Xiwen, he would not be so embarrassed. And because of this, he must kill Ye Xiwen to satisfy his obsession.

Ye Xiwen had ruined his plans on Qianji Island, giving prior warning to Yi Yuan School and the other major forces about Bai Mojiao's approaching raid. This was not a hidden matter and everyone knew about Ye Xiwen's role in that incident.

Ye Xiwen sneered and said, "Your century-old dream of destroying Yi Yuan School shall never be fulfilled."

Several hundred thousand devil soldiers had come rushing today to eradicate Yi Yuan School. This time, the enemy was enormous and powerful and it seemed like there truly was a danger of total destruction awaiting Yi Yuan School.

Lu Hongwei assumed an awe-inspiring pose, displaying the true power of half-step legendary realm. The extent of his power was simply difficult to visualize.

The entire battlefield was riddled with corpses of devils and human experts. Everywhere, the disciples of Yi Yuan School and

the devils were indulged in clearing each other out.

Lu Hongwei's arm, which was possessed by a devil sword, released a devilish magical beam towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen did not budge and stood still like a mountain, with an icy cold look in his eyes. His whole body was radiating golden rays of light. He appeared like a golden god that was cloaked in divine golden halo. This was the first time he was going to display his true battle strength of half-step legendary realm. He roared towards the sky and his whole body was engulfed by an unprecedented amount of magnificent energy.

Ye Xiwen swiftly joined his hands together and shot a golden beam towards the devil arm.

"Bang!" A terrifying shock wave swept across as a result of this collision. The demon cavalries and the Yi Yuan disciples who were present around the perimeter were directly sent off flying.

"Ye Xiwen, you cannot fight here, otherwise, you will accidentally injure many disciples of your own sect." Ye Mo said.

At this time, a huge silhouette appeared in the sky. Qianyu peak was actually a flying war-fortress and that had come to Ye Xiwen's aid. It was larger than an average mountain and was constantly shooting energy beams at the enemy forces, wiping out countless devil cavalries with each strike. Even the War Monster was too slow to dodge a powerful beam attack and was directly cut in half.

The power of the flying war-fortress was fully manifested at this time.

"Ha ha ha, the prince is here!" At this time, the wolf cub laughed mockingly, then opened his mouth and fired a grand scale attack at the devil cavalry, which resulted in a mushroom cloud. In a blink of an eye, hundreds of devils were annihilated.

At this time, Ye Shu was standing next to the wolf cub. He also began to use all sorts of martial techniques, wiping out several devil cavalrymen in groups.

As for Ye Feng and the others that did not come out, since they had not yet entered into the truth realm. They were not capable enough of protecting themselves in this battlefield; therefore they were simply operating various Zhen laws and martial attacks from inside the Qianyu war-fortress.

Ye Xiwen grinned and a burst of golden light seeped out of his body and instantly swept through the formations of devil cavalrymen instantly.

"Aaaah!"

The entire battlefield was shaken by the pitiful screams of the devil soldiers as their souls were directly harvested by this golden light and turned them into golden blood fog.

"You won't escape from me!" Lu Hongwei stared at Ye Xiwen with

his burning red eyes then immediately began to chase him.

Ye Xiwen directly flew inside the devil formation and unleashed his powers, killing them in hundreds at a time while trying his best to avoid accidentally hurting his fellow disciples. However, Lu Hongwei did not seem to care about the loss of his own soldiers in friendly fire.

Ye Xiwen was like an invincible entity, cutting his way through the devil cavalrymen. No one was able to stop him no matter how much tried! The divinities crawling within his body were a devil's worst nemesis.

"Kill him!"

The shouts were lingering on the battlefield; the battle continued; corpses were being sent flying around. Streams of blood were flowing across the battlefield, indicating the extent of the death toll that continued to rise with each passing moment.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Along with a barrage of terrifying noises of explosions, Ye Xiwen was encircled by numerous devil experts, but in a blink of an eye, all were chopped into pieces by Ye Xiwen.



Hanshan seal was summoned by Ye Xiwen in the sky. It transformed into a huge mountain and slammed down upon devil exerts. Meanwhile, He was unceasingly slaughtering the enemies that were appearing in his way. However, as a result of that, his speed finally slowed down a bit and this made it possible for Lu Hongwei to overtake him.

"I would like to see where you will go now." Lu Hongwei was keeping a close eye on Ye Xiwen and did not seem to care about the devils who had been massacred so far. His eyes were fixed on the real enemy, Ye Xiwen. If Ye Xiwen was not eliminated right away then his plan would most likely fail once again, not to mention he might have to flee again in a severely injured state like the previous time.

"Bang!" Lu Hongwei sliced the air with his devil sword, and suddenly, a horrifying light which was made up of [moqi](#) began to billow around him.

moqi = devilqi

"It is time for you to say goodbye to this world." Lu Hongwei clenched his teeth in anger and his red eyes sparkled like a crazed beast.

It seemed as if Lu Hongwei's anger could sweep away the universe any time now.

Ye Xiwen's eyes reflected no fear; instead, a golden light flickered in his hands. Coiling Dragon Palm was unleashed by Ye Xiwen,

instantly releasing a coiling dragon into this world. It appeared like a living golden dragon, all set to devour the opponent ahead.

"Bang!" A terrifying collision took place when Ye Xiwen's coiling dragon swallowed a huge bout of moqi, but all of a sudden, the moqi suddenly burst out of its body, annihilating it in the process.

Lu Hongwei was at a higher level when compared with Ye Xiwen, after all, there was a gap of almost 100 to 200 worth of practice years between the two.

Ye Xiwen made a strategic retreat while Lu Hongwei continued to move in his direction under the urge to kill him once and for all.

"Ye Xiwen, I am afraid this Lu Hongwei has attained half-step legendary realm long back!" Ye Mo's voice sounded in Ye Xiwen mind.

Ye Xiwen's heart shook for a moment. A while ago, he had finally stepped into Complete Truth realm and his battle strength was equivalent to half-step legendary realm, reaching the same level as Lu Hongwei. But the so-called half-step legendary realm had many distinctions. Although the battle strength of both Ye Xiwen and Qi Feifan were on half-step legendary level, but in reality, Ye Xiwen was still not as strong as Qi Feifan.

Besides the ordinary half-step legendary realm, there existed several branch levels such as half-step legendary first stage, half-step legendary second stage and so on, all the way up to the ninth stage.

Ye Xiwen could easily defeat an opponent who was at ordinary half-step legendary realm, but after reaching the higher levels such as half-step legendary first stage or above, the battle strength also increased exponentially with each stage.

Regardless of how much an ordinary person would practice, they could only achieve the half-step legendary realm. Only a genius could break the shackles of half-step legendary realm and truly achieve the first stage or second stage and so on. One must know that if an expert was at half-step legendary first stage then their battle strength would be equivalent to that an expert on legendary first stage. And the same analogy would apply at other half-step legendary stages as well. However, the issue was that there was a tremendous gap between any two neighbouring stages in the half-step legendary realm. An expert, who was at half-step legendary first stage, just did not stand a chance against an opponent who was a stage above him. This strict barrier was specifically prominent in the half-step legendary realm. Not to mention, only talented experts could actually dream of reaching the higher stages within half-step legendary realm, leaving no other alternative options whatsoever for ordinary experts.

In other words, a high-level of talent was a must to reach the higher and mostly inaccessible stages that were hidden inside the half-step legendary realm. Ordinary experts simply had no talent or the option to step into the half-step legendary first stage and could only have a breakthrough directly into the legendary first stage, then continue forward.

Of course, if an expert was able to reach half-step legendary fourth or fifth stage and decided to have a breakthrough and step

into legendary realm then they would automatically step right into the legendary fourth or fifth stage, however, with better foundation and understanding.

Half step legendary realm was a very important stage for someone who was really determined to have limitless future prospects in the world of martial arts. It was a very crucial stage to lay the foundation for an eventual breakthrough into the Sage realm, which was very important for transcending the mortal world.

It was said that if a person would stay for a longer time in the half-step legendary realm, they would be able to enjoy limitless future prospects. This was the reason why TMU had made a special assessment for half-step legendary category. Those who were at the higher stages of half-step legendary realm always had more chances of being selected by TMU.

However, the breakthrough to each stage was very difficult and this immense measure of difficulty was enough to limit the quantity in each assessment.

Now, it was no longer a mystery why Lu Hongwei was still stuck in half-step legendary realm, after all, more than 100 years ago, he had fought with Chu Jingcai and the other pro-disciple of that generation. Back then, if he had chosen to have a breakthrough into the legendary realm, then he would probably have reached the legendary third or fourth stage by now. However, he chose to stay in half-step legendary realm and was now at half-step legendary first stage. In other words, this showed how much difficult it was to climb stages inside the half-step legendary realm.

"Ye Xiwen, today I will kill you for sure!" Lu Hongwei roared.

"Tianyuan Mirror!" Yi Xiwen pulled out his wild card. He would not have cared much if he was facing an ordinary expert of half-step legendary realm, but now he needed to pay more attention because his opponent was at the first stage of half-step legendary realm.

Tianyuan Mirror appeared on top of Ye Xiwen's head instantaneously; it started whirling and simultaneously began to release a dreadful coercion as if coming straight from the command of the Devil King and powerful enough to suppress all devil soldiers right where they were.

Within a mile radius, all magical beasts began to tremble with fear and knelt down on the ground, not daring to get up. Although no one understood why this was happening, it was the kind of scary feeling which came from the bottom of their hearts, which made them scared and timid. This was a bizarre scene and shocked everyone who witnessed it on the battlefield!

However, no one knew that this scene was just an aftermath of Ye Xiwen's intended attack that was aimed directly at Lu Hongwei.

"What mischief are you up to now!" Lu Hongwei roared, he only felt a dreadful restraint deep inside his mind, his consciousness was being blinded. He wanted Ye Xiwen dead, but now he felt like he wanted Ye Xiwen to live. As if he was being forced into thinking that Ye Xiwen must not die and he must not attack Ye Xiwen at any

cost. The confused state of his mind was a serious threat to him and his plan.

This was a startling yet terrifying deterrent!

His strength was also gravely affected and directly dropped down from half-step legendary first stage to ordinary half-step legendary realm.

This swift decrease in his power made Lu Hongwei nearly go crazy as he rushed towards Ye Xiwen to attack him.

However, after the sudden drop in Lu Hongwei's strength, Ye Xiwen was no longer hesitant to fight back with all his might.

## Chapter 283: Provokes A legend

---

The old sect head was sent flying into a mountain peak and blasted it to bits.

"You humans are inferior creatures. It is impossible for you to stop our superior devil race." The sage realm specter said to the Old sect head with a cold look in his eyes.

"Old head!"

"Old head!"

Numerous disciples of Yi Yuan School cried out in fright.

"No! Our Old head...was also defeated."

"He couldn't stop that sage realm specter, what should we do now!"

The disciples were now desperate, although they were not alive 1000 years ago, they had heard about the Old head from the people who lived during that time. Their hearts were filled with respect for him. For them, he was a deity who had saved Yi Yuan School at the most crucial time, flipping the tides of misfortune. Even now at this age, he was willing to raise his sword and fight, as long as he stood there, he was like an invincible war god, instilling confidence and morale among the disciples.

"Old head is now old and fragile, but in the past, he bore the title of the unparalleled hero."

"If he wasn't old and injured to such an extent, this despicable specter wouldn't be rampaging like this in his presence."

Whispers between the Yi Yuan disciples were heard by the specter who then revealed a disdainful smile on his face and said: "Human race is really the most worthless race in all of the ten thousand worlds and we devils will make sure to eliminate your very existence. In front of our devil cavalry, you are nothing more than a herd of lambs, all prepared to be slaughtered."

"Damn you, how dare you say such spiteful things to my disciples? It seems you and your stinking bugs really want to venture the depths of hell. I will gladly fulfill your wish and banish you to hell along with these insects."

"Yes, even the so-called devil cavalry of yours cannot defeat us."

The Old head stood up. Although his stature was skinny and his back was arched, still he grasped his sword and slashed it towards the specter.

"You still dare to raise your sword, seems like you really don't want to live." The specter sneered, "We have 100 methods to heal you, and you can even progress your cultivation by leaps and bounds as long as you are willing to join our side and become a devil slave."



"I am aged, but I have not lost my self-respect, ke ke." The Old head coughed a few times then said, "The human race has established itself in this world through countless tribulations and sufferings. There is nothing that can ever strike us down!"

An overwhelming amount of heroic aura overflowed out of his body and enveloped him completely.

"Those who will not surrender to us shall be slaughtered." The specter ordered callously as he stood tall and high, surrounded by his prestige as a devil.

"We will see that!" The Old head shot a fascinating Swordqi attack towards the spectre.

"Bang!" A terrifying sound resounded everywhere as if penetrating the sky. The chaotic Swordqi as if appeared to be cutting the world itself into two halves.

The Old head's attacks continued to become more and more horrifying. This rampaging sword attack was so insanely destructive that it made the specter retreat as far as possible to evade the attack. He just did not dare to face the Old head's sword attack.

Although it was clear that the Old head was now on the winning side of this battle, but the disciples of Yi Yuan School did not share even the tiniest bit of excitement. They all knew that the Old head was burning his own life force and irrespective of what the result would be, he would most likely.....

Some people were terrified of the thought that he wouldn't even survive till the end of the war.

The Old head did not even portray the slightest bit of hesitation and once again attacked, churning the entire sky with his martial attacks and marking the outbreak of a great battle's finale.

He knew that he didn't have much time and the rate at which the fight was consuming his energy was more than he could handle. In fact, even the specter knew that the Old head was approaching the complete exhaustion of his vitality.

"Don't you realize that you have come to fight an obsolete war?" Old head said lightly but his long sword did not have a moment to stop. It was unceasingly howling and releasing Swordqi across the skyline.

"You filthy old guy, you breathe greedily on a day to day basis to survive, I do not need to kill you because you will die on your own soon." The specter sneered and said.

"Despicable, shameless!"

"You are nothing in front of our Old head so shut your mouth, you filthy devil."

"Originally I wanted to see you die on your own, but since you say so, I will kill you with my own hands and also crush your pride in

the process. That will make you realize that devil race is the true ruler of the heavens and your human race is only suited to be our slaves." The specter said in a loud voice while his body was enveloped in a sea of moqi.

His devil spear started to rumble, summoning the ideal condition of chaotic devil laws as if restarting the age of chaos in this world.

The Old head rushed forward with his sword, slicing the life out of all things around. He was the strongest expert of Yi Yuan School and had achieved complete mastery over his sword skills through a comprehensive study. At this time, he finally used his sword intention on the specter.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

The Swordqi collided with the Spearqi and the resulting explosion spread across the sky. The battle between these two sage realm experts had finally started to get more and more intense.

"Today you will die." Lu Hongwei did not know how Ye Xiwen had affected his strength but his cultivation had reduced from single layer of half-step legendary realm to ordinary half-step legendary realm. However, he still did not consider Ye Xiwen as a worthy opponent.

"Since you wish to die, I will certainly help you." Ye Xiwen opened his eyes slowly. There was a divine golden radiance in his eyes, making him appear like a godly entity in the battlefield.

He then immediately used his golden claws to stop the incoming attack.

Lu Hongwei's Swordqi attack was easily grabbed and then extinguished by Ye Xiwen's golden claws.

"Last time, you were lucky enough to escape from the hands of Brother Qi. But this time, you will not be able to escape from me." Ye Xiwen smiled coldly and immediately summoned the Hanshan seal in the sky, aiming it directly at Lu Hongwei.

"You are courting death." Lu Hongwei yelled in anger. Last time, he had indeed suffered a severe wound at the hands of Qi Feifan and this was simply of great shame to him. And today, Ye Xiwen reminded him of this matter just to puncture his pride and provoke him. And it seemed like Ye Xiwen actually succeeded in his plan.

The devil sword held in Lu Hongwei's hand was exuding faint traces of moqi, and suddenly, the roars of devilish dragons filled the surroundings while a sword sliced through the sky. Even the earth shook under the influence of this sword attack.

"Bang!"

The shock waves created by this sword attack were so terrifying that they instantly annihilated several devils of Xiantian level that happened to be in the attack range.

"Clang!" The Swordlight shot up into the sky, formed a dense and rippling sword light, then condensed into a rain of arrows and were blasted towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen pressed the Hanshan Seal down and it instantly crushed this grand scale Swordqi attack.

"You are bold, human!" At this time, a sonic boom exploded in the sky and a big hand extended down from the sky to grab Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen had dared to rush in the midst of the devil cavalry which made him stand out as a unique entity, also turning him into a direct target.

The aura which was covering the big hand was terrifying and simply earth shattering. When it swept across, Ye Xiwen immediately sensed the strength of legendary realm from it.

It was the move of a peerless master of the legendary realm.

The devil soldiers were shivering after seeing the fearful power of this attack. An ordinary master of half-step legendary realm just couldn't achieve such a level of power.

Ye Xiwen was not a man who would sit still, he stuck out his

palms which immediately transformed into dragon claws and went forward to greet the incoming big devil hand.

"Bang!" The big hand the dragon claws collided in midair and mutually annihilated each other, ultimately transforming into a turbulent flow of Lingqi.

"Legendary devil!" The disciples of Yi Yuan School cried out in horror as they never expected that a legendary level expert would suddenly attack Ye Xiwen.

For these disciples, according to their understanding, an expert of the legendary realm was a great being and simply out of their comprehension. After all, even a senior disciple like Chu Jingcai had recently stepped into the legendary realm.

"Boom!"

As if a tsunami of energy greeted the scene and overwhelmed everyone.

"Why is a legendary devil suddenly daring to fight with me?" Ye Xiwen asked in a calm voice.

Everyone gawked when they heard what Ye Xiwen said. He basically provoked a legendary devil, despite being in truth realm himself.

Was Ye Xiwen actually provoking a legendary devil for a face to

face fight?

All the disciples froze on the spot and could not believe what they just heard and saw.

This was a legendary devil, a true legend.

"Boy, today will be marked as the day of your demise. I will kill you first then destroy your Yi Yuan School." The legendary level devil said while giving Ye Xiwen a cold and murderous look.

"Get out of my way, this is my enemy, I will be the one to who would take his life." Lu Hongwei roared.

"Humph, you are just a waste who cannot even cope with a trivial human of truth realm." The devil basically looked down upon the human race, and being a human being who had adopted devil ways, Lu Hongwei was no exception either.

## Chapter 284: Lu Hongwei Slaughtered

---

Lu Hongwei's complexion suddenly turned pale. His relationship with devils was not necessarily good. He had followed the path of devil worship which included practicing devil arts, ultimately turning him into a half human half devil hybrid. People like him were known as devil men.

These people were characteristically selfish, ruthless and evil, otherwise, would have never been tempted by devil powers. Those who lusted for devil powers were certainly not part of the good crop, but real devils were inherently evil and cunning. Was there really a scope for these two types of sinister factions to get along?

Although they had same interests at the moment, it did not mean that they were going to be on friendly terms in the future.

"Do you want to fight with me?" Lu Hongwei snarled.

"What's the point of fighting you, killing you shall be an effortless task and doesn't interest me at all." The devil said in a disrespectful manner.

"Do you want to die?" Lu Hongwei gritted his teeth and said.

"Do not fight among yourselves, come, both of you can come at me at once." Ye Xiwen mocked them and a terrifying aura rippled out of his body and spread in all directions. He was not at all intimidated even while facing two experts who were at a much higher level than him. Suddenly, a sword intention appeared in his



hand and began to compress and dilate the surrounding space. "You devils just look big and talk big, but when in an actual battle, you cower like ants in front of human powerhouses."

"Bullshit, you humans can just dream of defeating us devils in battle." The legendary level devil said in a proud voice. He did not want to team up with Lu Hongwei as suggested by Ye Xiwen.

"Prepare yourselves!" Ye Xiwen roared like a wild beast and his voice as if broke through the barrier of this world and echoed throughout the universe. The sword intention was instantly unleashed into the sky along with the ideal condition of coiling dragon palm that summoned a humongous coiling dragon in the sky. It was so huge that it seemed like even the sky wouldn't be able to contain its existence.

This was the kind of glorious existence that could make its way directly into the historical records. Everyone was shocked by the extent of power being displayed by Ye Xiwen. Everyone was looking towards the sky as their eyes were as if glued to the magnificent golden figure of Ye Xiwen who was floating above the coiling dragon like a furious god of war.

Ye Xiwen sneered and swept the rippling sword intention across the sky. Like a beam of fragmented yet interconnected rippling energy, it went forward at an incredibly fast pace. He had already reached such a high comprehension level of sword skill that he didn't actually need an actual sword to use sword attacks.

The sword intention as if disintegrated the air on the molecular level and went straight towards the legendary level devil expert.

"Boom!" He tried to block the attack but was directly sent flying far away.

Only now did he realize his mistake of underestimating Ye Xiwen and a look of terror dominated his face.

Ye Xiwen's stalwart figure was wrapped in a dense golden cloak of divine light.

His enormous power and frightening attacks immediately boosted the morale of Yi Yuan disciples, but they also felt a little strange. How in the world was Ye Xiwen able to do all this? He was just an expert of Complete Truth realm but his attacks were somehow pushing back a legendary expert. This was simply unrealistic!

However, the disciples didn't seem to notice one thing that was picked up well by the legendary devil's senses. He sensed a strange and horrifying aura emanating from Ye Xiwen's body. He felt like facing a mythical being from ancient times. In fact, just by standing in Ye Xiwen's presence, he felt like his mind and soul were being dominated. He also felt a rogue idea capturing his mind as if telling him of his inferior existence in front of the mighty being that standing before him.

An ominous coercion tightly enveloped him and made his cultivation to fall all the way to half-step legendary realm. Actually, a major part of his power and energy were used up in combating this ominous coercion, otherwise, he wouldn't have

been pushed back by the sword attack.

"I guess, now I have the required qualifications to fight the two of you at the same time, correct?" Ye Xiwen said in an indifferent tone but it was filled with a kind of invincible confidence.

"You are courting death!" The legendary level devil and Lu Hongwei ultimately decided to join forces and jointly issued an attack on Ye Xiwen, immediately tearing the space at several places. It seemed as if numerous stars were falling from the sky and were aimed at Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen unleashed a second sword strike, filling the entire sky with golden energy. For a moment, it seemed like the entire world was made up of gold, but the very next moment, the golden energy exploded and suppressed the very stability of this world, crushing everything in the range.

Ye Xiwen was like the sword god of this world because all sword laws were under his control.

"Boom!" The two attacks collided and resulting exploded as if resembled the explosion of a star.

The fight in the sky had entered a superheated phase while the three half-step legendary experts were fiercely clashing with each other. Ye Xiwen was keeping a strategic position in the sky so that the complementary of his attacks could kill as many devil soldiers as possible.

His sword intention swayed in his hands as he said in a cold voice: "Brace yourselves."

The sword intention crawled out of his hands and went towards both Lu Hongwei and the legendary devil.

The legendary devil also took out his spear and shot a terrible spear attack, consisting of dreadful Spearqi fluctuations, towards the incoming sword intention attack. The two attacks clashed in the sky and led to a massive explosion.

"Boom!" This was an earth-shattering collision and swept off endless shock waves in all directions. The true power of the legendary devil revealed itself just now. Even though a major part of his power was being suppressed by Tianyuan mirror's coercion, the quality of his energy was still superior to that of an expert of half-step legendary realm.

But at this time, Lu Hongwei's devil sword released vibrating moqi that collided with Ye Xiwen's sword intention and blocked it in its way.

"Boom!"

The enormous destructive power contained in this blast swept all around and the three experts backed off. No one dared to go near the aftermath of this explosion.

Ye Xiwen went a few steps back before stopping in midair, then

immediately unleashed another sword intention towards the two experts. However, this time, the sword intention was massive and proceeded forward wantonly, destroying everything in its way, evaporating mountains and wiping out forests in a blink of an eye. While at the same time, Lu Hongwei and the legendary devil collaborated and unleashed their best attacks.

"Bang!"

The pure power of this collision invoked tremors all over and bulldozed everything in the range.

The moqi contained in the Spearqi attack left a terrible wound on Ye Xiwen's body. The blood started to ooze out of this wound and appeared just like a fountain of blood.

However, the legendary devil received a much terrible wound as the sword intention directly pierced through his body, leaving a large hole in his abdomen. Lu Hongwei was also in a critical condition but not as severe as the legendary devil because a large percentage of the blast was blocked by the legendary devil, shielding Lu Hongwei in the process. Therefore, he only received flesh wounds.

An ice-cold look appeared on the legendary devil's face, but immediately, moqi quickly wrapped his wound and it started to heal at a fast pace.

A devil's restoration ability could really leave a human expert flabbergasted.

The legendary devil's eyes were bloodshot and full of killing intention. His sword-like sharp eyes were stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen as if trying to kill him with the stare itself.

His killing intention was the real deal.

Lu Hongwei was experiencing an extreme shortness of breath. He had once lost to Qi Feifan but at least he was considered the leader of the younger generation in Great Yue State. However, if he lost to a 20-year-old youngster like Ye Xiwen, then wouldn't it leave a stain on his reputation forever?

He had been practicing devil arts consistently for decades, then how were these ordinary humans surpassing him one after another!

However, he was shocked once again when he saw Ye Xiwen's wound healing at an incredibly fast speed and completely restoring itself in a blink of an eye. When compared to Ye Xiwen's regeneration ability, the legendary devil's restoration ability was literally garbage.

The legendary devil was frustrated and just didn't want to accept what he saw just now. How could these inferior humans have such outstanding regeneration ability? Of course, he knew that Ye Xiwen must have practiced some kind of secret technique, but that didn't change the fact that he was just a human being.

His frustration was understandable; after all, he had come to this

world to massacre human being by crushing them like ants. He never thought of the possibility of bumping into a monstrosity in human form.

"Die!" Both Lu Hongwei and the legendary devil were raging to kill Ye Xiwen and once again timed their attacks to congeal a massive moqi-based attack.

"Now that you devils have already come into our territory, don't even think about going back alive." Ye Xiwen sneered.

The whole sky was torn open by a divine golden sword intention as it instantly annihilated the enemy's joint offensive.

"Puchi!" A terrible wound was torn open in the legendary devil's body, his blood splattered and the broken bone fragments were sent flying.

Ye Xiwen had used his strongest sword attack so the outcome was not surprising!

His tyrannical imposing aura swept off everywhere.

Everyone gawked at this scene because they just couldn't believe an expert of Complete Truth realm could actually fight with an expert of half-step legendary realm and the other of the legendary first stage. Not to mention, Ye Xiwen was single-handedly pushing them back and it seemed as if he was not even trying.

How was this possible?

However, the reason and explanation didn't matter now as the Yi Yuan crowd kept on cheering for Ye Xiwen, the guy who gave them immense confidence and the will to fight back.

"Such a fearful human, I cannot let him live." A killing intention flashed in the eyes of the legendary devil. He knew that Ye Xiwen must not be allowed to live and grow; otherwise, he would certainly become a huge threat to their cause.

The three experts again clashed in the sky and started to go all out.

Ye Xiwen just wouldn't fall under the wind no matter how much they tried.

"Clang!"

Ye Xiwen's sword intention once again instantly swept across the sky and wreaked havoc everywhere.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"



Ye Xiwen's changed his strategy and this time unleashed a smaller yet faster Swordqi attack towards the legendary devil.

"Boom!" The devil used his spear to block it but some sections of Swordqi were deflected towards him from the sides and hit him, making him spout a mouthful of blood due to the impact.

At this time, Lu Hongwei took advantage of the opportunity and launched a long ranged attack at Ye Xiwen in the form of dazzling shooting stars made up of Swordqi.

The legendary devil ignored his own injuries because he didn't have enough time to stop for healing them. He must team up with Lu Hongwei and time his attacks perfectly to kill Ye Xiwen. He would worry about his pride later, but first, he must eliminate at all costs.

His battle strategy was dependent on the assumption that Lu Hongwei would have to play the role of bait.

However, how could Ye Xiwen not know about their strategy?

He had already guessed what they were planning to do and sneered. Right now, his physical condition was at its peak, thanks to phoenix regeneration while the other two were seriously injured and almost exhausted.

He unleashed his sword intention attack to tackle the incoming shooting stars.

However, before the enemy could attack again, he immediately summoned Hanshan seal in the sky. It transformed into a humongous sierra and smashed down.

"Bang!" Lu Hongwei collided with Hanshan sierra and was sent flying far away ejecting blood from his mouth and then fell to the ground. He glared at the legendary devil that actually used him as a shield to escape from Hanshan attack.

The legendary devil looked coldly at Lu Hongwei. Deep in his heart, he simply looked down on humans and did not think that doing something like this was wrong. To him, human beings were born to serve devil race as slaves!

But before he could have fun seeing Lu Hongwei in such a sorry state, Ye Xiwen shot his sword intention attack directly towards him. According to Ye Xiwen's battle strategy, the legendary devil was more dangerous than Lu Hongwei and must be eliminated first.

Ye Xiwen's attack was finally launched.

The legendary devil never expected to be attacked like this and his carelessness caused his demise. The sword intention punctured the energy barrier protecting his body, then further pierced into his body and destroyed his heart, ripping a hole in his chest.

On his chest ripped a big hole.

The legendary devil wanted to struggle, but suddenly, a Hanshan seal appeared in the sky and instantly smashed him into ground, turning his body into meat patty.

Lu Hongwei saw the pitiful demise of the legendary devil and started to laugh like a madman. Ye Xiwen was not planning to let him off and immediately released a Swordlight attack that went across the sky and chopped Lu Hongwei into pieces.

Although it seemed like a long story, in fact, all this happened in a matter of several breaths. The spectacular battle between the Old head and the spectre was soon going to enter the final phase.

## Chapter 285: Died In War

---

The Old head and the Specter were fighting furiously to decide the outcome of the battle. The Old head was exceptional, he used simple sword techniques but they were filled with immense power. The strike of the sword filled the air with Swordqi which cracked open a massive void.

The Specter roared and a powerful dragon shot out from his devil spear. It engaged with the Old head and started fighting with him viciously. The fight between these two experts was so violent that everyone feared it would cause colossal damage to the sect. Even though the eyesight of the Old head was weak, he had a strong tactical understanding about how to fight high up in the sky.

At that instant, Ye Xiwen caught a glimpse of the fight and saw that the Old head was struggling and had already spent most of his life force. He was losing his vision and also experiencing shortness of breath. It seemed that he would be defeated senseless any moment now.

Ye Xiwen was worried because the spectre was getting stronger. If the Old head was defeated then everyone underneath would have to face the wrath of the spectre and he would wipe out Yi Yuan School in no time.

A master in the sage realm was considered to be exceptionally strong. A legendary realm expert was enough to cause wreak havoc in the ten countries of the Southeast region, but a sage expert was strong enough to rule over the entire Southeast region.

Just one sage realm expert was sufficient to not just lead an entire sect, but also to dominate over the ten countries of the Southeast region, let alone a sect like Yi Yuan School.

However, Ye Xiwen did not know about any other sage level existence in the Yi Yuan School. There was only one sage expert, the Old head and everyone was convinced of his demise.

However, the presence of the Old head was radiant and scared the Specter. He was pushing the battle to the limit so as to quickly burn up the life force of the Old head. But it was remarkable how the Old head had lived for 1000 years.

The Old head was Yi Yuan School's final trump card and he was certainly not just an ordinary deterrent.

"Bang!" Ye Xiwen summoned the Hanshan seal which got bigger and bigger in the sky and then, slammed it down instantly on the devil cavalries, causing severe casualties.

Devil experts were ignoring Ye Xiwen. They did not want to engage in a fight with him. They had witnessed how he had slaughtered Lu Hongwei and the legendary realm devil. They thought that they didn't have enough strength to go against Ye Xiwen. They were not aware of the role of Tianyuan mirror in the demise of Lu Hongwei and the legendary devil.

They were inherently scared of Ye Xiwen, mostly due to the influence of Tianyuan mirror which was associated with his aura. Therefore, they did not dare to approach him.

Right now, Ye Xiwen's focus was concentrated on the battle between the two sage realm experts.

"Today you will die old man!" The spectre laughed wildly and ten thousand poisonous snakes exploded out from his spear. Each snake was covered in venom which corroded the atmosphere. A peculiar feeling of terror spread among the spectators.

Old head's expression did not change. He coughed out blood once, and then charged towards the spectre. His sword movements were quick and flared up the whole sky. Old head's sword was swift enough to break through the ten thousand sword laws of the world.

"Boom!"

The Old head's sword attack seemed mediocre but suddenly it burst out into a vibrant light which was difficult to look at. It was actually massive enough to sweep off everything around. It instantly chopped off the spectre's spear attack.

The spectre's expression changed, he was shocked after witnessing the Old head's sudden sword attack.

"Shua!"

Old head's sword attack was bursting with terror and instantly collided with the spectre's spear attack.

The sword attack was much more powerful and swift and ultimately deflected the spear attack.

However, the swift sword attack didn't stop there and moved forward. The very next instant, it sliced right through the spectre's neck.

"How is this possible?" A look of disbelief appeared in the spectre's eyes.

"Boom!" The spectre's tall body collapsed. The Old head descended from the sky carrying the spectre's head in one hand. But Ye Xiwen noticed that his face had started to wither and his skin became dry like an old bark. He was losing his vitality; even his hands and feet were trembling.

The disciples of the Yi Yuan School were crying because they could see that the Old head had arrived at the end of his life.

"Comprehensive counterattack!" The elders, the top leaders and the present sect-head of Yi Yuan School, Wu Potian, immediately came out from the depths of Yi Yuan School and roared. Wu Potian was covered in blood while the other experts had also suffered grave injuries. One of them was missing an arm and was also losing a lot of blood.

All these experts had experienced tough battles and now that the enemy sage expert had been beheaded, they finally made an appearance to make use of the sudden boost in morale to lead the

disciples into a final comprehensive counterattack. The death of the spectre created uproar amongst the devil soldiers. They never thought that the Old head would be powerful enough to defeat the spectre.

There was a sudden decline in their will to fight any longer and began to flee through the crack in the space.

Yi Yuan disciples were exhilarated and there occurred a sudden boost in their morale.

"Teacher!" Wu Potian saw the Old head, fell to his knees and burst into tears. He reminisced about his childhood times with the Old head when he used to be just a student. It was because of the Old head that his progress had increased by leaps and bounds, ultimately helping him become the sect head of Yi Yuan School. He couldn't suppress his emotions after seeing this plight of the Old head.

Everyone was in tears; after all, the Old head had been looking after them for such a long time. Many of the top leaders were aware of the majestic powers of the Old head but the disciples were never his students and only knew about his tyrannical existence.

In their hearts, the Old head held a higher prestige than the founder of Yi Yuan School.

"Stupid Son!" The Old head landed on top of a mountain peak and put down the spectre's head. Some people came forward to receive the spectre's head because it was a priceless treasure and could



help in excelling a fearful magical weapon.

The Old head sighed saying, "Life is supposed to start with birth and end with death, what is important is to live the way you want and to do what you want. However, we martial artists strive to achieve a prestigious title. Look at me, I should have died sooner, but I lived for more than one thousand years. Even though I have acquired this much, it is still nothing."

"Old head, you cannot die, you cannot leave Yi Yuan School!" Wu Potian burst into tears. It was very unlikely of a man to cry like this, but given the situation it was acceptable and no one would judge him for that. Many of the disciples were also crying.

Old head shook his head and said: "Yi Yuan School's strength has made me very proud. I am convinced that it has a strong generation of disciples."

Old head's aura became increasingly weak.

He recalled the time when he was just an ordinary true disciple. But once upon a time, Yi Yuan School was in an emergency when a large of experts died in a treasure hunt, he pushed himself to the limit and came to the front of the stage to lead the weakened sect, all the way to its current glory.

His peaceful life was disrupted by that.

In that era of turmoil, expeditions, deadly battles, wars, he

participated in all to restore the status of Yi Yuan School and led it back on the right path. However, he lost too much and too many in the process.

Loved ones, fellow brothers, teachers, spouse, he outlived all of them and lived his way to the current date.

This was a silent departure, his frail body instantly turned into mist and dust and vanished.

In front of everyone, the Old head died respectfully in a sitting posture!

Everyone stopped crying but they were full of remorse after seeing the Old head's demise. At that instant, Wu Potian stood up and roared angrily: "Kill all these devil bastards, make them pay the price!"

Ye Xiwen also controlled his emotions and restrained his heavy heart; after all, the Old head had died peacefully in a sitting posture and that too out of his own will. He had never met the Old head, however, he did harbour immense amount of respect for him.

Ye Xiwen, the wolf cub and Ye Shu flew back to the Qianyu peak [flying war-fortress] where the usual peaceful paradise-like atmosphere was now replaced with a miserable one. All sorts of attack-based laws and Zhen circles were activated and working non-stop. Ye Xiwen felt like he had entered a war machine.

He immediately assumed command while it was needless to say that the true power of Qianyu peak was unleashed instantly. Like a domineering flying war machine, it flew forward while eradicating the devil soldiers in its way. A legendary level devil tried to stop the war-fortress but was directly crushed to death by the combined attacks of Ye Xiwen and Qianyu peak.

"Kill them all, destroy the devil lair!" Ye Xiwen sat well above the seat of honor and shouted like a true commander.

## Chapter 286: Aftermath

---

The devil forces were trying to escape from the cracks in space. All the legendary experts were rushing to slaughter them, especially Wu Potian and his subordinates. He had just experienced the pain of the loss of his mentor and was not able to resist the grief. He wanted to vent out all his anger, so he rushed to kill the devil forces.

Wu Potian looked like a deity who had descended into this world with a terrifying aura. The devil forces did not have anyone who could stop him except the spectre but he was already dead. Wu Potian was beaming with anger because the devil forces had dared to attack his home and the loss he had to suffer was grave.

Ye Xiwen crashed into space along with Qianyu Peak. He was leading the way while others were following him. Qianyu Peak was a specially designed floating war-fortress that was only given to the pro-disciples and was much superior to ordinary floating peaks. Not even the attacks of a legendary realm expert could bring it down. Not to mention it was not possible to bring down Qianyu Peak so easily because Ye Xiwen was there to guard it. The combined power of Ye Xiwen and Qianyu Peak was enormous and disastrous for anyone or anything that stood in their way. The importance of Qianyu Peak could be determined from the fact that in over a thousand years of history, Yi Yuan School was able to accumulate not more than ten floating war-fortresses. And only the pro-disciples were eligible to have their own floating war-fortresses. Anyway, there were never too many pro-disciples to surpass the number of available fortresses.

One must know that building such a fortress was much more

difficult compared to training disciples of similar strength since the cost of the resources required was almost ten times more.

These war fortresses were very significant during such attacks and were made to defend the sect only during such critical times. During the attack, the Taizhong elders were busy activating these war-fortresses, but right now, they were relying on the extreme destructive power of the war-fortresses to wipe out the devil forces.

Ye Xiwen issued an order and the Qianyu Peak rushed forward to exterminate the remaining devil soldiers.

He chased the devils into the space crack and saw that at the other end of the crack, there was a valley. It was spread in several thousand square kilometers, although he was not sure where this place was located in his world, he was certain that they had found the devil's lair.

Many devil soldiers were boiling with excitement after seeing the invaders in their lair. Several devil experts ascended to attack them along with many War Monsters.

The Qianyu Peak was surrounded by a Lingqi barrier which was protecting it, even though the firepower was consuming way too much energy from the spiritual arteries. The Devil base was also surviving on similar veins, which were present underneath the valley. It made the devil war machines much powerful and easy to use, but they still could not rival the resources of Yi Yuan School.

"Bang!" The devil forces attacked the Qianyu Peak and it vibrated due to the impact caused by a barrage of attacks.

Ye Xiwen issued an order "Forward" and the Qianyu Peak crashed into the valley, various attack-based laws and Zhen circles were activated, all sorts of martial attacks were launched. Everything that came in its way was destroyed while the other floating Peaks also arrived in abundance and started following the lead of Qianyu Peak.

Wu Potian and several other elders, followed by the war fortresses, rushed forward to attack the devil camps. Numerous devil soldiers could not resist the attack and were killed instantly.

"Who is there?" There was a mighty roar from the depths of the valley and a terrifying claw appeared from the sky. It grabbed one of the floating peaks and crushed it. The floating peak exploded and many disciples were killed at once.

"Humph!" Wu Potian growled and swayed his sword. It was clear that his sword technique was somewhat similar to the Old head. Even though it was not that swift and potent, however, his Swordqi attack seemed powerful enough to split the world.

Wu Potian swayed his sword, and in a flash, dissected the devil claw in the sky. The Swordqi was so massive that it created a deep ditch in the valley, killing unknown numbers of devil soldiers in one fell swoop.

"Aaah!" A sharp scream resounded in the sky and a figure fell

from the void.

"Shua!" Wu Potian made a final sword strike and created a void with his might. A massive blood fog surrounded the falling figure. He was merciless with the sword because in his heart he was angry and this was the only way to vent it.

The disciples were excited after witnessing this and went all out. They rushed to exterminate the Bai Mojiao followers. The Bai Mojiao followers were shocked and did not have the strength to retaliate. All of them were massacred by the angry disciples of Yi Yuan School under the leadership of Wu Potian.

After almost half a day, the one-sided massacre finally ended. The Bai Mojiao followers had nowhere to hide. Their sage realm devil expert, who was supposed to guide them, was also dead. In the end, Yi Yuan School completely eradicated the devil's lair.

Yi Yuan School's expedition shocked the entire Great Yue State. Although it had to suffer heavy losses, everyone got to know that both sides lost their sage realm experts and made them feel somewhat relieved. After all, the very existence of a sage realm expert had a strategic suppression effect on the entire Great Yue State.

However, this was certainly not good news for Yi Yuan School.

By this expedition conducted by Yi Yuan School, the Bai Mojiao organization suffered a head-on blow and was exterminated to such an extent that it would never be able to recover from this.

The losses suffered by Yi Yuan School were less compared to the devil forces. One-third of the disciples of Yi Yuan School were killed and hundreds were injured. Although there were several hundred true disciples in the sect, almost a hundred were killed and were severely injured in the battle. Over one-third of the elders also lost their lives while protecting the disciples in the battle.

Although it did seem like the elders appeared during the end of the fight, it was not true. In fact, they were fighting the devil forces that had infiltrated the inner parts of the sect.

This time, Yi Yuan School suffered heavy losses by losing one-third of their nurtured and cultured disciples. However, it couldn't be considered as a miserable loss because this was the last time anyone would dare to attack Yi Yuan School. After all, if they could survive an attack of such huge scale then could literally survive anything.

Yi Yuan School was attacked brutally but it survived and was not destroyed. It had been standing tall for thousands of years and with their hidden techniques and secret strength, who could dare to drown them?

This victory of Yi Yuan School would be recorded in the history of Great Yue State.

No one thought that Yi Yuan School would fall down so easily, but no one either thought that they would come out of it so



victoriously either. Yi Yuan School organized a huge memorial service for the fallen and invited many influential figures. A memorial service was conducted specially for the Old head.

The Old head lived for 1000 years before dying in the most respectable and honorable manner. All the disciples and the influential figures that had come to pay homage were younger and did not know him personally, but they held high regard for the Old head. The Old head had fought bravely and saved Yi Yuan School from a sage realm devil, ultimately ending his life in a sitting posture [is considered a sacred practice in Buddhism].

If the Old head had not stopped the spectre then he would have wiped off Yi Yuan School and conquered the entire Great Yue State.

On top of a mountain peak that was located in Yi Yuan School's territory, two figures were standing tall and comfortably in the spring breeze.

Ye Xiwen was looking over the school from the mountain peak, the reconstruction work of Yi Yuan School was in full swing.

"Are you planning to go to TMU?" Ye Xiwen asked the young guy who was standing next to him. He was the strongest disciple in the younger generation of Yuncheng sect named Jian Wuchen. He had come to pay homage to the Old head as a representative from Yuncheng.

Ye Xiwen looked at him in a somewhat strange manner. One

must know that Jian Wuchen was also in Complete Truth realm like Ye Xiwen. He was also not far from breaking into the half-step legendary realm.

Going to TMU and having such a cultivation level was not really an issue. Although it was indeed said that true disciples could at most become janitor disciples after joining TMU, exceptionally talented and young disciples like Jian Wuchen were bound to become outer disciples at the least.

Jian Wuchen earlier belonged to a sword-slave clan but his status had now risen.

Ye Xiwen knew about the existence of the so-called sword-slaves of Yuncheng Sect. In addition, he also knew how the young and talented disciples were forcefully made to acquire the status of sword-slave and were trained intensely to serve the imperial clan. However, making good use of such an opportunity even as a sword-slave and after being trained in the most low-level martial arts, Jian Wuchen still rushed all the way to the top of Yuncheng's younger generation and became a legend over there.

It could be said that the eighth prince and several other people were in awe after seeing Jian Wuchen's potential; after all, he was the only noteworthy sword genius in the younger generation of Yuncheng. Others were just unable to challenge his status. His future prospects were also boundless. Ye Xiwen believed that Jian Wuchen would manage to do well in TMU as well.

Of course, there used to a connection between him and the eighth prince that had forced him to become Ye Xiwen's enemy back then

but Ye Xiwen did not hold it against him.

Mu Ling had also evaluated him before, saying that Jian Wuchen's sword skills were purer compared to his own. Mu Ling was quite impressed and that was the reason why he had spared Jian Wuchen's life on the demon island.

Such a person should definitely be a part of the first batch of TMU.

Jian Wuchen replied with an indifferent expression on his face: "Those youngsters died because of me. I led them to their deaths."

Ye Xiwen immediately understood what Jian Wuchen was referring to. The casualties that occurred on the demon island had deeply affected him and he felt responsible for the deaths of his juniors.

"But now that everything is over, it does not matter anymore. Actually it has opened up a path for me and my way is now the way of the sword!"

Ye Xiwen kind of understood that Jian Wuchen was also probably going to participate in the assessment.

"That's right, I am going to participate in TMU's assessment, let's go together."

## Chapter 287: Sets Out On A Journey

---

Ye Xiwen was looking at the construction work going on in Yi Yuan School, then shortly decided to embark on a journey to TMU. In about a year, the TMU's assessment was about to take place in True Martial City. TMU was located in True Martial City which was the first human city to be recorded in the history of Zhen Wu Jie. It was one of the grand divine cities of Zhen Wu Jie and didn't belong to any influence. It was governed solely by TMU.

Within ten days, they reached Shun'an Prefecture, which was located on the bordering region between the Ming Empire and the Southeast region.

The Ming Empire shared its border with the southeast region, which was the longest border that crossed all ten countries of the southeast region. The Great Yue State was one of them.

Ming Empire was spread massively, covering a vast expanse of land. It was larger than the combined ten countries of the southeast region and was just one of the several empires located in the southern region.

Two figures entered the city slowly, although they were not dressed in traditional clothing of Ming Empire, no one bothered to care because Shun'an prefecture was located in the border area of Ming Empire and was always visited by outsiders.

One of the two men was dressed in black and carrying a blade while the other one was carrying a long sword and there was an icy

cold look in his eyes. These two figures belonged to Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen.

Ye Xiwen was being followed by a dashing demon beast that had a shining black body. It was none other than the wolf cub who seemed to have grown up to 1-meter height in the last few months, reaching up till Ye Xiwen's waist.

"Gee, there are so many people here. Out of all the races living in the ten thousand worlds, the human race has the highest breeding capacity. They breed like rabbits....." The wolf cub could not help but express his admiration.

Before he could finish, Ye Xiwen slapped him lightly and said: "Stop acting like a country bumpkin, you will make us lose our faces in a foreign land."

The population was so much more in Zhen Wu Jie compared to his past life on the Earth. In fact, China was only half the size of the Great Yue State and Eurasia was only half the size of Ming Empire, not to mention it was still not the largest empire in this world.

The people on the streets were shocked when they saw the wolf cub, not because they had never seen a demon beast walking peacefully in the city, but because they saw a small wolf having a conversation like human beings. It was a well-known fact that it was extremely difficult for the demon beasts to acquire wisdom, let alone acquiring enough wisdom to talk like humans.

Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen were looking for a hotel to rest for some time. They still had plenty of time and were not worried.

Not far from them, there were several people talking among themselves.

"TMU opens its doors once in a hundred years to recruit experts. And that time has finally arrived!"

"Yes, hey, you know, since our Shun'an prefecture is situated at the border of the southeast region, so every time a large number of experts from the southeast region pass through here to participate in TMU recruitment."

"They are the weak ones, the ones who got left out. There are the ones who get directly recruited by the representatives and the leftovers go to TMU for assessment. They are nothing compared to our experts in the Ming Empire as only one of our experts is enough to cause wreak havoc in the southeast region.

Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen were not pleased when they heard this because they both belonged to the southeast region. Although the southeast region was divided into ten countries, the insult was directed at both of them.

"Southeast region is a small influence and sends worthless participants in the assessment especially the experts of their younger generation are mediocre and get wrecked by our experts every time."

"Yes ah, the contest between the young experts is very intense, but it is also worth seeing. If it was me and had the opportunity to be at TMU, I would have never missed it. The experts, who go to TMU, get to assess their own strength, and also get a chance to kick some serious asses!"

"TMU is the topmost university in the southern region and its recruitment process is very grueling as they depend purely on talent and strength. However, there is no age limit to participate, even if a participant is 100-year-old or 200-year-old. The accumulation of these older experts is profound compared to a 50-year-old participant. Although the accumulation of some comparatively younger experts, let's say under the age of 50 years, who have already stepped into half-step legendary or legendary realm is not profound, they are still better than a 100-year-old expert of the same level. But even this much is not enough to win a seat in TMU!"

"Those experts who are ambitious and want to reach the peak of martial arts, they not only have to beat their peers but also have to trample the older experts. But the experts who are more than 100 years old are generally in the third or fourth stage of half-step legendary realm. They are very powerful and experienced; hence there would be few 50-years-old or lesser experts who would be at the same level. And even then, they would need to have multiple breakthroughs first, in order to defeat the older experts. Under normal circumstances, having multiple breakthroughs in such less time is impossible. Not to mention, there already are countless powerhouses in TMU, increasing the competition many folds afterward."

When Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen heard this, their expressions

suddenly changed. Ye Xiwen had not expected the assessment to be so tough. Originally he knew that the road would be difficult to tread but he had underestimated it. He thought that the representatives would have already picked the worthy ones, like Qi Feifan, and the remaining experts coming to the assessment would not be that skillful, but he was wrong.

Ye Xiwen was not much interested in TMU, all he cared about increasing his strength and stepping into the legendary realm by passing various trials.

At such a young age, if he was able to step into the legendary realm, then no matter where he was, this would certify him as a genius and living legend. However, he never considered fighting against much older experts who might be on the fourth or fifth stage of half-step legendary realm.

But now he did not have time to think about those who were far above him, this trip to TMU was not going to be easy as he had expected. But he would certainly get to fight with talented young experts around his own age.

He might get to experience startling heavenly collisions in the near future.

But there was a possibility that things could take a cruel turn. These ambitious young masters would do anything to beat all the peers and establish their prestige in the foreign land.

Ye Xiwen was a little alarmed but mostly calm after he put



together all the facts. However, Jian Wuchen was very much excited; he wanted to defeat more and more powerful opponents so that he could prove himself as a true sword master.

"Hey, this time our Shun'an prefecture's Ominous Wolf duo is also embarking on a journey to TMU. I must warn our fellow brothers from the southeast region that they shouldn't provoke the bloodthirsty Ominous Wolf duo, otherwise, they will witness massacre, ha ha ha ha. Anyway, only a few people have come from the southeast region and should consider themselves as terminated already."

"Ominous Wolf? Look, they are from your clan." Ye Xiwen said to the wolf cub jokingly.

"Humph! They are definitely from some bullshit clan." The wolf cub replied.

"They are really arrogant!" Jian Wuchen said while his face revealed a slight trace of anger. Being a sword master, there were very few things that affected his composure and being looked down upon was one of them.

"Just ignore them; we don't have to lower ourselves to their level." Ye Xiwen replied calmly. Although these people were not weak, almost all of them were at the fifth or sixth stage of truth realm, but they were nothing in front of Ye Xiwen. He could crush them all in one fell swoop.

"Indeed, Indeed!" The wolf cub yawned and said, "They are

nothing more than dried bones in burial mound. Anyways, why hasn't the food been served yet?"

The wolf cub instantly went back to showing his real freeloading colours!

"You all are way too arrogant! Don't you dare cross the line, okay?" A person from the back stood up and spoke. Looking at his appearance it was easy to make out that he was from the southeast region. "Your Ming Empire is indeed very powerful but do you really think that the ten countries of the southeast region are run by weak lambs? Don't you forget that this is just a prefecture, not a land of geniuses? Your plan of defeating us is nothing more than wishful thinking, understood?"

## Chapter 288: Long Time No See, Liu Yueru

---

"Well, thank you, thank you very much. No really, this is actually the first time I heard about your southeast region and its so-called glory." At this time, a young guy stepped out from the group of several young men. He stuck out his palm and instantly shoved it against the chest of the other guy from southeast region.

The guy from southeast region did not even get a chance to react; he just did not stand a chance in front of his opponent who was at truth eighth stage.

"Bang!" The young guy was sent flying across the inn. This palm move was meant to be an instant killer attack and directly punctured his core arteries, killing him right on the spot.

"Humph, he was a shortsighted person and so full of himself, but look what happened to him in the end. I guess he thought he was still in his so-called southeast region?" The young man said disdainfully.

"Qiu Xinzhi, you have really grown stronger, gee, why don't you teach these southeastern experts a lesson today? We don't want them wandering around in our territory while bragging about themselves." A young expert said in an instigating manner.

"You are going too far!" A loud shout sounded from the corner of the room. Ye Xiwen turned back and saw a group of six southeastern experts. He actually recognized the two seemingly leaders of this group, namely [Liu Yueru and Xiao Zhen](#).

Ye Xiwen once joined a mercenary group on the demon island. Liu Yueru and Xiao Zhen were the leaders of that group. However, Xiao Zhen and Ye Xiwen had a fierce battle later on, after which, Ye Xiwen had left the group.

Later on, Liu Yueru joined Ji Moon's group and became her subordinate. When Ye Xiwen helped Ji Moon and her girls in fighting with hairy zombies, Ji Moon offered Ye Xiwen to join her group but he refused. At that time, both Liu Yueru and Ji Moon had apologized to Ye Xiwen, requesting him to forget previous grudges.)

It seemed like Liu Yueru had chosen to walk down this thorny path!

In fact, there was no one who wouldn't want to walk down this thorny road of blood and battle to gain reputation by defeating powerful peers and competing with continent's topmost geniuses. Only the most competent ones got a chance to enter TMU.

Xiao Zhen stood up as he was unable to bear the provocation intended by the young experts of Shun'an prefecture.

"Xiao true, don't be impulsive!" Liu Yueru frowned and said.

"I cannot stand these arrogant people. How dare they look down on the ten countries of the southeast region!" Xiao Zhen said furiously as he was genuinely provoked and wasn't able to bear such an insult.

"If I don't kill that guy, the hate in my heart will not disappear." Xiao Zhen said.

Qiu Xinzhi sneered while staring at Xiao Zhen then said: "You want to kill me? Utter nonsense."

"Since you look down upon us, fight me and I will prove you wrong!" Xiao Zhen said in a cold voice and waved his sword.

After the demon island incident, Xiao Zhen's strength had no small improvement. He was at the eighth stage of truth realm right now which was great considering his young age.

"I'll kill you." Qiu Xinzhi took just a step and his figure suddenly disappeared from the spot where he was standing, leaving only an afterimage behind. And the very next instant, a dazzling Bladelight appeared out of nowhere and rushed towards Xiao Zhen.

"Humph!" Xiao Zhen attacked decisively and shot rays of Swordlight towards the incoming Bladelight attack.

The collision that occurred was destructive and had a severe impact on the inn. The two could not completely go out inside the inn so they flew outside.

They went high in the sky and collided severely. At the same time, Liu Yueru, her group and several other experts followed after them. Even Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen went outside to watch the

battle.

The collisions between Bladeqi and Swordqi were causing explosions and terrifying flashes of light, which soon attracted the attention of many people.

The long blade in Qiu Xinzhi's hands released a monstrous and fierce wolf that jumped forward at a lightning speed.

Xiao Zhen hastily protected himself with a barrier of Swordlight. His whole body was covered in cold sweat because he felt exhausted in merely blocking one attack. Qiu Xinzhi was not even a top expert of Ming Empire but it had still been so difficult to deal with him.

A serious expression appeared on Xiao Zhen's face because if he failed to beat the man in front of him then there was no way he was going to last in TMU's assessment.

"Who are these two? One seems to have arrived from the southeast region."

"This is not the first time something like this is happening. Every time TMU opens its doors, battles like this take place all the time, basically to prove who is better."

"The other guy is Qiu Xinzhi, a rare genius of our Shun'an prefecture; moreover he is the younger brother of Qiu Langgeng, one of the two members of ominous wolf duo."

The spectators were talking among themselves and seemed very experienced. They had seen such battles not once or twice, but most of the times, they had witnessed the defeat of southeastern experts.

"The wolf bites the tiger!" Qiu Xinzhi suddenly congealed a fierce wolf made up of Zhen Yuan. The wolf roared and rushed towards Xiao Zhen to tear him apart.

Xiao Zhen retreated again and again and was trying to stay away from the wolf while charging up his Swordlight attack.

"Ha ha ha, is this a so-called southeastern genius? I see nothing but a loser who is about to die!" Qiu Xinzhi's supporters started laughing and mocking the experts from the southeast region.

Jian Wucheng shook his head and said: "Xiao Zhen is indeed a talented guy but he lacks inheritance."

Ye Xiwen nodded. There truly was some disparity between the geniuses of the southeastern region and Ming Empire. Although there was amazing talent in the southeastern region but the experts lacked inheritance [heritage] that was actually abundant in a great empire like the Ming Empire. This was the reason why even the strongest experts of the Great Yue State, like Wu Potian, were not even an expert of the sage realm.

The old head was one of the few sage experts of the Great Yue State who died in battle, but in the Ming Empire, sage experts were

not rare. There were several well-known sage experts in the Ming Empire. This gap was clear at a glance.

The gap was even bigger when comparing the number of legendary experts.

When the gap was so great while comparing high-level experts, it would naturally be even greater while comparing the younger generation. No wonder young geniuses like Xiao Zhen lacked enough inheritance to compete with the geniuses of Ming Empire.

In fact, this was why the young experts of the southeast region knew that this was going to be very dangerous for them. They were aware of the fact that they would have to face many strong opponents in the foreign land. But they still dared to embark on the journey because only with such discipline and dedication, they would succeed in the future.

Ye Xiwen was aware of this, after all, he was not born with a silver spoon in his mouth. His father was not a top expert so getting inheritance was out of the question. The only thing that helped Ye Xiwen come so far was the mysterious space, otherwise, he would be more desperate than others.

"Boom!" Several fierce wolves came out of Qiu Xinzhi's blade and surrounded Xiao Zhen from all sides.

Xiao Zhen was in a desperate situation right now but he did not give up. He glared at Qiu Xinzhi then shouted: "One more try!"



"I'll gladly help you die, come!" Qiu Xinzhi's cold smile indicated his killing intention as he commanded the fierce wolves to attack Xiao Zhen at once.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

.....

Xiao Zhen's sword started to emit violent thunderbolts. A thunderbolt struck one of the fierce wolves and its body exploded, turning into a bundle of energy and scattered in the atmosphere.

However, there were a lot of fierce wolves. His thunder attacks were not enough to stop all wolves. The extent of Zhen Yuan used by Qiu Xinzhi to congeal these fierce wolves was far beyond the imagination of ordinary people.

After Xiao Zhen managed to somehow get rid of all fierce wolves, suddenly, the figure of a person instantly appeared in front and shot a massive Daoqi at him.

"Boom!" Xiao Zhen's sword managed to deflect the attack but the sheer force present in the attack was enough to break his sword and the impact sent him flying across the sky. Streams of blood oozed out of his wounded body as he fell down from the sky.

"Xiao Zhen!"

His friends immediately flew up to catch him in midair but were startled when they saw layer after layer of Daoqi coming towards them. Qiu Xinzhi sneered and said: "You think I will allow you to save him?"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Xiao Zhen's friends were blasted away by the barrage of Daoqi attacks.

"Stop, you are crossing the line now!" Liu Yueru flew up and said.

Seeing a beauty like her standing in his way, Qiu Xinzhi's eye shone up. He smiled and said: "Listen, girl. I am not a tyrant but I just cannot ignore braggarts, I mean you southeastern experts who think so highly of yourselves. However, you girl, are you also going to TMU? I say, drop the plan; you won't last long if you stay with these losers. But you can come with me if you want. I will take good care of you and give you everything you ever desired."

"No thanks, I'm not interested." Liu Yueru replied in a cold voice.

"You can follow me, these southeastern losers are not worthy of you." Qiu Xinzhi laughed and extended his gasified big hand to grasp her.

Suddenly, a shrill piercing sound echoed out of the blue.

"Humph!" Jian Wuchen had shot a massive Swordqi that instantly collided with Qiu Xinzhi's big gasified hand.

"Ah!" Qiu Xinzhi's big hand was cut down in a blink of an eye. If his hand was not wrapped in Zhen Yuan, it would have been truncated by now.

"Who are you!" Qiu Xinzhi barely managed to speak while bearing the intense pain in his hand and heart. "How dare you attack me!"

"I see you are angry. Don't you want to kill me now?" Jian Wuchen said calmly but with a strange look on his face.

"You are also an expert from the southeast region?" Qiu Xinzhi said in a disdainful tone.

"Shut up! Let your blade do the talk." Jian Wuchen pointed his sword at him and said.

Qiu Xinzhi's complexion changed because he knew that Jian Wuchen was much stronger than him, even though he wasn't too

scared of provoking southeastern powerhouses because there were much stronger powerhouses on his side as well.

# Chapter 289: Nighttime Assassination Attempt

---

Qiu Xinzhi's complexion suddenly changed when he realized that Jian Wuchen was much stronger than him. He also realized his mistake of having provoked a strong man from the southeast region. Indeed, the top figures of Ming Empire were superior to those of the southeast region, but they were not present here to save him.

Jian Wuchen flew up slowly with a calm look on his face.

At this time, the southeastern experts also recognized Jian Wuchen and Ye Xiwen. They had seen these two on the demon island. Of course, two famous geniuses from their homeland had come to their rescue, so they would certainly feel proud.

Now they could proudly claim that even their southeast region was home to rampant experts.

"It's him!" Liu Yueru never expected to see Ye Xiwen like this. Although she had managed to sort things out with Ye Xiwen with the invention of Ji Moon, she still never thought that Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen would come to her rescue.

Xiao Zhen's complexion also changed when he was saved by the intervention of Jian Wuchen of Ye Xiwen. There certainly used to be some hatred between him and Ye Xiwen, but that was long lost in the past.

"If you think you are skilled, why don't you go fight with Shun'an prefecture's strongest pair?" Qiu Xinzhi somewhat sternly said.

"Sure, I will kill you first then look for that pair you talk about." Jian Wuchen replied in an equally stern voice, without a hint of boasting visible in his presence. These were not his ruthless words; it was just the way his mind worked. He wanted to become a sword master and must beat powerful foes to gain the status of the strongest sword master.

"You ....." Qiu Xinzhi's face turned pale because he could tell from Jian Wuchen's tightly locked killing intention that he was not lying.

"Shua!" Qiu Xinzhi immediately attacked. He already wasn't considering himself an opponent of Jian Wuchen so how could he possibly let his opponent gain the upper hand.

Qiu Xinzhi released Bladeqi almost instantly that transformed into several howling wolves and rushed towards Jian Wuchen.

Jian Wuchen smiled as if this attack was not even worth his attention. He just waved his sword once and destroyed all wolves at once.

His movements and his sword attack appeared slow to the naked eye but were incredibly fast in reality. There was no way those wolves could dodge his attack, let alone approach his body.

"I never thought that there can be a sword master like him in the southeast region!" A young expert couldn't help but admit that Jian Wuchen was indeed very strong, far more powerful than Qiu Xinzhi.

"Now you idiots will get to know that summer insects shouldn't talk the language of ice!" At this time, one of the remaining teammates of Liu Yueru sneered and said, "You called southeastern experts overreaching and thought we cannot have invincible experts? Well, guess what, the truth is that a mere prefecture like yours can never compete with our southeast region."

Those young experts in silk clothes couldn't retaliate because they knew that Jian Wuchen was stronger than their Qiu Xinzhi who was the strongest in their group.

Before they could get a chance to think what to do next, the scene changed dramatically. Jian Wuchen shot a terrifying Swordlight that went across the sky and instantly routed Qiu Xinzhi's offensive, continuing forward towards him.

"Puchi!" Qiu Xinzhi's entire right arm was directly cut down by the Swordqi and fell from the sky, followed by his loud scream.

Jian Wuchen looked coldly at Qiu Xinzhi then turned away without giving another glance. Such an opponent was basically not worth his time.

"You will regret it!" Qiu Xinzhi shouted while trying his best to

endure the severe pain.

Jian Wuchen didn't say anything in reply, just turned around and returned to the side of Ye Xiwen.

At this time, those young experts did not dare to wait anymore. They quickly picked up the chopped arm and escaped from there along with Qiu Xinzhi. They were not stupid and knew full well that now was not the time to take revenge. They must retreat for now and have their family and other formidable people to come forward. They obviously weren't Jian Wuchen's opponents hence making him mad would not exactly be a good idea.

"Thanks, you two, for coming to our rescue." Xiao Zhen ignored the old hatred for Ye Xiwen in his heart, bit the bullet and showed a fair expression of gratitude.

"You don't need to thank me, this time I did nothing." Ye Xiwen smiled and said without showing any sign of hostility.

This allowed Xiao Zhen to feel somewhat relieved, knowing that Ye Xiwen was willing to forget the past.

"Thanks a lot, both of you." Liu Yueru looked at both Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen and said, "But it doesn't seem like they will give up."

The path to TMU was very dangerous. Many people lost their lives on this path every time before the assessment.



"I would like to meet that Qiu Xinzhi's ominous wolf brothers and play with them. Shun'an strongest pair sounds like formidable foes. I just hope they won't disappoint me." Ye Xiwen smiled as he was planning to defeat all his opponents sooner or later. That was what it meant to enter TMU via competition.

"Well, in that case, we will leave first." Liu Yueru said although she would also like to stay but she was not as bold and fearless as Ye Xiwen. What if there was a half-step legendary expert hidden in this city?

Liu Yueru and her remaining team members left the scene. Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen went back to the inn and started waiting for the ominous wolf duo to come. Their willingness to fight was being fueled by the fact that the ominous wolf duo was at the top of the food chain around here, in the younger generation of Shun'an prefecture.

After Jian Wuchen thoroughly defeated Qiu Xinzhi, the news about this incident sent entire Shun'an prefecture into chaos. For a long time, no powerhouse from the southeast region had been able to disrespect them like this. Many people wanted to teach Jian Wuchen and Ye Xiwen a lesson but no one dared to get involved.

Gradually, the curtain of the night covered the sky. There was an enchantment hidden within Ye Xiwen's robe that not just prevented the ongoing conversation from being heard by people outside the room but also picked up signs of any trouble on the outside.

"Our journey is going to be difficult." Ye Xiwen said.

"These experts of truth eighth-ninth stage are nothing; let's pick a fight with half-step legendary experts. That should be fun!" The wolf cub said.

Just like Great Yue State, the main fighting force of Ming Empire was located in its imperial capital, including sage realm experts. Shun'an prefecture was located in the border region and at most could offer half-step legendary experts as obstacles in their path.

However, Ye Xiwen was determined to fight with much more powerful opponents in order to gain experience for his next breakthrough.

"The path you have taken so far has been paved on the bones of the fallen." Ye Mo said with a sigh, "However if that was not the case then you wouldn't have grown so powerful and that too so fast."

Ye Xiwen didn't get a chance to reply as he was interrupted by an enormous coercion falling down from the sky. This coercion was not directed at others but only on Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen.

"Half-step legendary!" The wolf cub immediately sensed the enemy's level.

Right then, Jian Wuchen, who was in the next room, also sensed the enemy's presence and immediately shot a rippling Swordqi

into the sky, directly overturning the roof in the process.

Ye Xiwen also flew into the sky and saw the figure of a man, clad in a black robe, flying towards Jian Wuchen. There was a dagger in his hand and seemed to be quenched with some kind of poison, which especially made the dagger to reflect dark rays of light under the moonlight.

He was extremely fast, with his physique and movements like a ghost in general, as he instantly arrived in front of Jian Wuchen and attacked with his dagger.

The horrifying coercion of half-step legendary realm was firmly suppressing Jian Wuchen, almost making it impossible for him to move.

Jian Wuchen roared in the sky and suddenly shot an enormous sword intention that immediately shattered the coercion and freed him.

"I don't care what tricks you are using, my sword is enough to render all of them useless!" Jian Wuchen rushed towards the half-step legendary assassin and struck with his sword.

The assassin was taken aback and did not dare to face Jian Wuchen head on. Although he was at half-step legendary realm, he majored in the ways of assassination. This enabled him to assassinate even legendary level experts by making use of perfectly timed sneak attacks, however, that did not mean that he was very strong or something.

His only strong trait was the art of effective sneak attack and instant assassination. In a real fight, he wouldn't stand a chance against even a strong expert of Complete Truth realm like Jian Wuchen.

Failing to assassinate Jian Wuchen in time was his biggest mistake, and now that he wanted to escape, Jian Wuchen wouldn't let that happen.

And even more frightening was the fact that he could feel a terrifying aura as if tracing his entire being from the sidelines. Although the owner of this aura didn't go into action right away, they seemed all prepared to attack any time now. It was obvious that the assassin had no way to escape from this situation.

Thinking of this, the assassin bit the bullet and clashed with Jian Wuchen. He first needed to deal with the sword master in front of him, only then he might have a chance to run away from the owner of that scary aura.

Ye Xiwen sneered and locked onto the assassin in midair using his imposing aura. Since Jian Wuchen had already jumped into the fight, he did not want to intervene. However, he also did not want the assassin to escape so he used his imposing aura to greatly suppress the assassin's power.

A well-planned sneak attack could have killed a legendary expert, but the assassin failed in doing so and also ended up revealing his presence. And the result was that he was on the verge of being

killed by an expert of Complete Truth realm.

This was the so-called art of deception - the art of assassination!

# Chapter 290: Ominous Wolf Attacks

---

Of course, the probability of being an expert of Complete Truth realm was very low; after all, the half-step legendary realm was not difficult to attain either.

"Clang!" Jian Wuchen issued a terrifying Swordlight that lit up the sky and suddenly alarmed the entire city. But the good news was that no one arrived to intervene or to make a fuss or anything. The only one who probably wanted to cry right now was the owner of the inn.

The Swordlight was flying towards the assassin, and since Ye Xiwen was observing this battle from not far away, Jian Wuchen felt somewhat relieved. At this time, Ye Xiwen's presence was quite reassuring, especially because Jian Wuchen was dealing with an expert of half-step legendary realm. Thanks to that, the assassin was literally cornered and that also to an extent that he suddenly roared and rushed toward Jian Wuchen like a cornered beast that had lost his calm.

Despite being an expert of half-step legendary realm, the assassin was scared of Ye Xiwen. And if he didn't even manage to defeat a young sword master of Complete Truth realm then he certainly wouldn't stand a chance against Ye Xiwen.

"Shua!" The assassin's dagger released a poisonous beam that traveled across the sky. It seemed like a desperate attack that was aimed at Jian Wuchen.

Jian Wuchen's face was expressionless though his eyes were as sharp as a sword. The sword danced in his hand and easily deflected the poisonous beam.

Immediately, the strong experts of this city began to talk to each other using soul links. They were discussing the fight going on between Jian Wuchen and the assassin.

"Is this man really from the southeast region? I never expected to see such a great master from the southeast region, to be honest. His opponent is at half-step legendary realm but is just an assassin. I don't think this assassin will last long in a face-to-face battle."

"We must accept the fact that the southeastern region has talented people. If this guy manages to survive after what has done to Qiu Xinzhi, in the coming hundred years, he will certainly become a formidable powerhouse."

These soul link conversations certainly didn't bypass Ye Xiwen's radar. Ye Xiwen sneered and didn't seem particularly pleased from all these experts talking stuff about Jian Wuchen and the southeastern region. It was really laughable how much they had underestimated Jian Wuchen's potential.

These people were extremely arrogant and had been like this for a long time. Indeed, the Ming Empire was more powerful than the Great Yue State but that didn't mean that the entire southeastern region would also lie in the same category. It seemed like the domineering attitude of Qiu Xinzhi and his friends was a result of the contaminated mindset continuing from previous generations.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

The two experts continued to clash again and again in the sky.

The assassin was fast like a ghost in general but Jian Wuchen's speed was quickly growing fast perceptibly.

"Boom!" An enormous burst of energy swept off in all direction, cutting a deep dagger wound in his chest almost instantly. His complexion turned green due to the instant poisoning.

The assassin was also in a bad shape. Jian Wuchen's sword had cut open a large hole in his abdomen.

Both of them staggered a bit then immediately rushed towards each other.

Jian Wuchen waved his sword and issued a sword intention that suddenly transformed into a massive Swordlight and went towards his opponent.

This attack was lightning-fast and arrived right above the assassin's head in a blink of an eye.



The spectators held their breaths at this scene. Some of them were in half-step legendary realm and were strong enough to wreak havoc in this city but even they could feel the insane amount of power contained in Jian Wuchen's attack.

They were forced to accept the fact that Jian Wuchen's sword attacks were dangerous and must not be taken lightly.

Today, Jian Wuchen used his skills and talent to make several experts envious of him.

"Boom!" The Swordlight suddenly transformed into a massive double-edged sword, right in front of the assassin.

"Boom!" The assassin's hand transformed into a tiger's mouth and it tried to grab the incoming flying sword. However, the inherent power contained his defense type attack was not enough to stop Jian Wuchen's offensive.

"Boom!" The assassin was knocked down by the enormous explosion that took place after the collision. His body severely pounded on the ground, making a humanoid shaped pit in the ground.

And at this time, Jian Wuchen arrived right above the assassin and attacked with his sword.

"Boom!" The assassin was directly beheaded by Jian Wuchen.

Jian Wuchen had won the fight but his complexion was deathly pale. His body was drenched with blood but more importantly, the poison had already spread throughout his body and was affecting his body functions. If he had not been using his own Swordqi to defend against the poison, he would be dead by now.

"Are you all right? It seems you are poisoned." Ye Xiwen asked.

"I am fine, I can fix this but I may need to spend some time in closed-door rest." Jian Wuchen said.

"No problem, if that ominous wolf comes looking for you, I will make him entertain me properly to my heart's content." Ye Xiwen grinned and appeared all ready to fight whenever required.

Anyway, the attitude of Qiu Xinzhi and his clan had already pissed him off.

They looked for another inn to rest. Jian Wuchen started to take rest and heal himself. Although he was severely injured in the fight, he told Ye Xiwen that he also gained a lot of benefits.

Next day, when Ye Xiwen was busy cultivating and exercising his powers in the mysterious space, suddenly a terrifying aura appeared out of nowhere and pressed down. It seemed as if the aura belonged to a beast, making Ye Xiwen feel like he had stepped into a beast's den.

"Where are those two troublemakers from the southeast region who have a death wish? Come out!" A hoarse voice sounded from the sky. There was a hint of beastly roar in this voice.

Ye Xiwen saw the figure of a man standing in the sky. He was clad in military clothing, had rough facial features while his face was covered with hair. He had deep green eyes and as soon as he howled like a wolf, an endless amount of killing intention spread everywhere.

Everyone started fleeing from the streets because they were too scared from his beast's aura. Right now, he appeared just like a werewolf bathing in milky moonlight.

"Who is this man?"

"You don't know who he is? Well, I cannot expect outsiders to know about our Shun'an prefecture's famous ominous wolf duo. This person and the eldest son of our City Lord together make the ominous wolf duo. This person is named Qiu Wolf. He is the most distinguished disciple of Qiu Clan. People say that he was once caught by a wolf demon beast in his childhood but was saved later on. He was infected back then and has since inherited the beast's traits of demon wolf race. He is not even fifty years old and has still become one of the two top players in the younger generation of Shun'an prefecture."

"Well, this is called being fortunate by mistake but why does he appear so angry?"

"An expert from the southeast region has chopped his younger brother's arm. He has come to take revenge."

Everyone was trembling with fear; they could not stand this kind of terrible beastly killing intention.

No one could withstand such a killing intention.

"Boom!"

An imposing aura exploded from inside the inn and a figure jumped out.

"Was it you who hurt my younger brother?" Qiu Wolf asked and growled at the same time while stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen like a wolf.

"No." Ye Xiwen shook his head, "If I had fought with him, he would be dead right now."

Ye Xiwen answered in an indifferent voice.

"You are courting death!" Qiu Wolf said in a furious tone.

"Who do you think you are?" Ye Xiwen sneered, "Oh right, how can I forget, you are one of the Shun'an prefecture's idiotic duo.....!"

Ye Xiwen laughed loudly and said. Qiu Wolf's complexion changed immediately; after all, since the day he obtained this title, nobody had dared to make fun of him.

"I will tear you apart with my own hands, just you watch!" Qiu Wolf's imposing aura scattered in all directions and tightly locked onto Ye Xiwen.

"Tear me apart, you say? I would like you to try." Ye Xiwen stopped laughing and a cold look flashed in his eyes. His body was instantly enveloped in golden divine clothing and a violent godly aura spread in all directions. It seemed as if the true god of the ten thousand worlds had suddenly appeared and all must grovel in front of him.

# Chapter 291: Showdown With The Ominous Wolf

---

Two sets of terrifying breaths severely crashed into each other high in the sky.

"My claws will tear you apart!" Qiu Wolf laughed and his wild imposing aura swept out. It seemed as if he was simply looking down on Ye Xiwen.

One must know that Qiu Wolf was one of the most competent candidates that were going to participate in TMU assessment. He wouldn't have bothered to come and challenge Ye Xiwen and Jian Wuchen if his younger brother was not involved in this mess.

He was a peerless genius of this area and had already stepped into half-step legendary realm a long time ago. His tyrannical strength was unmatched in the younger generation of Shun'an prefecture, so how could he ever consider a southeastern young expert like Ye Xiwen his opponent.

Ye Xiwen was closely keeping an eye on this half-step legendary expert who was no less than a beast, a very terrifying being with tyrannical presence.

Some of the onlookers were frightened, including several experts of Complete Truth realm and there were few half-step legendary experts in the crowd as well but even they were in a similar state of shock.

After all, even they couldn't be compared with Qiu Wolf who was able to achieve half-step legendary realm in a matter of few decades, establishing himself as a peerless genius of Shun'an prefecture.

They were even more shocked to see that Ye Xiwen was practically unaffected by the strong waves of Qiu Wolf's imposing aura when they themselves were affected to the extent of backing off.

"Die!" Qiu Wolf bellowed and sent clouds surging across the sky.

Qiu Wolf's roar was accompanied by a terrifying burst of Bladeqi that transformed into a giant blue wolf and raided all the way down from the sky, opening its mouth to swallow Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen stamped his foot on the ground once and a large section of the city collapsed instantly by the explosion of divinities. His golden divine clothes were dancing in the wind, giving the illusion of a mighty god in human form.

"Bang!"

The blue wolf and the golden divinities collided in midair and led to a massive explosion, sweeping an endless amount of energy and shock waves in all directions.

The blue wolf opened its big mouth wide and roared again and

again but was unable to approach Ye Xiwen. However, just then, Ye Xiwen rushed forward and used his golden tyrant hands to grab its upper and lower fangs.

Ye Xiwen could smell a fishy smell coming out of its mouth, although it was just condensed out of Lingqi but was abnormally realistic.

Ye Xiwen immediately understood that this blue wolf was actually an ancient secret heritage obtained from some high-level demon wolf beast, and perhaps this was the reason why it contained a share of its original powers.

"Boom!" Golden divinities exploded out of Ye Xiwen's body and soared straight into the sky along with a loud explosion.

The true mythical power of gilded tyrant form revealed itself properly and the blue wolf was directly torn into two halves by Ye Xiwen.

The recurring explosions set off endless shock waves in all directions, reaching all the way to the crowd watching from afar.

"I never thought that you can actually have so much strength." Qiu Wolf looked at Ye Xiwen with a color of surprise in his eyes. In fact, he never expected for his offensive to be completely wiped out by Ye Xiwen and that too with just his bare hands.

The golden divinities were crawling on Ye Xiwen's body while his



killing intention was increasing significantly. There wasn't the slightest trace fear in his heart.

"But today you shall die!" Qiu Wolf said coldly, "Well, at least you have made me excited for this battle."

Qiu Wolf's facial expression revealed a bit of excitement along with anticipation, however, there was an ever-present cold and cruel look in his dark-green beastly eyes.

"Boom!" Qiu Wolf struck with his blade horizontally and wildly rushed towards Ye Xiwen. The impact of this attack was so terrific that with each of his steps, the entire world seemed to be trembling as if a god had set out to destroy the world.

"Come!" Ye Xiwen roared then took out his long blade and released a horrifying Bladelight, powerful enough to shatter the space in its way.

This appeared like a battle between two accomplished experts of half-step legendary realm.

Numerous experts were stunned after witness the current scene, especially those chief experts who were rooting for Qiu Wolf. They were kind of frightened and dumbstruck at the same time while witnessing the true potential and power of the [two leading characters](#) from the younger generation.

Ye Xiwen from the southeastern region and Qiu Wolf from the Shun'an prefecture

They were used to witnessing battles like this every time TMU opened its gates to take in new disciples but had never seen such a magnificent battle between two peerless geniuses, each exceeding the barriers of the level they were in.

Especially Ye Xiwen who was just an expert of truth realm but was still able to fight on equal grounds with Qiu Wolf. In fact, Jian Wuchen would also be considered an evildoer [monster] like Ye Xiwen since he defeated a half-step legendary assassin a day ago.

However, Jian Wuchen's achievement wasn't as astonishing as Ye Xiwen's since that half-step legendary assassin was not as strong as Qiu Wolf.

"Boom!"

The two experts continued to clash again and again at a very high altitude, blasting away clouds everywhere in the sky while the whole city was being showered in colorful flashes of lights time and time again.

Jian Wuchen was aware of Ye Xiwen's ongoing battle but chose to have faith in him and continued to stay indoors. The small cub was also not interested in watching this battle and went for closed-door practice as well.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Both of them were using blades and constantly brandishing blade attacks as if to test who was a better blade master. Qiu Wolf's style of using blade was similar to that of the famous wolf king, who was also the king of a hundred beasts from ancient times. However, Ye Xiwen's blade skills were more conventional and true to the world laws of the blade, and in coordination with gilded tyrant form, the overall might of his blade attacks was incomparably tyrannical.

From the beginning, the two men were not using sophisticated blade skills to compete instead they were relying more on the amount of energy contained in their Bladeqi attacks.

The sheer amount of energy contained in these blade attacks was insane. There was just no way to block or resist any of these blade attacks.

In a while, these blade attacks started to show results and Qiu Wolf's body was covered in wounds and blood all over. Although Ye Xiwen's body was covered in blood, there were no signs of wounds anywhere on his body thanks to the instant regeneration provided by Phoenix regeneration.

Ye Xiwen had the advantage of a good combination of Phoenix regeneration and gilded tyrant form. But Qiu Wolf's body also had an extremely tyrannical constitution, like that of an ancient wolf demon in general. No one knew what kind of inheritance he had

obtained but his body was insanely tough.

Qiu Wolf was also capable of healing but a lot slower than Ye Xiwen's phoenix regeneration. Qiu Wolf had simply gone berserk right now; his eyes had become red from dark green. It seemed like he had lost his mind due to anger and was blindly attacking Ye Xiwen without waiting for his wounds to heal first.

The two experts were going all out and showing no restraints whatsoever. Suddenly, they started to test the level of each other's blade skills and proceeded to use ideal conditions. Ye Xiwen immediately summoned the ideal condition of his blade technique in the form of a huge moon diagram that appeared in the sky and dropped towards Qiu Wolf.

The moon diagram that appeared this time was not the same as earlier. This time, it contained a strong cold and ominous feeling in the form of dazzling white color on one-half of the moon while an endless dark and gloomy color on the other. The spectators were simply unable to look straight ahead, perplexed by the strange and conflicting nature of this moon diagram.

This was the result of the integration of sword intention into the ideal condition, otherwise, it would be impossible for the 'cold moon beheader' to possess such an overbearing presence.

This new version of cold moon beheader was specially developed by Ye Xiwen to deal with high-level experts.

And Ye Xiwen's ideal condition had outdone Qiu Wolf's ideal

condition which was in the form of a diagram showing a pack of wolves running in a vast wilderness.

The two diagrams collided in the sky and mutually devoured each other, while at the same time, the two experts mercilessly clashed with each other!

The spectators were frightened by this scene that literally shook the entire city. Most experts had comprehended the ideal condition of a martial technique at some point of time in their lives but they had never seen something like the moon diagram congealed by Ye Xiwen. It was simply on a whole another level, simply out of their reach. In fact, they would never get to know that Ye Xiwen was able to comprehend this ideal condition when he used to be in Houtian realm. Yes, this was the difference between them and Ye Xiwen.

There were many experts who simply weren't able to comprehend an ideal condition and used brute force to compensate for the lack of skill. Not to mention, the difficulty of comprehension was more for high level martial techniques.

It was even more difficult to create a new version of ideal condition. Ye Xiwen was able to do it because he had the support of the mysterious space.

The scene had been reversed at this time. This time, Ye Xiwen bellowed and released a rippling Bladeqi that transformed into a coiling dragon midway and flew towards Qiu Wolf.

-----

## Chapter 292: Ominous Wolf Killed

---

The coiling dragon condensed from Bladeqi dived down and overran the enemy.

"Boom!" Qiu Wolf had no time to dodge and the Bladeqi cut open a large wound on his chest. A wound so hideous and terrible that it seemed like his chest had sunken terribly into a deep concave, his ribs bent inwards and pieced his internal organs. The wound looked so terrifying that an ordinary person wouldn't bear to look at it.

However, the enemy's blade attacked had also cut open a wound on Ye Xiwen's waist. It looked like a serious wound from which, blood was spattering in all directions.

"Is it over? Damn, don't tell me the strongest genius of our Shun'an prefecture has fallen already?"

Many powerhouses who were observing this battle sighed woefully. Although they not necessarily liked Qiu Wolf but seeing their own being thoroughly suppressed by an outsider was something they were not ready to accept.

"Is that guy from southeast region really that strong?"

In contrast to the pale complexion on Qiu Wolf's face, Ye Xiwen's facial expression was simply unchanged even though both of them were severely injured. Of course, Ye Xiwen wasn't much affected by such injuries since the Phoenix regeneration technique was

constantly working and healing his injuries non-stop.

"Shua!"

"Shua!"

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

After being seriously injured, Qiu Wolf starting growling loudly and his body started to transform. His whole body was slowly covered with green hair and his hands turned into sharp claws. The people from Ye Xiwen's past world would call Qiu Wolf him a werewolf after this transformation. The wound in his chest began to heal at a speed visible to the naked eye.

"What is going on?" The spectators were shocked by this scene as they had never seen Qiu Wolf transforming like this before. Perhaps Qiu Wolf never got to face a formidable opponent like Ye Xiwen who literally pushed him to the point of resorting to using this transformation to fight back.

Ye Xiwen appeared dignified and was not all affected even when Qiu Wolf's aura was changing little by little, turning more imposing and terrifying.

"I think this guy has probably fused the blood of a demon god with his own blood." Ye Mo said, "I guess this is enough to call him



a relative of our wolf cub in a way."

Ye Xiwen smiled, perhaps there really was such a possibility that the ancestors of the wolf cub and Qiu Wolf were related.

However, Ye Xiwen did not wait to think about all this stuff as he heard a loud roar and saw the monstrous figure of a ferocious green beast standing in front of him.

"Boom!" Qiu Wolf simply abandoned using blade attacks and directly punched towards Ye Xiwen. The power contained in his punch was so enormous that it punched through space, creating a large void in the sky.

Ye Xiwen sneered and issued an equally enormous blade attack along with coiling dragon palm that summoned a gigantic black dragon from the depths of Abyss. It roared loudly and immediately wrapped Ye Xiwen to form a solid defense, strong enough to block enemy's punch.

"Bang!" The two attacks collided and the resulting explosion set off layer after layer of energy waves in all directions. The good thing was that the battle was going at a very high altitude, otherwise, this explosion toward the beat go, so that both sides are in high altitude, otherwise, the explosion would have destroyed the entire city in one fell swoop.

"I will eat you!" Qiu Wolf said in a beastly voice while salivating heavily through the corners of his mouth, "Your blood has the kind of flavor I like. I will eat you whole and my cultivation will

increase by one level, ha ha ha ha!"

After Qiu Wolf turned into a werewolf, his humanity had been overtaken by the demon nature of the wolf god. Now he could instinctively sense the divinities contained within Ye Xiwen's body and wanted to seize them for nourishment.

"Boom!" Qiu Wolf suddenly took a step forward and disappeared, instantly trampled through the void in the form of a green torrent rushing towards Ye Xiwen.

"You want to eat me? Get lost!" Ye Xiwen's eyes flashed with killing intention as he suddenly kicked the green torrent as soon as it approached him.

"Boom!"

The mighty torrent of greenish energy was instantly dissipated by Ye Xiwen's kick, exposing the huge figure of Qiu Wolf.

Qiu Wolf never expected to actually see his attacked being kicked away by Ye Xiwen. After transforming into a werewolf, not even an expert of the legendary first stage could rival his horrifying strength, let alone an expert of Complete Truth realm like Ye Xiwen.

Directly coming in contact with such terrific power was equivalent to seeking death.

But Ye Xiwen actually kicked his energy based torrent attack as if it was nothing.

Of course, how could he ever know about Ye Xiwen's tyrant body technique that enabled him to come in contact with gods and devil and even tear them to shreds with his bare hands if needed? Not to mention, now he had practiced an enhanced version of the same technique, the gilded tyrant form that allowed him to contend with all sorts of terrifying forces. Even if Ye Xiwen was now at Complete Truth realm, his strength was more than enough to deal with the likes of Qiu Wolf in werewolf form.

"Haa!" Ye Xiwen shouted loudly and his right foot was suddenly enveloped by an extremely potent golden energy. Then he launched a kick at Qiu Wolf and sent him flying across the sky.

Ye Xiwen immediately chased down at an incredibly fast speed and simultaneously summoned Hanshan seal in the sky that directly smashed down towards Qiu Wolf while he was still in midair.

"Howl!" Qiu Wolf howled and immediately released the massive shadow of a blue wolf that was made up of pure energy. It immediately opened its huge mouth as if to devour the Hanshan seal in one go.

"Boom!" The blue wolf directly collided with Hanshan seal and vaporized instantly, however, Qiu Wolf seized this chance to escape.

The blue wolf's body had turned into blood fog that was automatically absorbed by Ye Xiwen's gilded tyrant form and added to his divinities collection. The traces of divinities present in the blue wolf's dissipated body truly indicated that Qiu Wolf had obtained the heritage of an ancient demon god and hence contained pure divinities in his blood.

It was not strange for people to have various types of strange heritage and even Ye Xiwen had a fair share of his own heritages, including coiling dragon palm, Hanshan seal, Phoenix regeneration and the mysterious space.

However, Ye Xiwen was not willing to show mercy to Qiu Wolf no matter what.

A coiling dragon suddenly appeared in the sky and roared towards Qiu Wolf.

By now, everyone had come to accept that Ye Xiwen was much more powerful than Qiu Wolf, in fact, this battle had been like a game for Ye Xiwen since the beginning! But now, he was being serious in taking down Qiu Wolf and the result was such magnificent display of power.

"Boom!" "Boom!" "Boom!"

The entire sky above Shun'an city was filled with terrifying explosions as the two experts went all out.

The battle had entered a superheated phase but it was not hard to figure out that Ye Xiwen was completely prevailing.

The spectators never expected in the beginning of the fight that Qiu Wolf would completely fall under the wind like this and that too after transforming into a werewolf.

None had ever seen Qiu Wolf completely fall under the wind?

The initial ferociousness and beastly dominance of Qiu Wolf was no longer to be seen anywhere. His beastly instincts were telling him to run away from Ye Xiwen. And at this time, the combined attacks of coiling dragon and Hanshan seal had simply suppressed him thoroughly to the extent of rendering him unable to fight back.

"Aahhh!" Qiu Wolf howled when he was unable to bear the intense attacks even if he was in a werewolf form. His wounds were getting more and more severely and no longer healing quickly.

However, Ye Xiwen was showing no signs of weakening. This was the most frightening thing about facing an opponent like Ye Xiwen who didn't show signs of wearing down even after prolonged battles.

Ye Xiwen's true power had gone far beyond his imagination, to the point of making him feel inferior.

He could not go on fighting with Ye Xiwen since his own injuries were getting worse while there was no visible damage done to the enemy.

Qiu Wolf continued to roar again and again while his body hair grew longer. He almost transformed into a blue wolf himself and pounced towards Ye Xiwen.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen shot a palm and released a coiling dragon towards him.

"Bang!" Qiu Wolf's beastly body was instantly sent flying after a fierce collision with the coiling dragon.

Ye Xiwen didn't waste time and immediately summoned Hanshan seal in the sky that transformed into a huge mountain and descended towards Qiu Wolf who was still in midair.

"Stop!" At this time, a loud voice transmitted from the city and a big hand as if torn open the space itself and went towards Hanshan seal to stop it in its path.

Ye Xiwen sneered, and without showing any mercy, he increased the falling speed of Hanshan seal and smashed it down upon Qiu Wolf.

"Boom!" As soon as Qiu Wolf's body came in contact with Hanshan seal, it transformed into a vague mass of blood fog, and the divinities contained in that mass of blood fog was instantly

absorbed into Ye Xiwen's body.

-----

[Comment from Author]

Some people are raising doubts about half-step legendary realm so let me explain again in detail. Half-step legendary realm is just a standard to measure whether someone is a genius or not. It is a lot harder to have a breakthrough inside half-step legendary realm than in legendary realm. Most people find it easy to directly step into legendary realm from half-step legendary realm. Only true geniuses are able to control their cultivation to the extent that they are able to have breakthroughs within half-step legendary realm without entering the legendary realm. Only a true genius can stop himself from stepping into the legendary realm and accumulate within half-step legendary realm. Also, each stage within half-step legendary realm is much harder to get to and also grants much larger power in comparison to the corresponding stage on the legendary realm. For example, if a person is at half-step legendary fourth stage and he decided to have a breakthrough into the legendary realm then he would directly reach the legendary fourth stage or even above that depending upon the depth of his accumulation. Similarly, if a person is at half-step legendary ninth stage and decided to have a breakthrough into the legendary realm, he cannot! Because he would directly step into Sage realm!

All experts try their best to stay at half-step legendary realm and accumulate because this is the fastest way to reach Sage realm. Those who fail to do so ultimately give up and step into the legendary first stage, however, they reach a bottleneck after

reaching legendary fourth or fifth stage and are stuck there forever.

That is why only true geniuses can step into Sage realm and they choose the best method of doing so by staying at half-step legendary realm and accumulating. By doing so, they can entirely skip the legendary realm and directly step into Sage realm. Some people choose to stop accumulating at half-step legendary fifth stage and go for a breakthrough into the legendary sixth stage then continue forward. Some people choose to accumulate all the way to half-step legendary ninth stage and before directly breaking into Sage realm.

Half-step legendary realm may appear as a redundant realm but it is actually an important filter to separate true geniuses from ordinary ones!

I know that many readers were unable to understand the concept because they skipped the paragraphs where it was explained in detail. This concept is not very complicated, just needs a bit of patience from the reader's side!

I will try to simplify these concepts as much as possible in future chapters!

-----



# Chapter 293: Escapes Into The Heavenly Calamity

---

Ye Xiwen's body completely absorbed the divinities which almost immediately transformed into a roaring spirit wolf inside Ye Xiwen's world of consciousness and attacked his soul, as if to swallow his soul entirely and turn him into a host. This world of consciousness within Ye Xiwen was like a sea of consciousness, entirely composed of golden divinities. The spirit wolf wanted to stir up trouble and gain control over this sea of consciousness but was immediately absorbed into the sea instead.

Once the absorption was over, Ye Xiwen felt a huge progress in his gilded tyrant form-since the density and toughness of his golden body was directly proportional to the amount of divinities present in the sea of consciousness.

On the outside, Ye Xiwen immediately reacted by running away from there when a large hand suddenly clutched over and literally crushed the surrounding space in its path. It did not stop and instantly went towards Ye Xiwen to crush him to death. This expert's heightened anger was evident from his actions.

Ye Xiwen was being chased by a legendary expert so he did not dare to rush in the direction of the inn where the wolf cub and Jian Wuchen were undergoing closed-door training. Instead, he fled in the opposite direction, trying his best to lead his pursuer out of the city.

One must remember that Ye Xiwen had been able to kill legendary level devils during the devil seize on Yi Yuan School,

because of the suppression effect of Tianyuan mirror on devils. The same strategy was not going to work on a human expert of legendary realm.

Ye Xiwen was certainly aware of the terrifying powers of a true legendary expert. He was also aware of the difference between half-step legendary realm and legendary realm which was only for determining the difference between true geniuses and non-geniuses. Only true geniuses were able to stay in half-step legendary realm for accumulation. Much more powerful geniuses also enjoyed stronger and profound accumulation. They could even skip legendary realm altogether and directly step into sage realm with a single breakthrough.

"First you kill our Qiu Wolf and then you plan to just walk away?" A hoarse voice said in a furious tone and a sizzling energy burst out of that big hand.

The entire space, in an instant, was blockaded and it seemed as if a huge heavenly cage suddenly fell upon Ye Xiwen and entrapped him, making it difficult for him to escape.

"Today, I must make you pay the price with your blood!" An old man's figure appeared in the distance, literally out of nowhere.

Ye Xiwen suddenly roared and his body was enveloped within a thick layer of golden energy that suddenly exploded and destroyed the blockaded space. The very next instant, a pair of golden devil wings flapped behind his back and launched him forward at an incredibly fast speed.

The old expert was taken aback when Ye Xiwen destroyed his cage and flew several miles away from him in a blink of an eye. He, then, immediately pulled out a series of attacks that directly bent the space at multiple spots in the sky, acting as a slingshot to send his emancipated body darting forward towards Ye Xiwen at a much faster speed.

This legendary expert had already understood the world laws of space and could bend and manipulate space easily to gain incredible speed or create space cages. It was simply impossible for Ye Xiwen to beat a seasoned expert of legendary realm.

If not for Ye Xiwen's miraculous devil wings, his speed wouldn't even be comparable to that of a legendary expert, especially with space manipulation powers.

"Humph!" The old man snorted and shot a divine beam at Ye Xiwen.

"Boom!" The divine beam arrived right in front of Ye Xiwen in the blink of an eye and crashed into his body. He spat a mouthful of blood, staggered a bit and almost dropped down from the sky. This gave the old man enough time to shorten the distance between them.

"You can't deal with this old monster. He is out of your league!" Ye Mo appeared on Ye Xiwen shoulder and said. "Ming Empire is truly prosperous as they say. Even a small prefecture like Shun'an is home to a legendary expert."

"Forget all that for now! We need to get rid of him as soon as possible." Ye Xiwen wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth. This legendary expert was too terrifying, powerful enough to cripple him with one move. If an ordinary expert of Complete Truth realm was there in his shoes just now, they would be dead be now. In fact, even an expert of half-step legendary realm didn't stand a chance against this old man.

Ye Xiwen's tyrant body technique was really tyrannical, enough to save his life from the last attack.

Phoenix regeneration was constantly working to regenerate his wounds and that too within few breaths worth of time.

"This guy knows space laws and two levels above you. Escape is our only option." Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen was extremely fast, covering hundreds of miles in a blink of an eye but the old man was chasing him down unceasingly, showing no signs of let him off.

This old expert's anger was real deal, after all, Shun'an prefecture lost their strongest nurtured genius who was going to represent them in TMU assessment. Although Shun'an prefecture was considered quite influential, its importance was considered nothing much in rest of the Ming Empire. And after putting so much effort and resources in cultivation a true genius like Qiu Wolf, he was killed by an outsider so effortlessly. Only Ye Xiwen's death could bring peace to his raging heart.

"Not only you are going die, your family and anyone remotely related to you will be killed. I will go find your relatives and friends in the southeast region and kill them one by one in the most brutal ways possible. And remember, you are the reason behind their imminent sufferings." The old man gritted his teeth and threatened Ye Xiwen.

"F\*\*k you, old bastard!" Ye Xiwen got immensely angry at this moment. He could not stand someone threatening the safety and security of his family and friends.

The old man's facial expression looked even grimmer as he once again shot a divine beam towards Ye Xiwen, but this time, Ye Xiwen quickly turned around and shot his palm to block the attack. The tyrannical power present in this attack shook his entire being, almost to the extent of breaking his bones.

Any ordinary expert would have long been dead, but Ye Xiwen still continued to fly forward tenaciously.

Ye Xiwen did not know for how long he continued to fly but he seemed to have come out of Shun'an border. There were traces of wounds still visible on his body since the severity of his injuries had now exceeded the instant healing capacity of phoenix generation. Now, it took longer time for the wounds to heal.

The old man was still in hot pursuit. At this time, Ye Xiwen saw a massive lightning flash in a large group of clouds floating not far from him.

"Is someone challenging the heavenly calamity? No, it is not a person, but a demon beast!" Ye Mo suddenly shouted.

Ye Xiwen suddenly hesitated. One must know that whether human experts of demon beasts, all must face the threat of challenging the heavenly calamity to step into the legendary realm.

The legendary realm was said to induce the beginning of the transcendental change from the time someone challenged the heavenly calamity while having a breakthrough from half-step legendary realm to legendary realm, or from legendary realm to sage realm.

In fact, even stage-wise breakthroughs within the legendary realm needed to challenge the heavenly calamity.

The so-called heavenly calamity's very function was to stop mortal beings from surpassing the very laws of heaven and earth, after all, sickness and death were also part of world laws and the emergence of a legendary warrior would certainly violate this rule by increasing the lifespan to 1000 years. Heavenly calamity was a challenge put evenly in front of demon beasts and human being while having a breakthrough to the legendary realm.

The same law of challenge and punishment applied to not just to demon beasts and human beings but also to other species!

The breakthroughs within half-step legendary realm from one

stage to another required a small heavenly calamity in comparison. But each breakthrough within legendary realm required larger heavenly calamity.

It was said that only the person having a breakthrough must alone face the heavenly calamity. Any help or tricks would cause the heavenly calamity to go berserk.

But right now, Ye Xiwen only had the choice to use this heavenly calamity as a shield to save himself from the old man.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's sudden intrusion aroused endless thunderbolts to go berserk. It seemed as if the heavenly calamity had been provoked and an inexhaustible of thunderbolts was dropping down to attack Ye Xiwen.

"Damn!" The old man stopped next to the heavenly calamity with clear signs of fear on his face.

He still remembered his own deadly encounter with a similar heavenly calamity while having a breakthrough from the half-step legendary realm to the legendary realm.

This was the main reason why there were so many half-step legendary experts but only a handful of legendary experts. The simply different between them was the confidence and bravery to challenge the heavenly calamity. Most half-step legendary experts preferred playing it safe and hence chose to stay in half-step legendary realm until they were confident enough to challenge the heavens.

Watching how Ye Xiwen had been completely submerged in thunder calamity, the old man's facial expression revealed a pleasant look along with slight traces of regret for not killing him personally.

-----



# Chapter 294: Heavenly Calamity Quenches The Body

---

Anyone that messed with the heavenly calamity was bound to face its wrath. Even if a sage expert was to enter the domain of heavenly calamity, it would immediately calibrate itself to the degree of sage realm. So in the end, it was not possible for an outsider to interfere with someone's breakthrough. It was in a way mandatory for an expert to go through the heavenly tribulation on their own in order to level up.

Hence, the old man naturally did not dare to approach the ongoing heavenly calamity. He speculated that it was probably a demon beast having a breakthrough from half-step to legendary realm.

He stayed there and continued to observe for a long time, only to find out that the range of this heavenly calamity was getting bigger and bigger and was now about to approach him. He made a decision to get out of there. He didn't want to mess with heavenly calamity and end his life in the process.

In his view, Ye Xiwen was certainly dead already since the heavenly calamity was calibrated accordingly for a breakthrough into the legendary realm whereas Ye Xiwen was only at Complete Truth realm. In other words, the heavenly calamity didn't need to recalibrate itself to kill Ye Xiwen since he was at a lower level. Not to mention, the old man knew about incidents where higher level experts had died while trying to help their juniors by entering the domain of heavenly calamity. Coming out alive from the domain of heavenly calamity was something unheard of.

At this time, Ye Xiwen had no time to pay attention to the old man because he had already guessed what the old man was thinking right now. Not to mention, he really needed to focus on the tragedy he was facing right now.

But the old man's calculation lacked a very important element. He thought that Ye Xiwen was at Complete Truth realm and must have used some tricks to defeat Qiu Wolf. It was obviously impossible for an expert of Complete Truth realm to survive the dreadful impact of heavenly calamity. He didn't know about Ye Xiwen's actual strength and the content of energy within his tyrannical gilded body.

The old man was too satisfied with the present situation and seemed to have overlooked a very important point - why would Ye Xiwen knowingly take such a suicidal step and jump into the domain of heavenly calamity?

Ye Xiwen's tyrannical and divine gilded body had saved his life; an ordinary expert would be dead by now.

However, several bruises and lacerated wounds could be seen all over his golden body, clearly showing the terrifying and destructive power of heavenly calamity.

"Shua Shua!" Several hundred electric snakes swooped down from the dark clouds and attacked Ye Xiwen's body.

Ye Xiwen was completely motionless but his gilded tyrant form

was continuously enhancing at a very fast pace. His whole body was surrounded by golden rays of light rising from all directions, which then transformed into golden swords and hacked the electric snakes.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Intermittent fierce explosions occurred all around him that gave rise to a violent storm. The electric snakes were swept away in all directions and wreaked havoc everywhere.

"Ye Xiwen! I know a devil technique that will allow your gilded tyrant form to completely absorb all this rogue energy of the heavenly calamity for working out your body!" Ye Mo's excited voice sounded in Ye Xiwen's mind.

Ye Xiwen nodded at Ye Mo's advice, after all, he had no other options anyway. As long as he could turn this tragic situation into just another training session, he would be satisfied. He would very much like to absorb all this free energy to make his gilded tyrant body even more tyrannical.

Although he wanted to enhance his gilded tyrant body to the next layer, he didn't know how long this heavenly calamity was going to last.

"Crash-bang!" All of a sudden, a disastrous lightning crashed down right upon Ye Xiwen.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

The massive lightning fragmented into several electric snakes and literally started ravaging his body from all sides. In a flash, there was blue smoke all around his body. This attack was enough to vaporize an expert of Complete Truth realm.

However, Ye Xiwen was unmoved and basically, willingly, allowed these lightning serpents to ravage his body. Tyrant body technique was actively revolving within his body while his golden body was sucking the lightning energy like a sponge, all the while nourishing his flesh. It was a shocking scene since no one had heard of someone actually bathing in a heavenly calamity to nurture their body.

A strange golden divine energy was circulating within his body and breaking down the absorbed electric serpents, transforming them into pure energy to act as a tonic for his flesh and bones. His tyrant body technique was also constantly promoting, ascending towards the next layer.

It seemed like the non-stop bombardment of electric snakes would make him deaf, but he kept on focusing on operating various martial techniques to keep the strengthening process going.

However, the heavenly calamity didn't seem to finish anytime soon. In fact, it continued to get even more intense with passing time. The electric snakes, dropping down from the inked sky, had literally started to rain down upon Ye Xiwen. Even the size and power of each electric snake had increased dramatically, making them appear like thunder dragons coming down to swallow Ye Xiwen.

From afar, it appeared like a small figure was sitting cross-legged in midair and thunder dragons were continuously ravaging his body. The entire scene was riddled with lightning flashes and deafening thunderclaps. All one could see was a seemingly insignificant silhouette of Ye Xiwen, submerged in a sea of lightning.

Ye Xiwen did not dare to relax even for a second. The tyrant body technique was working non-stop while his entire body was enveloped with some kind of blue smoke emanating from his body that was being constantly ravaged. It seemed like his body was literally on fire and burning intensely.

Ye Xiwen was sitting in mid-air in order to avoid conduction of electricity to the ground while his own body was being bruised and lacerated again and again. In fact, his skin had begun to burn at multiple places, giving just a glimpse of the terrific power of heavenly calamity.

Ye Xiwen's complexion turned somewhat pale since he was relying on tyrant body technique, practiced to the third layer. It was not sufficient to deal with the present situation, so he was aiming to enhance it to the fourth layer. A few months ago, he had managed to reach the peak of the third layer and now he was going to take advantage of this opportunity to reach the fourth layer of tyrant body technique. This was the most important task right now, only then he could really come out alive of this deadly domain.

The heavenly calamity was further strengthening itself as it did not want let Ye Xiwen go alive. In fact, Ye Xiwen had to rely on Phoenix regeneration to stop his body from disintegrating but even that was failing to fully repair his injuries in time. Now, it seemed like his whole body was on superheated fire, trapped in a cycle of continuously disintegrating and restoring.

At times, his body would go almost devoid of blood due to rapid vaporization, only surviving thanks to his rapid regeneration ability. He estimated that soon his bones would start to crumble.

Ye Xiwen clenched his teeth as soon as he realized that he was on verge of reaching the fourth layer of tyrant body technique.

He did know for how long he stayed inside the domain of heavenly calamity, but it was finally showing signs of disappearing.

Immediately, numerous electric serpents sprouted once more

from the clouds, and the very next moment, the billowing black clouds disappeared without a trace.

These electric serpents merged together and transformed into a gigantic thunder dragon, roaring in the sky before suddenly rushing towards Ye Xiwen.

"Absorb this thunder dragon then you can successfully reach the fourth layer of tyrant body technique in one fell swoop!" Ye Mo said while looking at the magnificent figure of thunder dragon. Ye Xiwen knew that this thunder dragon was far stronger than all those electric serpents.

"Boom!" The thunder dragon opened its gigantic mouth as if to devour Ye Xiwen and a violent explosion occurred. A burst of lightning storm instantly collided with his body.

Ye Xiwen felt as if his body would collapse in this terrible storm, ultimately turning into a pile of dust. All the while, tyrant body technique was working crazily and absorbing a massive amount of energy. Not to mention, the Phoenix regeneration was also working at its max and reconstructing his body rapidly.

"Boom!" Under this impact of a seemingly infinite amount of frantic energy, Ye Xiwen suddenly bulldozed through the barrier of the third layer and reached the fourth layer. It was like the collapse of a dam, allowing the flow of accumulated energy throughout his body.

Tyrant body technique fourth layer!

After reaching the fourth layer of tyrant body technique, now he could simply disregard all attacks from the experts of half-step legendary realm or legendary first stage. In fact, even if he was to bump into a much higher level expert, he should still be able to make a great escape, and his enemies would find it difficult to injure him.

Ye Xiwen noticed that the heavenly calamity had disappeared from the sky without a trace, and then suddenly, he saw the figure of a demon beast standing on the ground. It was a Fire Lin beast!

Ye Xiwen recalled that he had seen a Fire Lin beast before and this one looked similar to the previous one as well. But the difference was that this one was much larger and stronger than the previous one, simply a monster.

However, he also noticed that there were several bruises and cut wounds all over its body. Its skin was burnt at multiple places along with some open flesh wounds, from where its blood was streaming down and staining the soil. Facing a heavenly tribulation was equally dangerous for demon beasts like it was for human experts.

Even if this Fire Lin beast had the blood of unicorn in its veins, dealing with heavenly tribulation was still a risky task. Not to mention, it had to deal with a raging heavenly calamity due to Ye Xiwen's intrusion. In fact, it almost came close to burning to crisp.

Its red eyes were staring at Ye Xiwen. Its imposing aura was kind



of unstable initially but suddenly started to increase drastically, soon approaching the horrifying aura of the legendary realm before firmly locking onto Ye Xiwen. It was waiting for its strength to recover first before going after Ye Xiwen to kill him.

Ye Xiwen suddenly sensed the imminent danger in his heart.

"Ye Xiwen, hurry up and kill that beast, don't let it recover. You have barely managed to escape unharmed from the heavenly calamity but it is in its weakest state. Kill it and absorb its demon core, and that should help you in stepping into the half-step legendary realm." Ye Mo said.

-----

# Chapter 295: Half-Step Legendary Realm

---

Ye Xiwen could sense a somewhat keen killing intent in the eyes of Fire Lin beast. Indeed, there were traces of hatred and greed in its eyes as well. It instinctively considered Ye Xiwen an enemy, not to mention Ye Xiwen also sensed the presence of powerful divinities within its body, which could bring great benefits for him since he was in need of more and more divinities in order to strengthen his gilded tyrant form. He would usually come across demon beasts with small amounts of divinity within their bodies, but this Fire Lin beast was extraordinary in this regard.

Ye Xiwen was still considering what to do next but Fire Lin beast was obviously not going to give him any opportunity to continue to consider. It immediately roared and shot a large bundle of flames towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen immediately went back several steps to avoid the flame attack. The freshly obtained power of the legendary realm was evident in its attack. Just by spitting flames, it could easily burn through space.

It was popular saying that it was necessary to face heavenly calamity because the terrifying power of legendary realm lied on the other side of the test.

"F\*\*k!" Ye Xiwen cursed out loud and no longer hesitated, after all, this beast was still injured and would soon be able to recover and might even display full scope of legendary realm. He needed to win this battle as fast as possible.

The long blade danced in his hands and released an enormous Bladelight that instantly split the entire sky into two halves as if attempting to shatter the void.

Fire Lin beast struggled to leap and barely managed to dodge Ye Xiwen's blade attack, however, not before getting its scales crushed by the Bladelight slicing through its waist, causing the blood to ooze out in abundance.

"Humph!" Ye Xiwen snorted and immediately raise his hand, summoning a gigantic Hanshan seal in the sky, and the very next moment, he made it smash down.

Like a huge mountain directly dropping from heavens, the Hanshan seal pounded upon Fire Lin beast without giving it any chance to escape.

"Bang!"

Great strength contained in this attack came close to crushing its bones. With its face upward, it roared loudly while its body emitted blazing white flames that instantly burned through the Hanshan seal, making it possible for it to escape.

But how could Ye Xiwen let it escape so easily? Another Hanshan seal appeared in the sky and once again smashed down. Although it possessed the blood of the mythical unicorn and thus had a strong regenerative capability as well, but the effectiveness of his regenerative ability was nowhere near that of phoenix regeneration. Right now, Ye Xiwen was in his peak condition

whereas Fire Lin beast had not even recovered from the injuries it sustained during the breakthrough.

Ye Xiwen knew that in spite of having just entered the legendary realm, this beast was much more powerful than that old man. After all, it was a god's descendant with the divine power of ancient unicorn god in its blood.

But Ye Xiwen was also aware of the fact that a certain period of time, after surviving a heavenly tribulation, was the most dangerous for a demon beast, increasing its chances of being hunted.

Ye Xiwen certainly didn't get enough time to consider all this since he was fully focused on taking down this Fire Lin beast!

"Roar!" The beast screamed pitifully after being severely hit by the Hanshan seal. It staggered a bit as its blood spattered all over.

Immediately, its ominous eyes began to stubbornly stare at Ye Xiwen. If it was in its peak condition, it would have already killed Ye Xiwen by now. But right now, it was basically cornered by a human expert of much lower level.

The healing rate of its wounds, caused by the Hanshan seal, was also very less.

Fire Lin beast was roaring again and again. It was not just furious but also regretting its decision of getting greedy and coveting the

divinities within Ye Xiwen's body. In the end, its own greed sent him crashing into such a dreadful disaster.

Ye Xiwen's facial expression appeared cold as he directly shot his palm and summoned an Azure dragon from the depths of the abyss. At this moment, the tyrannical power of the fourth layer of 'tyrant body technique' fully manifested itself as he used his long blade to directly chop down the divinities contained within the white flames spat by the beast, while at the same time, his coiling dragon palm made an impact.

"Boom!" Ye Xiwen's coiling dragon palm severely pounded on the beast's body. It screamed as its spine was broken into two halves, tearing its skin at that spot, from where scalding hot blood gushed out and stained the ground.

It was a good opportunity!

Ye Xiwen immediately released a massive sword intention that flew across the sky, crashed into its head, cracking open its skull while its brain matter splashed out.

Fire Lin beast was finally dead. Ye Xiwen took out a red demon core from its body. It was a special demon core of legendary realm and was exuding waves of concentrated energy. After passing the heavenly tribulation, it had completely transformed into a demon core of legendary realm.

"Wonderful! Ye Xiwen, this is a good opportunity to absorb the demon core. I think then you can certainly set foot into the half-

step legendary realm. Once you are in half-step legendary realm, that old foggy won't be your match anymore." Ye Mo said.

Ye Xiwen nodded; if he could set foot in half-step legendary realm then the experts of legendary realm wouldn't be a threat anymore, just like the experts of half-step legendary realm were not his match right now.

Ye Xiwen immediately found a cave in that area and began closed-door cultivation. This entire area had been destroyed beyond recognition by the heavenly calamity, so concealment was a right decision since the event of heavenly calamity had scared off all demon beasts of that area. They were not daring to approach even if they wanted to.

Ye Xiwen made no more delay because he would also need to go back and confirm the safety of the wolf cub and Jian Wuchen. Although he did believe that they must have fled already, he would still want to go back and confirm, not to mention he would also go greet the old man afterward.

The red demon core was floating in front of Ye Xiwen, bobbing, and overflowing with energy based on fire element.

Ye Xiwen was sitting cross-legged on the ground, with his eyes closed while Tianyuan mirror was constantly circling around above his head, protecting his entire body with a scarlet barrier. His body was exuding waves of golden light, while at the same time, large chunks of fire element were being absorbed into his body.

Traces of red color appeared in the blanket of golden light enveloping his body. Although this Fire Lin beast had reached legendary realm just now, it must have been accumulating for years, or perhaps decades. Not to mention, it was a god's descendant with the divine fire element within its demon core.

As soon as the fire element circulated within his body, it began to make a qualitative change in his Zhen Yuan [energy] that literally began to rampage inside his body. Ye Xiwen immediately mobilized this new type of Zhen Yuan in his meridians and made it his own energy forcibly.

Ye Xiwen could clearly feel a considerable change in his Zhen Yuan.

There was indeed a massive gap between legendary realm and realms beneath it.

"Legendary realm is really something!" Ye Xiwen said with a color of anticipation in his eyes, "Once I am done completely absorbing this demon core, stepping into half-step legendary realm should be a piece of cake."

Ye Xiwen continued to absorb the red-hot demon core and sensed an influx of fire properties in his inner state. His face turned brighter and began to shine, even traces of a mixture of golden and red light flashed in eyes. The powerful fire properties a legendary demon beast immediately started to impact heavily against the barrier to half-step legendary realm.

Ye Xiwen's Zhen Yuan saw a significant qualitative and quantitative transformation and began to pound on the inner state-barrier again and again. Only by breaking this barrier, he could leap from truth realm to half-step legendary realm.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Ye Xiwen felt as if he was facing a thick iron wall standing between him and half-step legendary realm. This was a very firm threshold that was infamous for blocking countless experts from never stepping out of the truth realm.

The newly gained Zhen Yuan and its increased quantity were certainly helpful but Ye Xiwen was still struggling to find a flaw in the barrier while making impacts one after another.

He did not know how many times it took, but he finally managed to break the barrier.

"Boom!" The sturdy barrier finally started to collapse.

Ye Xiwen's face suddenly lit up.



"I did it! My breakthrough was successful!"

With this, his imposing aura also changed completely. It gained small traces of the peculiar coercion of legendary realm, completely replacing the weak aura of truth realm. Uncontrolled waves of his imposing aura spread out in all directions, only to be blocked in the path by Tianyuan mirror.

Ye Xiwen's golden divine nature also appeared smoother than before. Also, after the breakthrough, he gained a godly aura that contained the magnificent divine coercion.

Ye Xiwen opened his eyes and said: "Finally, I reached half-step legendary realm. Now, it's time to finish some unfinished business."

-----

## Chapter 296: Conspicuous Prestige

---

An unquenchable look of pleasant surprise appeared in Ye Xiwen's eyes. He had finally entered half-step legendary realm. The red-colored demon core had all its energy consumed and turned into a pile of dust.

He never imagined of stepping into half-step legendary realm in such a short period of time. It took him not more than 6 months to achieve that and this rate was not slow. One must know that reaching half-step legendary realm at the age of 20 was something not even the so-called peerless geniuses could do before the age of 50. Ye Xiwen was not necessarily the youngest but definitely was one of the youngest to achieve such a feat. He just did not have the means to imagine his own progress, in terms of cultivation, once he would turn 50-years-old.

Even in his past life, a period of 20 years was not less and was tantamount to be a major part of one's lifespan!

This time, his misfortune turned into a blessing at right time and helped him obtain the demon core of a legendary demon beast, helping him reach the next realm in a short time.

Ye Xiwen stretched his hand and the entire space was imprisoned in an instant. This was the ability of legendary experts, and having entered the half-step legendary realm, he had also come to understand a certain degree of space laws, at least enough to imprison a part of space for some time.

Usually, this was possible only after becoming a full-fledged legendary expert and gaining access to freely communicate with the world laws but Ye Xiwen was exposed to it in advance. Regarding the understanding of space, Ye Xiwen consciously took the initiative to gain hold of this power and his control over space laws was certainly not inferior to an average legendary expert because of the presence of 'mysterious space' in his body. Not to mention, now Tianyuan mirror could produce Ling Dans unceasingly and they would be constantly instilled into the bottomless pit of mysterious space. As a result of that, the mysterious space would continuously absorb Ling Dans and help Ye Xiwen in an unceasing deduction of some martial laws and techniques. In other words, a variety of world laws would be constantly deduced inside the mysterious space before being installed in Ye Xiwen mind. Of course, this process would go on non-stop.

Therefore, although Ye Xiwen had not yet entered the legendary realm, he was still enjoying the powers and liberties of legendary realm with the help of mysterious space and Tianyuan mirror.

Of course, if the opponent was at legendary realm then the space imprisonment wouldn't have any effect on them. Indeed, Ye Xiwen could still use it for self-protection as long as the opponent's skill wasn't too stronger than his own, otherwise, his space imprisonment wouldn't work on the opponent. Not to mention, the opponent should also give up on the idea of imprisoning Ye Xiwen because they would have to deal with his insanely fast speed. This was one of the greatest advantages in Ye Xiwen's favor.

During the breakthrough, his gilded tyrant form also gained no small advantage. Now, his whole body was full of power and he

was confident that even a single punch could kill an expert of half-step legendary realm with ease.

"Ye Xiwen, you have made a big progress this time." Ye Mo said, "Half-step legendary realm, although is only half-a-step into the legendary realm, it still enjoys the name and benefits of legendary realm. Remember, you are no longer in truth realm, you have left it behind. It should have taken 6 more months under normal circumstances to have this breakthrough."

"Yes, I never thought that persevering on the road to TMU can actually be good for cultivation. If things continue to go on like this for a year, you can reap tremendous benefits."

"It is time to find that old man and settle old scores." Ye Xiwen said.

However, he did not have to go look for the old man because the people of Qiu clan were already looking for him. After the old man thought of going back, he still wasn't sure whether Ye Xiwen was really dead or not. What if Ye Xiwen was not dead and used some trick to fool him? Therefore, the old man ordered a legendary expert of Qiu clan to lead a team of experts and search for Ye Xiwen's corpse.

The team consisted of several truth level experts and all of them were using soul searches to find Ye Xiwen or his corpse.

The old man was using his soul search technique to command the team of experts: "Search, search everywhere, I want to see his

corpse!"

"Found him!" Suddenly, a small team of experts shouted.

"Boom!" With a sound of terrifying explosion, a blast wave swept off in all directions. The entire team, consisting of truth level experts, was blasted away. Their bodies instantly turned into blood fog and dissipated in the atmosphere.

A rainbow colored flash of light streamed across the sky.

"I was planning to look for you, never thought that an old idiot like you can also be so wicked." Ye Xiwen said in a calm voice.

Ye Xiwen's horrifying imposing aura spread in all directions.

The old man sensed Ye Xiwen's aura and his complexion turned pale. He never thought that Ye Xiwen's aura would change so drastically. He could clearly feel traces of legendary power in Ye Xiwen's aura. The old man was shocked by the fact that Ye Xiwen's cultivation had progressed by leaps and bounds in such a short time. This level of insane progression speed was mind-blowing.

The old man could tell that by having such an insane level of progression speed, Ye Xiwen's future prospects would simply be incalculable, not to mention even the tremendous destructive power of heavenly tribulation was unable to kill him. Such a person must be eradicated as soon as possible, otherwise, he would end up being a huge threat to Qiu clan.

The only option was to strangle this genius in the cradle itself.

Immediately, a bone-chilling killing intention flashed in the old man's eyes!

Of course, Ye Xiwen didn't give a crap about all that.

"Little brat, do not dare think that I have forgotten what you did to our Qiu Wolf. I did expect you to get killed by the heavenly tribulation, but it doesn't matter. I will kill you myself and take revenge." The old man said coldly.

"Only, if you have the ability to do that." Ye Xiwen grinned.

"You bastard, I will kill you!" A middle-aged expert of half-step legendary realm shouted and flew towards Ye Xiwen. He was the father of Qiu Wolf so his rage was understandable, after all, all his painstaking efforts in nurturing his son had been wasted by Ye Xiwen.

The middle-aged man shot an enormous divine beam in the sky that instantly fell down towards Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen sneered and instead of using any energy based attacks, he directly went forward to greet the incoming divine beam.

"Boom!"

There occurred a massive explosion but Ye Xiwen used just his palms to contain this explosion and rendered it ineffective.

"Bang!" The very next moment, there echoed an extremely violent sound of breaking bones as Ye Xiwen used just his hands to crush that expert's bones into pieces.

"How is this possible?!"

Everyone was shocked by the tyrannical display of physical strength by Ye Xiwen.

However, Ye Xiwen did not give them enough time to figure out what just happened. He immediately summoned a Hanshan seal in the sky and smashed it down towards that expert.

"Boom!" The Hanshan seal smashed down quickly at a lightning fast speed, directly laminating that expert of half-step legendary realm onto the ground, turning him into blood fog almost instantly.

Everyone looked in disbelief, swallowing their saliva and simply couldn't trust what they just saw. Could the killing of an expert of half-step legendary really be so easy? Ye Xiwen suddenly became an awe-inspiring man in the eyes of everyone.

"Impossible!" The old man had an incredible look in his eyes as he stubbornly stared at Ye Xiwen. The unexpected rise in Ye Xiwen's

strength was something out of his comprehension. He just couldn't understand how Ye Xiwen managed to become so powerful in such a short time.

"Step back all of you, I will kill him!" The old man roared then immediately rushed forward and shot his palm, releasing the magnificent powers of legendary realm. A huge green hammer congealed out of nowhere and smashed towards Ye Xiwen.

The space around Ye Xiwen was imprisoned suddenly, making it impossible for him to escape.

Ye Xiwen sneered and his body released some kind of world law, instigating fluctuations in space around him and making it possible for him to break free from space imprisonment.

Ye Xiwen's joined his golden hands and blocked the hammer attack effortlessly.

"Old man, prepare yourself, you better embrace death with a smile on your face." Ye Xiwen smirked and launched a kick, sweeping rippling waves of golden light toward the old man.

The old man was startled, actually did not expect that Ye Xiwen would be strong enough to disregard his offensives. Ye Xiwen not only broke out of his space confinement, he even blocked his legendary level hammer attack.

Ye Xiwen summoned an azure coiling dragon from the depths of



Abyss. After reaching half-step legendary realm, even his coiling dragon attack had progressed by leaps and bounds.

"Haa!" The old man thundered loudly and prepared himself to face Ye Xiwen's terrifying attack.

The two sides collided fiercely as if mutually strangling each other. The crumbling and fluctuating energy waves spread out in all directions.

This was a battle between two experts of legendary level. It seemed like a vicious fight between a wolf and a dragon.

Ye Xiwen's golden aura soon occupied half of the sky while the old man seemed to be struggling in a one-on-one fight with him.

"Today, you go to hell!" Ye Xiwen suddenly flew forward such as lightning while his hands transformed into dragon claws and went forward to grasp the old man. This attack was so terrifying that the old man could only dodge and stay out of its range but failed to do so.

"Boom!" The old man screamed pitifully as his body was sent flying upside down.

-----

## Chapter 297: Legend Slaughtered

---

The old man was sent flying and directly hit the ground, pulling a long trace by being dragged on the ground before finally come to a stop. Ye Xiwen immediate chased him and summoned a Hanshan seal that instantly smashed down.

"Boom!" Hanshan seal directly pounded upon the old man, giving him no time to dodge.

"Bang!" The old man had managed to steer out of the Hanshan seal's main impact area, but was still hit at the edge and was once again sent flying. There was no way to find out how many of his bones were crushed in the process.

"Stop!" At this moment, several truth level experts and an expert of half-step legendary realm of Qiu clan rushed forward to save the old man because they knew his importance for their family.

They, as if, made a barrier of experts to protect the old man. As long as the old man would come out alive of this tragedy, the future of their clan would be secured, on the contrary, if the old man were to die then their entire clan.....

They did not dare to imagine.

Several truth level experts rushed toward Ye Xiwen to pin him down, but he was radically unmoved. He continued to chase the old man.

The golden divinities contained within his body were literally mocking humanity. An otherworldly golden energy burst out of Ye Xiwen's body and turned into a long blade. In a blink of an eye, several truth level experts were chopped to pieces by this golden blade.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

Some experts were beheaded, some were split in half, and all in all, no one was able to stop the advance of Ye Xiwen's footsteps.

"You beast, no matter how big a price I must pay today, I will kill you!" The half-step legendary experts roared, his palm transformed into a wolf claw and grasped toward Ye Xiwen. It was like the claw of the wolf god, attempting to squash Ye Xiwen.

As if trying to trod the vault of heaven and reshuffled the very existence of elements.

"I would like to see you try." Ye Xiwen smirked and shot an enormous golden beam to tackle the wolf claw.

"Stab!" With a loud piercing sound, Ye Xiwen hands directly tore

open the wolf claw.

"Aaaah!" Ye Xiwen didn't stop there. The half-step legendary expert's body was then immediately caught by Ye Xiwen in midair and was split into two halves, with blood splattering all around.

Even his soul was directly torn apart by Ye Xiwen along with his body. This is what happens when a soul comes in the grasp of godly power.

"You bastard!" The old man roared as she painstaking saw yet another elite from his clan getting brutally killed by Ye Xiwen. He got so mad that he immediately rushed toward Ye Xiwen.

The old man's whole body had started to swell with surging energy and boiling blood. The broken bones and torn muscles within his body started to reconnect at an astonishing rate. His imposing aura literally soared high into the sky, and the awe-inspiring changes in his body made him appear like a raging beast.

"Ye Xiwen, this is bad, I think he has gone suicidal and is planning to perish along with you." Ye Mo said in an anxious tone.

Ye Mo's comment was not needed for Ye Xiwen to figure out what the old man was planning to do, after all, Ye Xiwen had killed Qiu Wolf and two other elites from the old man's clan, along with several truth level experts. Not to mention, the massacre was still going on, the old man was forced to take desperate measures to save what was left of his clan.

"Haa!" Suddenly, the old man thundered loudly, the whole sky began to boil as he congealed a Bladeqi in his hand and swept it across the sky.

The surviving members of Qiu clan couldn't help but hold their breaths when they saw this scene.

"Clang!" With the intermittent bursts of metal rubbing sound produced from friction between the Bladeqi and atmosphere.

"Die you bastard!"

Bladeqi arrived right in front of Ye Xiwen obliquely in a blink of an eye and he could feel that it brought the entire space rolling along with it.

Ye Xiwen immediately waved his right arm, congealing an equally terrifying Bladeqi along with a gigantic coiling dragon and shot both these attacks toward the incoming Bladeqi attack.

"Boom!"

A loud explosion occurred, setting off a storm of rogue energy waves in all directions, violently twisting and shattering the space around.

The members of Qiu clan immediately retreated far away from the place where that terrible collision occurred. They knew that getting in range of such a collision was like asking for death.

"Just die, die!" The old man's facial expression became more ferocious, crazier. His eyes had turned red, keeping a close eye on Ye Xiwen while congealing a Bladeqi much powerful and much purer than before, in his hands.

This time, the Bladeqi contained a great roaring wolf made up of inexhaustible energy. The old man had combined two types of attacks into one to make the final attack much more destructive. The resulting attack appeared unusually brilliant and beautiful in the sky.

The combined attack of Bladeqi and heavenly great wolf completely engulfed Ye Xiwen.

"Ha ha ha, little beast, now you will die without a doubt!" The old man's facial expression turned grim as he laughed loudly like a madman.

"Get out of my way!" Ye Xiwen shouted in a cold voice and the entire barrier of energy enveloping Ye Xiwen instantly collapsed. A beam of golden light flushed out from the Bladeqi barrier, tearing it apart in the process and further crashed into the great wolf's body, annihilating it almost instantly.

"Impossible!" The old man couldn't believe his eyes because he was absolutely sure that his most powerful attack would kill Ye Xiwen. Not to mention, he had unlocked his full potential and was at his peak condition while launching this attack. He certainly didn't know that Ye Xiwen had a trick to restore himself to the

peak condition in a blink of an eye.

The old man panicked and immediately flew back far away, but not faster than the golden beam shot by Ye Xiwen. Ye Xiwen had immediately released a golden blade attack, but this time made up of a mixture of divinities and dragon qi. The hybrid energy was insanely destructive, powerful enough to shock the entire world.

The old man quickly congealed a series of defensive arrangement, made up of Zhen Yuan, in front of himself.

However, a barrier made up of mere Zhen Yuan couldn't stop Ye Xiwen's attack that easily shattered the barrier.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

As soon as the Zhen Yuan barrier was shattered, the old man immediately went several steps back to evade the Bladeqi attack but failed to do so in time.

"Puchi!"

His right arm was severed, spattering bone dust and minced meat debris in all directions.

The old man's body wasn't able to avoid the heavy impact contained in the attack and was severely knocked to the ground, creating a large humanoid hole in the ground.

"Hanshan seal!" Ye Xiwen immediately summoned the Hanshan seal that appeared in the form of a huge mountain falling from the sky.

The old man wanted to resist but lacked enough speed and agility to dodge the Hanshan seal's impact. In a flash, he was crushed to death by Hanshan seal; even his soul didn't survive this impact and dissipated.

The remaining experts of Qiu clan immediately understood that getting out of there was the only option left in front of them.

In their eyes, Ye Xiwen appeared just like a devil god that had effortlessly and mercilessly killed all the powerhouses of their clan.

But before they could flee, the entire surrounding space was imprisoned, freezing them in midair.

Ye Xiwen used missing moon beheader technique and unleashed one thousand blades, chopping all of them into pieces. It just took Ye Xiwen an instant to wipe out the entire clan.

Although Ye Xiwen was not yet a full-fledged legendary expert,



he had already learned to exploit some of its benefits. His understanding of space imprisonment technique was not at all inferior to that of other legendary experts.

"Ye Xiwen, I must say that your current strength is comparable to that of an expert of half-step legendary first stage. Only a few peerless geniuses are able to reach the first stage of half-step legendary realm." Ye Mo said.

"This is not enough." Ye Xiwen said, "I want to beat all the opponents, and become the strongest."

Only after becoming the strongest, he would have the opportunity to make contact with the outside world. Then only it would be possible to one day return to the Earth.

Ye Xiwen, without any delay, directly expanded his devil wings and flew toward Shun'an city in order to find the whereabouts of the wolf cub and Jian Wuchen. He went back and found out that those two had already fled away.

Ye Xiwen felt relieved, though he did not know where they were headed. However, considering the power and disposition of wolf cub and Jian Wuchen, they must have safely escaped from Shun'an prefecture. Ye Xiwen also believed that he would not be getting any news about them anytime soon.

-----

# Chapter 298: Overbearing Army Of God

---

Ye Xiwen was following the road to TMU, the same road that had been used by generations of geniuses for thousands of years. Although Ye Xiwen had the choice of flying, he preferred to walk in order to learn more about Ming Empire and its culture, not to mention his walk was equally fast. In just a month on his journey, he experienced local customs and social traditions, which was a lot better than reading ten thousand books on Ming Empire. During this month, Ye Xiwen learned a lot about Ming Empire.

Since he was not struggling to catch up, he had basically fallen behind Jian Wuchen and the wolf cub. However, he often heard news about the exploits of the two on the way.

He recently heard news about the wolf cub having stepped into half-step legendary realm and had torn apart a young elite of Ming Empire who was also at half-step legendary realm but still didn't stand a chance against the wolf cub's tyrannical powers!

Although Ye Xiwen hadn't personally seen wolf cub in action, judging from the information received, he could tell that they must have tried to belittle him by making fun of his skills, ultimately making him go berserk and massacre all the way. After surviving a life and death battle with the assassin, Jian Wuchen benefited a lot and managed to step into half-step legendary realm. His progression speed was indeed very fast as Ye Xiwen had predicted.

This month, Ye Xiwen constantly consolidated his inner state, reaching all the way to the pinnacle of half-step legendary realm. Of course, his acquired knowledge and sensibility had already gone

far beyond half-step legendary realm, thanks to the energy and knowledge accumulated in the library [by absorbing book demons]. Also, now Tianyuan mirror was producing a lot of Ling Dans every day, half getting instilled into mysterious space to comprehend various martial techniques and world laws while the remaining half getting absorbed by Ye Xiwen. In just one month, Ye Xiwen had completely consolidated his inner state to its peak level.

Ye Xiwen arrived before a vast mountain range. According to the ancient road map, he found out that there stood a big city on the other side of this mountain range. There were several routes that could be taken to go to TMU, each having a dedicated map. So each time TMU opened its gate to recruit disciples, some people, who knew the routes, would start selling maps to the contestants. Of course, some routes were riddled with dangers while some were relatively easy to traverse, hence, the costs of these maps varied accordingly. Ye Xiwen didn't care about their prices or difficulty to traverse and bought the one that was most detailed.

"Clang!" A metal clanging sound resounded in the forest, followed by sudden dispersion of clouds in the sky.

"Boom!" A Swordqi suddenly flew across the sky and came very close to hitting, almost grazing Ye Xiwen's side.

The dense forest was also split in half by the terrifying Swordqi.

Ye Xiwen saw the figures of two persons dashing away from the source of Swordqi attack. One of them was a man who appeared in his late twenties, was dressed in black clothes and had a handsome face but there was a huge wound in his chest. One could even

vaguely see the broken ribs, indicating that the injury was quite serious.

At his side, there was a beautiful woman who appeared to be in her early twenties, had a blinding black hair. At this time, she was experiencing shortness of breath; her complexion was red but did not have any visible injuries.

"Mo Yan, Mo Xiang, you two siblings better hand over the sword command, otherwise, you won't escape death today." About a dozen warriors, each one at Complete Truth realm and clad in strange uniforms, were standing behind those siblings. This group was being led by an expert of half-step legendary realm. He was a tall and sturdy man and was holding a long sword in hand.

"God's army is at work, a loitering passerby like you should mind your own business. Now get lost!" The half-step legendary warrior glanced at Ye Xiwen and said.

Ye Xiwen was not planning to interfere in the first place.

However, the leader of god's army suddenly waved his sword and shot a Swordqi toward Ye Xiwen.

Ye Xiwen dodged to the side and effortlessly evaded this attack. He looked at the siblings and saw fear in their eyes, as if they wanted someone to help them but wouldn't ask because they didn't want him to get involved in this mess.

"Those who interfere in the matters of God's army shall die." The leader coldly said.

Without any hesitation, he once again shot a bright Swordqi toward Ye Xiwen.

"Humph, your arrogance is praiseworthy." Ye Xiwen said then directly grabbed the Swordqi and crushed it. On the way to TMU, he had learned a lot of things, of course, God's army being one of the things that caught his attention.

Army of God was an organization quite well-known in this area with the idea of representing the so-called army of god itself. It was established by five formidable young experts who referred to themselves as five gods. They gathered a large number of followers by defeating numerous strong and well-known geniuses from all over and then compelled them to join their army, just like the eighth prince used to operate in Great Yue State. However, the eighth prince wasn't as powerful as the five gods.

"How dare you stand in our way, you are courting death!" An expert of Complete Truth realm instantly appeared in front of Ye Xiwen and blasted a punch, distorting the space itself with a burst of colossal power. It could be said that even an ordinary member of God's army was much more powerful than average experts of Complete Truth realm.

"You messed up." Ye Xiwen smirked and Zhen Yuan instantly began to surge out of his body and enveloped him completely.

"Poof!" Ye Xiwen shoved his hands into his chest and tore him apart.

"Are you going to pick a fight with the Army of God? You have a death wish." The leader stared coldly at Ye Xiwen. His complexion wasn't good because he could tell that Ye Xiwen was very strong. He did not dare to underestimate Ye Xiwen.

"Army of God is already dead in my eyes." Ye Xiwen replied in a calm voice. "And you and your subordinates are the ones that started this."

Ye Xiwen's reply immediately angered the leader. The god's army was like a supreme existence in his heart and allowing others to belittle it was nothing less than blasphemy.

"Boom"! He pounded his foot on the ground, and like a flash of lightning, he rushed toward Ye Xiwen while unleashing a rolling Swordqi at him.

Ye Xiwen took out his long blade and chopped toward the enemy, releasing a golden Bladeqi that instantly transformed into a roaring golden dragon.

"Boom!" Along with a dreadful loud metal clanging sound, enormous waves of energy were set off in all directions. The leader was instantly gobbled by the golden dragon, tearing him to shreds, even his soul was not spared in the process.

The brother and sister were looking at Ye Xiwen with utter disbelief in their eyes. Although this leader was at half-step legendary realm, he was powerful enough to contend with an expert of legendary first stage, however, he was so effortlessly killed by Ye Xiwen.

Of course, they knew that the Army of God only recruited top geniuses from the younger generation, so a team leader was certainly going to be elite among elites. Not to mention, he was at half-step legendary realm and was directly under the command of the five gods, but was still killed in a blink of an eye by just a blade attack.

All in all, Ye Xiwen was insanely strong.

"Scram!"

Ye Xiwen shouted. The members of God's army were stubbornly staring at Ye Xiwen and did not dare to approach him. They had already realized that Ye Xiwen was far stronger than them, perhaps on the same level as their five gods.

Ye Xiwen did not mean to exterminate them, after all, these were just prisoners in the Army of Gods.

Ye Xiwen had heard a lot of things about the tyrannical present of the five gods. It was said that only few could rival their strength in the younger generation. Although everyone wanted to be the strongest in the younger generation of southern region, it was rare for someone to be daring enough to claim such a bold thing.

Although there were many legends about the five gods, no one actually knew about their specific strength levels. However, there were rumors that the 1st god was at half-step legendary third or fourth stage, and has an awe-inspiring military experience of 50 years as a Warrior Commander.

It was said that had not set foot on the road to TMU because when the representatives of TMU evaluated his qualifications, they decided to have him as a disciple but he refused. He chose to embark on this road with the rhetoric that he would beat all the geniuses of the younger generation and become the first person to enter TMU via assessment.

Even if the other four gods were weaker than him, they were still powerful enough to stand above an expert of half-step legendary realm who was just now killed by Ye Xiwen.

However, now that Ye Xiwen had offended them already, he would rather go all the way and beat them one by one. He was striving to be at the top and would need to defeat all his rivals sooner or later.

At this time, Mo Yan and Mo Xiang arrived next to Ye Xiwen and said.

"Kind brother, thanks for saving us siblings. We will always be grateful to you for this."

-----



# Chapter 299: Dragon Essence

---

Ye Xiwen turned around to face the two siblings. The young male Mo Yan said: "I am Mo Yan, this is my little sister Mo Xiang, we are deeply grateful to you for saving our lives."

"It was no big deal." Ye Xiwen certainly would not say that he wasn't planning to interfere in the beginning, but had to when the members of God's Army attacked him for no reason.

"I am probably taking the liberty to ask you, but why are the members of God's Army after you two?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"You don't know what's going on?" Mo Yan looked strangely at Ye Xiwen and asked.

"I just came here, so do not know much." Ye Xiwen replied.

"I see." Mo Yan nodded then said, "It is not a big surprise that there is a big city located behind this mountain range. It is called Wing City and was originally a huge martial school with its own small world, which is rumored to have been concealing a lot of heavenly treasures. And there is this one kind of treasures that can help an expert from directly jumping from half-step legendary realm to the legendary realm; it's called dragon essence!"

"Dragon essence?" Ye Xiwen was suddenly startled because he also knew about dragon essence being the legacy, left behind after the death of dragon arteries.

The so-called dragon arteries were a kind of spiritual arteries but were considered top level among spiritual pulses. They not only contained adequate Lingqi but also brought strong destiny. An ordinary spiritual artery allowed the survival of an entire school and its prosperity, but a dragon artery did it several times better by granting a significant rise in cultivation by providing rich Lingqi for cultivation, and most importantly, also granted strong destiny to the school built around it. If a small school could obtain a formidable dragon artery, it could help them in becoming great, not to mention the destiny of the school would be stronger as well.

However, anything that lives in this world dies eventually. Everything that starts has an inevitable end. In this case, the death of a dragon artery leads to the birth of dragon essence.

Although dragon essence is just the leftover of dragon arteries, it is definitely a high tier heavenly treasure and is precious enough to make experts of half-step legendary realm directly make a leap to legendary realm. Of course, the benefits are not just this much; it can cleanse the human bone-marrow, turning it into spirit-bones and giving an enormous advantage to the practitioner. Not to mention, if a cultivator used dragon essence to cultivation, they can absorb its underlying destiny and enhance his own by leaps and bounds. Now, one could imagine the preciousness of dragon essence. In fact, even a major force like Yi Yuan School won't give a dragon essence to its disciples because Yi Yuan School is built over just a single mesh of dragon arteries, and if and when it dies, Yi Yuan School will not be far from decline. And when the complete deterioration takes place, there will be a possibility of a dragon essence emerging as its legacy.

And you have to be a super faction to have the possibility of leaving behind dragon essence after deterioration because when dragon arteries die, the overall structural mesh of arteries shrink crazily and most small dragon arteries would just disappear without a trace, leaving nothing behind. Only a few super dragon arteries of gigantic size and potential have a possibility of leaving behind dragon essence as the legacy.

And once it happens, it causes countless experts to compete over its legacy.

"Yes, the dragon essence is going to be born soon but in order to enter the small world where it is going to appear, one needs a sword command. There are a total of eight sword commands and only when all of them in a place, the gate to the small martial world can be opened." Mo Yan said, "And I happen to have one such sword command so the army of god chased me down to kill me and my sister and snatch it from us."

"Now we are willing to offer this sword to you, big brother. Would you be willing to have it?" Mo Yan said and handed over a double-edged small sword to Ye Xiwen. There were delicate looking patterns on the sword and it was hard to tell what material it was made up of, however, it was exuding a strange glow.

"You do not want it?" Ye Xiwen asked.

"Even without this sword, people can go in when the gate to the small world opens. But a humble expert like me has such a precious sword, it is bound to invoke jealousy among men and me and my sister may not be able to survive another seize." Mo Yan openly

said, after all, he couldn't hide the fact that he was just an expert of Complete Truth realm and was competing with many formidable experts. So, it was better for the sword to stay with a powerful deterrent like Ye Xiwen.

In fact, a while ago, he was very close to handing over the sword command to the Army of God in order to survive. After all, even if he and his sister had managed to escape, the news about them having a sword command would have leaked anyway. He naturally understood that staying away from a sword command was the only way to stay out of trouble.

"As long as you allow us siblings to follow you into the small martial world, we will be satisfied." Mo Yan explained.

"Such being the case, I would not refuse." Ye Xiwen said and took the sword command. He certainly wouldn't mind having a key to a treasure trove, after all, taking the initiative would still be in his command. He could either choose to be active or passive about it.

Now that he had decided to compete for dragon essence, he wouldn't be hesitant about being proactive.

Mo Yan and Mo Xiang rested for some time then all of them crossed the mountain and arrived at Wing City. This city was much larger than Shun'an and was considered among one of the 50 great cities of Ming Empire.

The giant city had erected towering walls and magnificent buildings, enough to make it no less grand than an Imperial city.

They entered the city, found an inn and after settling in, they went to a restaurant. In the restaurant, they heard people talking about martial art relic everywhere.

One must know that this martial art vestige was much more precious than the Four Sacred Beasts secret technique of the eighth prince.

"Gee, the news about martial vestige has attracted many experts to our city."

"Yes, it is dragon essence after all. The experts who want to step into legendary realm are naturally attracted to it. In fact, even experts, who are already in legendary realm, can level up with the help of dragon essence."

"The top players of the younger generation are going to compete for it!"

"You are talking about the Army of God, aren't you? I hear that its members have been searching for sword commands everywhere. Also, the fifth god has personally come into action to obtain the dragon essence."

"I think they are too arrogant. Even if the five gods are strong experts, they shouldn't underestimate other top experts of the younger generation."

"True, a lot of the members of God's Army were killed by formidable experts. That is why the fifth god had to personally step in to collect the sword commands."

"Army of God is really an unusual organization with five gods, each ranked according to their strength level. But even the fifth god, the lowest ranked god and youngest among all is at the peak of half-step legendary realm. Two days ago, he killed a veteran of legendary realm, this is simply insane!"

"Hey, but did you not hear that there is a monster wolf that had a verbal fight with him?"

"Hey, I have heard about a notorious wolf or some kind of dog. Its reputation has spread far and wide in this region, but I did not expect it to mess with God's Army as well. A day before yesterday, the fifth god blocked its path and tried to tame it but it used some kind of insanely fast agility technique. Even the fifth was unable to catch it, even if he is actually at legendary first stage."

Ye Xiwen immediately thought, is it not the wolf cub they are talking about? Army of God is really out of luck. They do not know that they have messed with the wrong beast and their destruction is evident.

Ye Xiwen looked happy. Mo Yan and Mo Xiang saw him suddenly turn happy and did not know what happened to liven up his mood!

Then, suddenly, the atmosphere in the entire restaurant got tense.

"Humph, you wimps dare to discuss the Army of God and look down on us. It seems you do not want to live anymore!" At this time, a few experts got up from their chairs. One could see 'Army of God' embroidered on their uniforms.

Immediately, there was a pin drop silence in the restaurant. Now, no one dared to speak a word as they did not dare to face the overbearing dominance of the Army of God.

Annoying the Army of God was no different than being suicidal.

"A group of insignificant and talkative idiots think that they are capable enough to judge us? Army of God is an absolute entity! Those who will try to speak or act against us shall perish!" A member of the Army of God said and glanced at the crowd with a cold look in his eyes. This was the typical way of how the Army of God operated in this city, not to mention no one dared to challenge them.

"Everybody, listen up! The monster wolf has appeared outside the city and all our brother of God's Army have gone out to catch it."

Suddenly, a voice sounded and informed everyone about the appearance of the wolf cub.

"Well, that monster wolf is really courting death. Let's go!"

The members immediately turned into streamers of light and flew outside the city.

Ye Xiwen sneered and shook his head. These members of the Army of God were nothing but truth level experts whereas the wolf cub was already at half-step legendary realm. They were going toward their own doom.

-----



# Chapter 300: The Fifth God Appears

---

At this time, the well-uniformed members of God's Army were flying all over the city.

Ye Xiwen finally got up and set out of the restaurant. Although he was finally going to meet the wolf cub, he was not in a rush and appeared to be going at his own pace. He was not willing to interfere because he knew that there was no need to do so in the first place.

"Brother Ye, are you going to take a look?" Mo Yan looked at Ye Xiwen and said. Ye Xiwen had killed a half-step legendary member of the Army of God, and there was a possibility that he was on their hit-list now, even if he had killed all the witnesses. However, it was the best for them to stay away from the Army of God.

"Yes, I am going to meet a good friend of mine. You two can wait here." Ye Xiwen said.

"No, please let us come with you." Mo Yan secretly clenched his teeth and said.

Ye Xiwen smiled, thought that Mo Yan was quite courageous. Even after knowing the possibility of bumping into the fifth god, he still dared to go with Ye Xiwen. Perhaps, Mo Yan was worried about the treasure that was now in Ye Xiwen's possession.

The three of them flew out of the city along with several streamers of lights. The sky above the city was filled with figures

of experts flying at incredible speeds.

Ye Xiwen and the other two soon arrived at an open field that was encircled by a large group of experts, mostly the members of the Army of God.

A large number of experts were floating in the sky and watching from the sidelines.

"Damn you, dog demon, you will die today!" A skinny member of God's Army said while staring at the wolf cub who was standing in the center of the field.

Ye Xiwen noticed that the wolf cub had grown up significantly, almost reaching up to his chest, and contrary to the rumors, his strength level was already rivaling that of legendary experts.

"F\*\*k you! You are a dog; your entire family is the lowest breed of dogs." The wolf cub suddenly shouted with anger boiling in his eyes. The onlookers immediately started to laugh aloud, thinking that this wolf demon beast was definitely stupid.

"You are all talk but no action. The only thing you are good at is running away, but today, you can forget that as well. I will first skin you, then pull out your muscles and crush your bones." The skinny expert said in a provocative tone.

"You think this prince will escape? I'm right here, show me what you got!" The wolf cub smiled and proudly said. He did not seem

afraid of being surrounded by so many experts because his agility skill was very mysterious. In fact, without relying on the speed boost from the devil wings, even Ye Xiwen wouldn't be able to catch up with the wolf cub's speed, even the so-called fifth god was unable to catch him.

"Everybody, today we will butcher this dog and eat a pot full of dog meat curry. Begin!" Said the skinny expert, and immediately, dozens of members of God's Army sprang toward the wolf cub.

"Boom!" The wolf cub opened its mouth wide and spat out a rotating divine beam that rushed forward as if piercing the expansive sky, sweeping away everything in its way.

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

"Puff!"

Several members of the Army of God were directly vaporized by the divine beam, not giving them any chance to approach the wolf cub.

"Shitty demon beast, die already!" The skinny expert blasted a punch, unleashing a burst of surging Zhen Yuan towards the wolf cub.

"Humph! Heavenly Wolf Howling Moon!" The wolf cub snorted

then muttered something, after which, he turned his face upward toward the sky and howled. His whole body was enveloped in an ominous aura as the moon instantly started to change color. The sky was dark a moment ago but a perfectly round bright moon rose up in the sky, showering beautiful yet ominous moonlight everywhere.

Under the illumination of moonlight, the wolf cub galloped forward. The earth began to vibrate vigorously, and in a blink of an eye, he arrived in front of the skinny expert, opened his mouth and swallowed the Zhen Yuan attack at point blank range. Then immediately stretched his claws and grabbed that skinny expert.

"Puchi!" The skinny expert was instantly torn into two parts, his blood splattering everywhere, bone chips flying off in the air. An expert of half-step legendary realm had been directly torn apart.

The skinny expert died on the spot, shocking many experts who were watching this scene.

The wolf cub glanced at the skinny expert's corpse that was now in two parts, and said in his usual foul-mouthed manner: "Now go cook a pot of your bi\*\*h sister's meat in hell, you shitty dog."

Everyone was terrified by this scene, after all, an expert of half-step legendary realm was brutally butchered in front of their eyes, without even getting a chance to fight back. This wolf was really a monster!

One must know that on this road, the experts of half-step

legendary realm were considered extremely extraordinary figures, powerful enough to run amuck in any city of this region. Not to mention, the Army of God was famous for having strict recruitment process with very harsh standards, with no scope of non-elites becoming a member. All members of the God's Army were considered pure elites.

An expert of half-step legendary realm was definitely an outstanding character but still failed to last even a moment in front of the wolf monster. This wolf monster was formidable to what extent? Was it already an expert of half-step legendary first stage?

"This wolf demon beast is a monster. Damn, look at its strength level! It can easily contend with the top players of the younger generation."

"Yes, but I don't know, maybe the fifth god will personally move into action. It would be a lot of fun to watch a battle between them."

"Catch him!" A member of the Army of God suddenly shouted frantically. Several experts of half-step legendary realm rushed toward the wolf cub at once.

This organization of Army of God was indeed one of the best-organized groups known to Ye Xiwen. There were actually only a few good half-step legendary experts in the group but each had unimaginable cultivation depth. Ye Xiwen hadn't come across any other organization so well trained and well structured. As a fellow expert, he truly felt respect for the founder of the Army of God.

"Humph!" An expert of half-step legendary realm suddenly punched toward the wolf cub, smashing the space into multiple pieces in the process.

The wolf cub suddenly jumped upward and turned into a streamer of light, avoiding the encirclement entirely. The members simply had no way to catch him; on the contrary, he started killing the members one after another.

Many onlookers were secretly surprised; the wolf cub's agility skill was not ordinary. No wonder he went as far as picking a fight with an entire team of God Army. So it seemed like the rumor about the fifth god failing to catch him was not fake.

"Hey, you idiots are too slow, just like turtles." The wolf cub made no concessions while ridiculing them.

Ye Xiwen looked at the wolf cub and noticed that there had been a tremendous change in his agility skill and overall speed. He could tell that these experts were not fast enough to catch up with the wolf cub, in fact, he himself would need to use his devil wings to match the wolf cub's speed!

"Humph!" At this time, a loud voice resounded in the sky and a big hand stretched down from above, turned into an insanely sturdy cage and tried to trap the wolf cub.

"Damn it, a surprise attack!" The wolf cub suddenly cursed and immediately flew several dozen feet away. He successfully went

out of the range of that cage

"Boom!" The cage crashed into the ground and created a huge crater.

Although the wolf cub escaped, the enemy was obviously not ready to give up. Another cage fell down from high altitude, right upon the wolf cub.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

With a loud roar, cages fell down to the ground one after another.

"Fifth god, you bastard, you shouldn't have appeared in front of me." The wolf cub yelled but did not have the means to maintain a cool look on his face, on the contrary, he was in complete distress right now.

"Fifth god!"

"Fifth god has arrived!"

"Where is he?"

"Are you telling me the fifth god has arrived at Yongan city? This monster wolf is so dead now!"

"I heard that the fifth god has taken a fancy to this wolf demon and wants to have it as a pet, but did not expect that it would be so formidable. He had to face a lot of trouble and still wasn't able to tame it."

"I think the fifth god is going to slaughter this wolf monster."

The fifth god's popularity was simply off the charts. Being the lowest ranked god, he was approachable and was similar to a role model for all junior members of the organization who looked up to him and wanted to be like him.

A stalwart figure came out from the void. His facial features made him appear quite domineering, with his black hair fluttering in the wind. The golden robe was really complimenting his tall stature as he was overlooking the world like a real god from ancient times.

This was the infamous expert of the God's Army, the fifth god.

"I hope you are prepared to die, little one?" The fifth god looked at the wolf cub with an ice-cold look flashing in his eyes.

"You are courting death!" The wolf cub roared, "Who do you



think you are, eh? You are no god; your title is nothing but shit. I have seen much stronger individuals than you and even they do not dare to claim to be some god. You better not bite off more than you can chew."

"Humph!" The fifth god did not say anything, just stretched out his big hand that gotg bigger and bigger while going toward the wolf cub.

-----